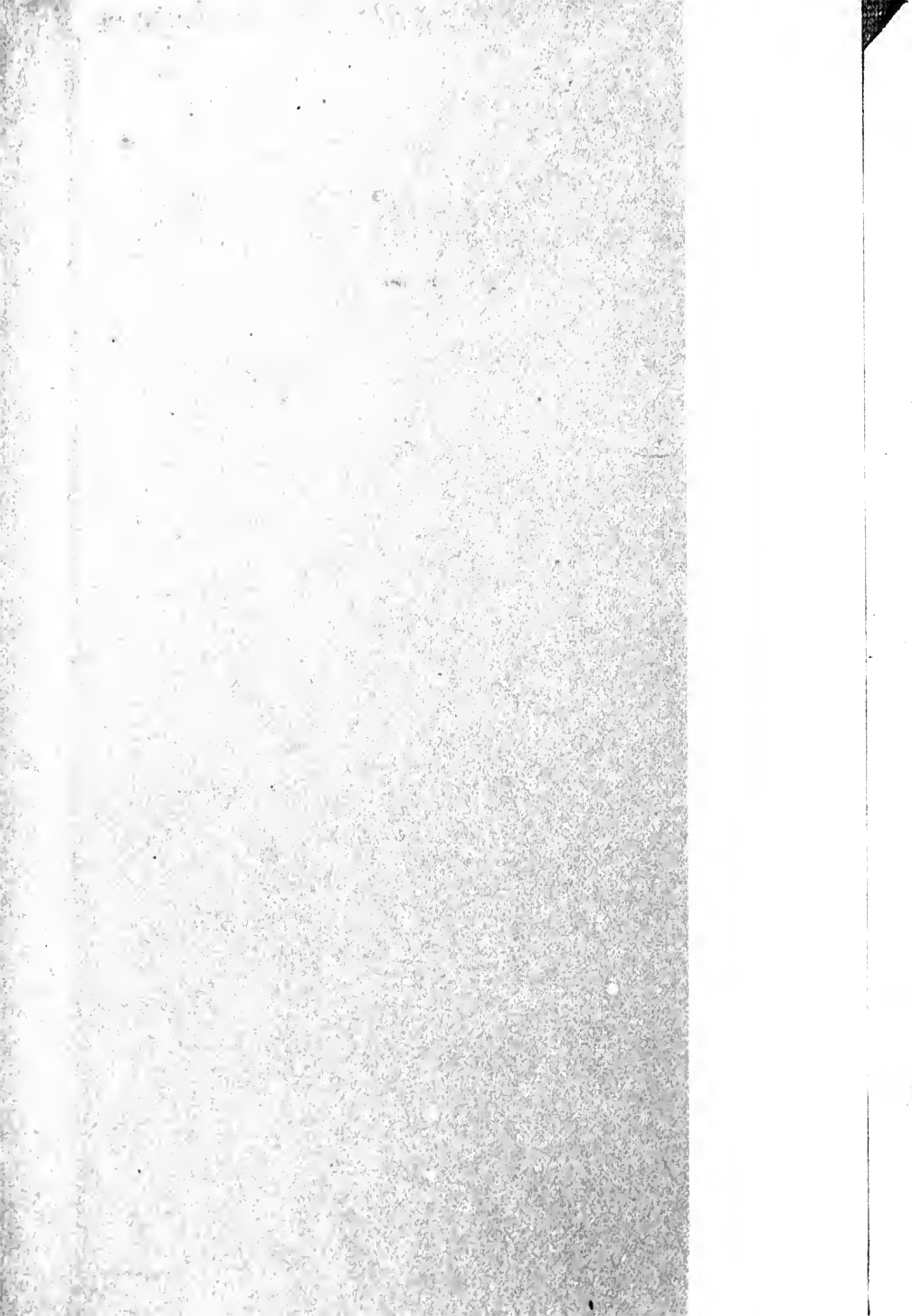


3 1761 01808075 4



APR 10 1999

JAN 07 1999









to the effect that Mackenzie, Fletcher and Lount and a body of rebels numbering about 150 arrived at Montgomery's Tavern on Yonge St. on Dec. 4, 1837, from Lloydtown, and remained the night. While the tavern was owned by Montgomery and conducted by him until four days earlier, it had been rented to a man named Linfoot, who found himself the involuntary host to the rebel horde. Montgomery was on the premises. There was nothing to have prevented his leaving had he wished to do so. Linfoot said that Montgomery had been in frequent conversation with Mackenzie, though the little rebel had sworn at him on two or three occasions: shocking conduct, one would say, in a man in armed revolt against his Sovereign.

### Rebellion Was Doomed

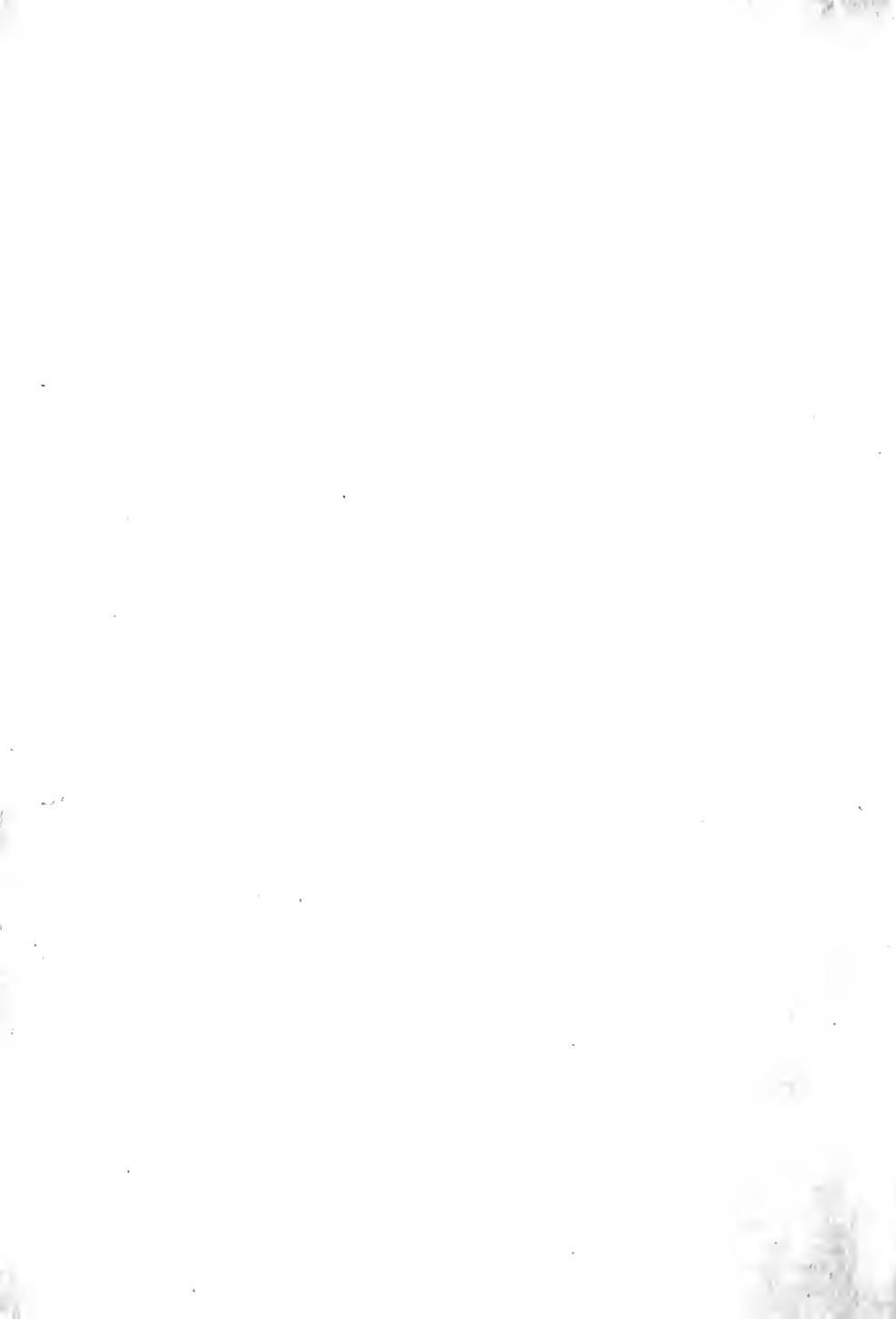
It was also proved that Montgomery had served as a kind of sutler for the mob of unexpected guests that had descended upon the unhappy Linfoot. Apparently, he had acted as if clothed with some authority. It was impossible that he could not have known what the rebels intended, for their plans were discussed in loud voices. Montgomery was also heard ridiculing the Tories, a justifiable enough occupation, though hazardous when done among a lot of rebels whose rebellion failed. It was shown also that Montgomery had breakfasted with Mackenzie and had purveyed for that patriot some bottled ale and porter. Here we might interject a sort of parenthesis to the effect that rebellions led by men who drink ale and porter at breakfast are doomed from the outset, unless they should have the luck to be opposed by loyalists who have substituted brandy and soda for the malt liquors.

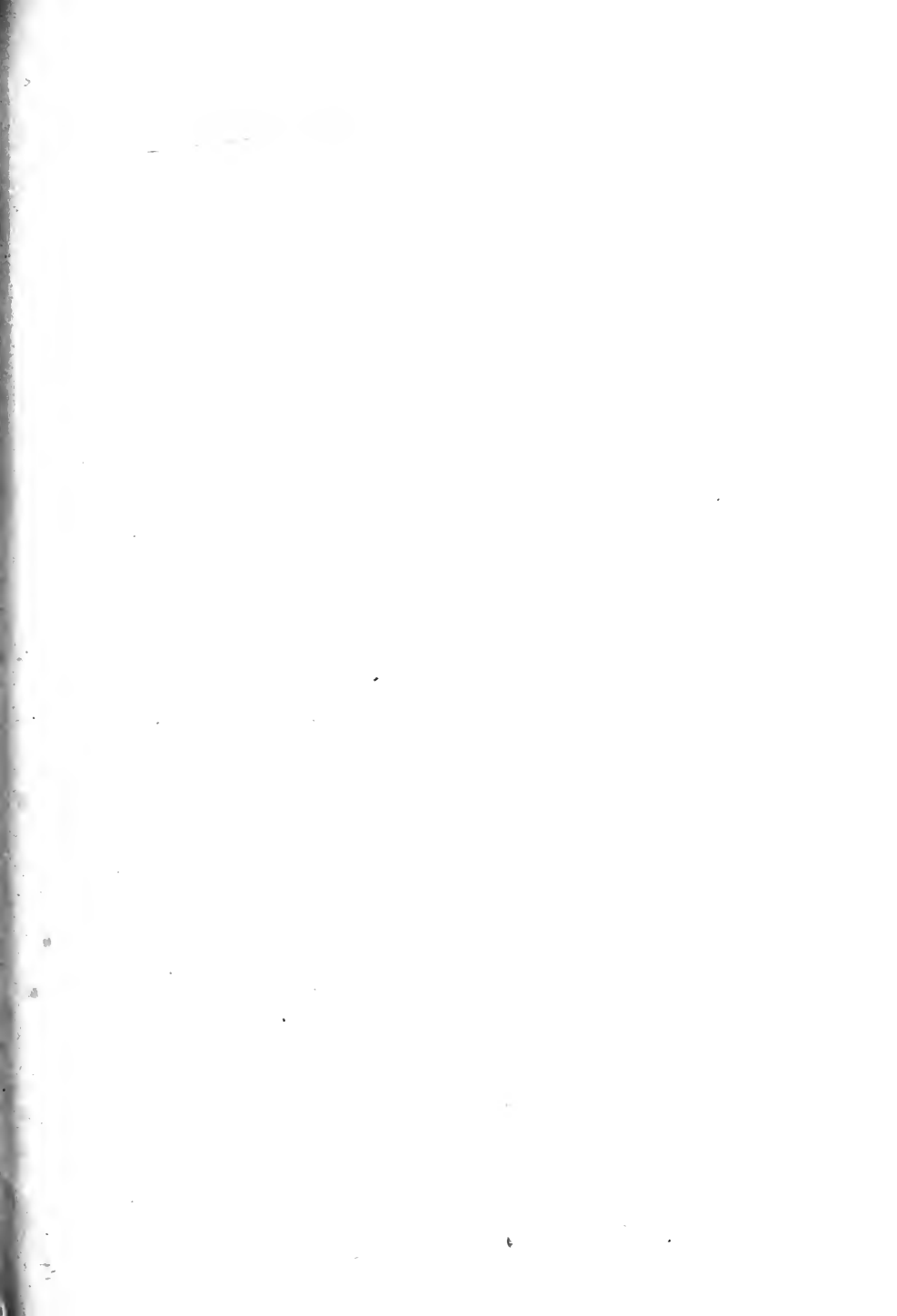
### A Too-Truthful Witness

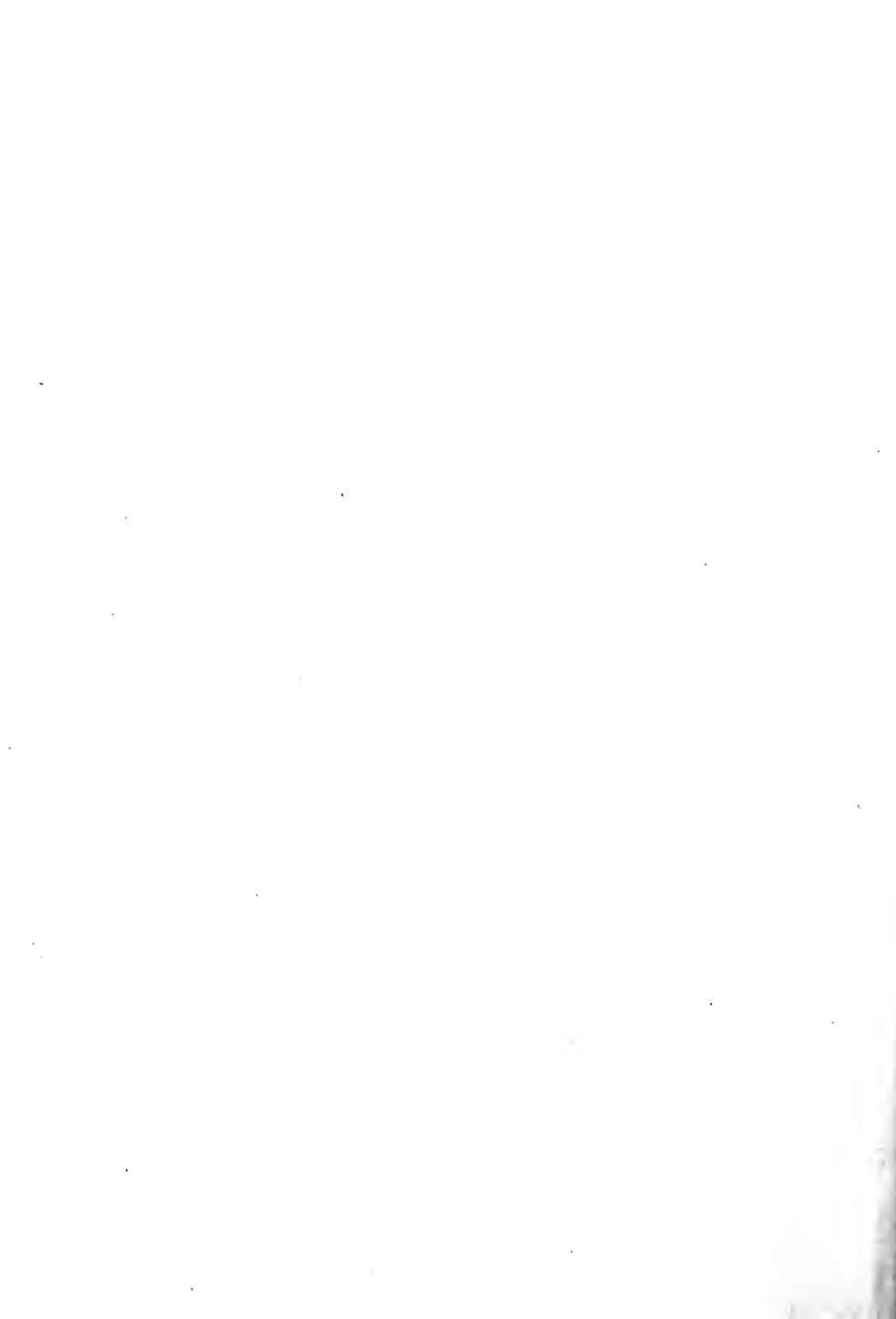
One remarkable witness was William Ketchum, a farmer and a son of the famous Jesse. He was absolutely truthful, which led the presiding judge to say that he had

the Crown, told the audience. Much of his from Montgomery was to the duress; that to prove that had might have the effect country as of 1812 was his probably testimony as standing in rely emphasis. The few minutes gully, and reupon sen-

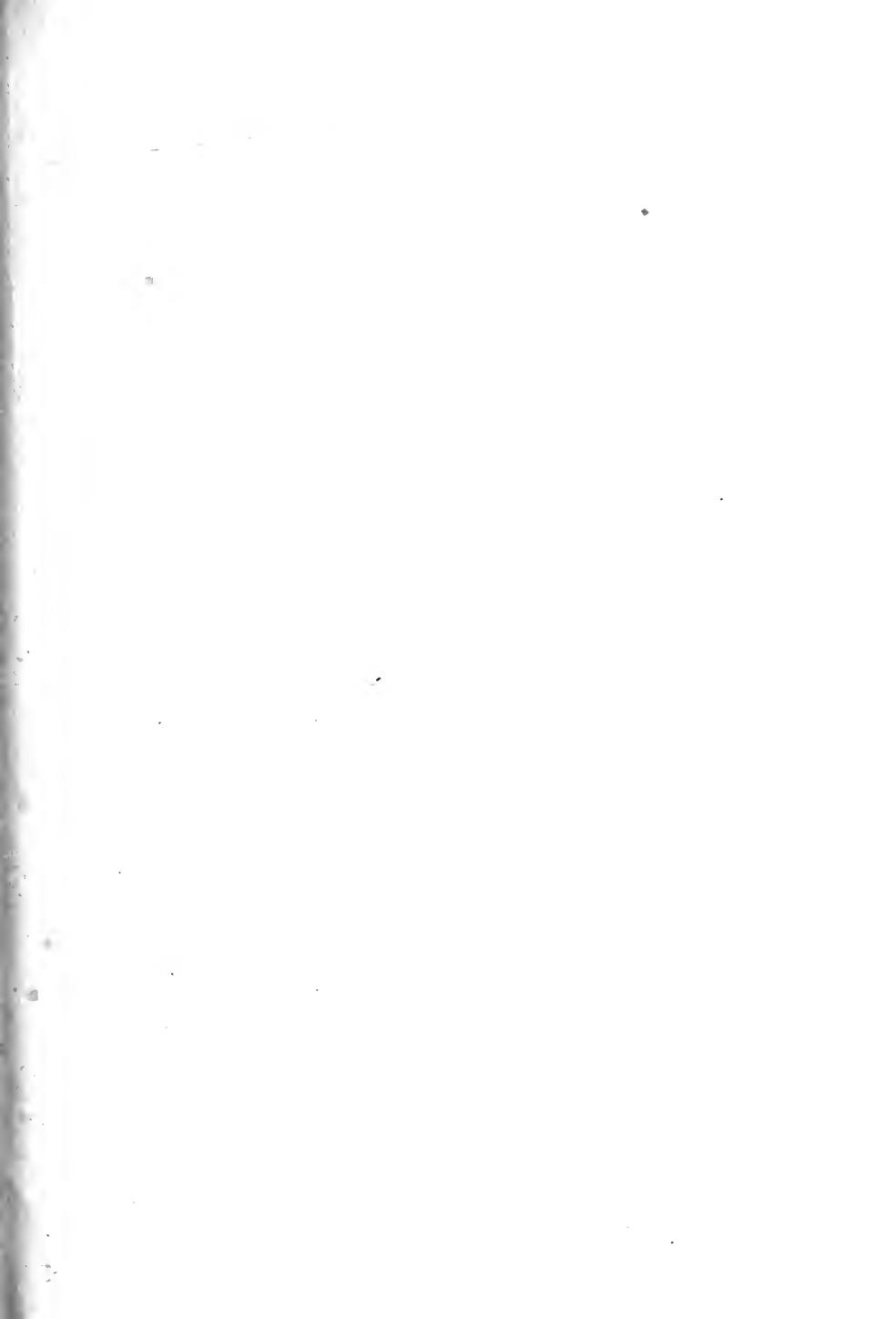
commuted to eman's Land. transportation and made d States. In and returned kept tavern back to the site of To. In addition the Govern- his property. his life were he died in eeks of his calls an old when Chief him before ad anything replied that on perjured ie perjurers tural death, ge and also en consumed while John ll be living his prophecy r shot him- throat and ally outlive and wit-

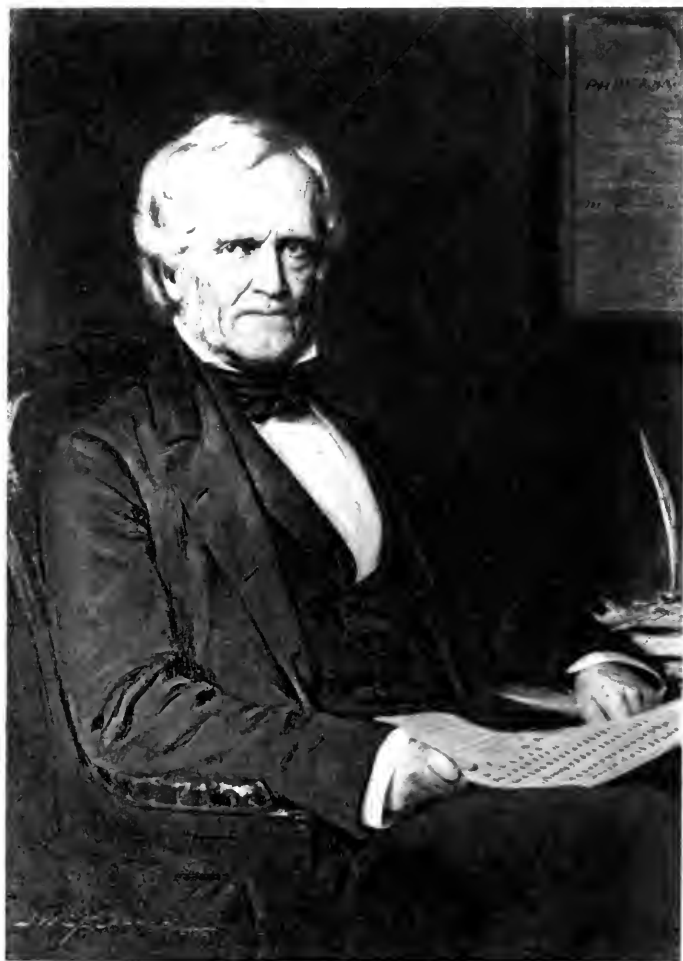












Wm. L. Mackenzie.

THE MAKERS OF CANADA

WILLIAM LYON  
MACKENZIE

BY

CHARLES LINDSEY

*EDITED WITH NUMEROUS ADDITIONS*

BY

G. G. S. LINDSEY

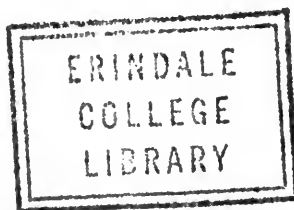
TORONTO

MORANG & CO., LIMITED

1912

81

*Entered according to Act of the Parliament of Canada in  
the year 1908 by Morang & Co., Limited, in the  
Department of Agriculture.*



## PUBLISHERS' NOTE

Mr. Charles Lindsey, the author of *The Life and Times of William Lyon Mackenzie*, which is republished in this volume in a considerably condensed form, with some additional matter supplied by the editor, died in Toronto, April 12th, 1908, at an advanced age. Sketches of his career as a veteran journalist and publicist, which appeared in the Toronto newspapers, contain references to this biography which bear out his own modest statement of the impartiality of the narrative. "The task of doing justice to the leader of a defeated movement, while the ashes of the conflagration were still hot, was not," said the *Globe*, "an easy one for a biographer who had no personal sympathy with the resort to physical force, but Mr. Lindsey accomplished it with such consummate skill that *The Life and Times of William Lyon Mackenzie* is still one of the most readable of Canadian biographies, and one of the most instructive of Canadian historical monographs." The *Mail and Empire* spoke of the book as "authoritative," and as "dealing with the origin of issues that continued to vex politics and journalism long after the Family Compact was disposed of." The *World* said, "The work is an exceedingly interesting and valuable contribution to the history of Canada, covering as it does a period

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of critical transition in our national life. The author and the subject of his biography differed widely in their political views, but their personal and private relations were necessarily intimate. The biographer has truly said that Mackenzie 'never concealed his hand' from him. One of the highest compliments paid the work was by an eminent critic and historical authority, who praised its impartiality, and said that it was impossible from its perusal to detect the politics of its author." Sir Francis Hincks, in his *Reminiscences of his Public Life*, said he had "no reason to doubt the general accuracy of the account, given in Lindsey's *Life and Times of William Lyon Mackenzie*, of the circumstances preceding the actual outbreak, and he adopted the account as strictly reliable. The *Mackenzie Life* still holds its place as an authoritative narrative of the events which it describes; it has never been supplanted by any other narrative historical or otherwise." The *News* spoke of the book as having "reserve and balance and absolutely nothing of the angry controversial temper. It is history written, perhaps, too close to the events with which it deals, and therefore all the more remarkable for its revelation of the true historical spirit."

The additional matter, supplied in the present volume, consists of a review, historical and political, of what may be called the Mackenzie period, and of Mackenzie's place in Canadian history as



## PUBLISHERS' NOTE

a constitutional Reformer and public man. Some prominence is given in this connection to the commentaries of Lord Durham in his splendid Report on the affairs of Canada, and to the testimony of public opinion since the publication of the Lindsey biography. These constitute, to say the least, an important contribution to the later literature on the subject. The work has been done by Mr. G. G. S. Lindsey, K.C., with care and judgment, and with the advantage of access to a large body of original material. Mr. Lindsey is a son of the author, and a grandson of William Lyon Mackenzie.

the Cen  
England  
poration  
spent a  
Chinese  
ability a  
knowled  
ed him  
This he  
which  
Governmen  
was  
o

III Short T  
aim  
Mr. I  
Co in 1890.  
cil was  
way Co  
street ra

DIST  
Mr  
eral in  
cessful  
ronto  
ture.  
ident  
sociati  
suppor  
and in  
address  
Mr.

G. G. S. ed in  
Jurist, authadian  
his residen- 1887 too  
yesterday af- "a.," a t  
had been ill, Engl  
news of his, preser  
shock to h, was  
the city and, hed h  
It was expe, a."  
have been, For  
vacancy on the, as Mr  
caused by the, William  
Falconbridge. his f  
grandson of W, After  
and son of Ch, Lind  
tinguished Car, Toron  
historian. ring t  
d with

Mr. Lindsey  
and versatile, mpany  
prominent par, al pra  
scientific activ, at col  
The funer, of the  
p.m. on Sp, pany, P  
dence, 14, berta Co  
George, the Bru  
was born, Presiden  
1860, at, land Ce  
Canada, He ma  
Toronto, ond daug  
graduat, Bethune,  
called, Major C  
While, D.S.O., an  
leading, survive h  
activiti, on many  
ern and, first with  
sity," t, quently

Codific

## PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION

A very general impression prevails throughout Canada that the late William Lyon Mackenzie had, for some years, been engaged in writing his autobiography, and that, at the time of his death, the work was nearly completed. An examination of his papers showed that such was not the case. He had indeed projected such a work, and arranged much of the material necessary for its construction, but on examining his papers, I soon discovered that, except detached and scattered memoranda, he had written nothing. Of autobiography, not previously written when some momentary exigency seemed to demand it, or fancy spurred him to put down some striking passage in his life, there was none. Beyond this, everything had to be done by his biographer, if his life was to be written; and such was the public curiosity to learn the connected story of his eventful life, that I was pressed, on all hands, to undertake the work. At great inconvenience, and under a pressure of other exacting literary engagements, I consented.

Full of the fiery energy of the Celtic race, impetuous and daring, standing in the front rank of party combatants in times and in a country where hard knocks were given and taken, it was the fate of Mackenzie to have many relentless

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

enemies. If I had undertaken to refute all the calumnies of which he was the subject, and to correct all the false statements made to his injury, this biography would have taken a controversial form, which must have rendered it less acceptable to a large class of readers. The plan I have followed has been to tell the story of his life as I find it, without much reference to what friends or enemies, biased one way or the other, may have said under the excitement of events that have now passed into the great ocean of history. There were some few cases in which it was necessary to clear up disputed questions over which men still continue to differ.

The striking want of moral courage in many who were engaged with Mackenzie in the unfortunate and ill-advised insurrection in Upper Canada, in 1837, led them to attempt to throw the odium of an enterprise that had failed, in its direct object, entirely upon him. Men, of whose complicity in that affair the clearest evidence exists, cravenly deny all knowledge of it. Mackenzie never shrank from his share of the responsibility.

Much of the liberty Canada has enjoyed since 1840, and more of the wonderful progress she has made, are due to the changes which the insurrection was the chief agent in producing. Unless those changes had been made—unless a responsible government, especially, had been established—

## PREFACE

Canada would, ere now, either have been lost to the British Crown, or, ruled by the sword, would have been stunted in her growth, her population poor, discontented, and ready to seek the protection of another power. The amelioration which the political institutions of Canada have undergone would probably have come in time, if there had been no insurrection, but it would not have come so soon; and there is no reason to suppose that the province would yet have reached its present stage of advancement.

Being several thousands of miles distant when the insurrection and the frontier troubles took place, and having never been in Canada till several years after, I lie under the disadvantage of not having any personal recollection of what occurred in those stirring times. But considering the stores of materials and the sources of information at my command, perhaps this is no great loss; certainly it will be more than compensated by the impartiality with which an unconcerned spectator can pass in review the events of that troubled period.

In the private documents in my possession, containing the secret history of the frontier movements, I found much that had never seen the light, including projects of invasion and insurrection of which the public has never had more than the vaguest notions. The use I have made of these documents will, I presume, not be regarded as unwarranted.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

I first saw Mackenzie in 1849, when he came from New York to Canada on a visit. Our differences of opinion on the politics of Canada during the last ten years have been notorious. Still I knew his real views perhaps better than any one else. In private he never concealed his hand from me, during the whole of that time. By the hour, when no third person was present, he would speak with great earnestness and animation of the claims of justice, the odiousness of oppression, and the foulness of corruption. The offer of office under the government was more than once obliquely—once, I think, directly—made to him after his return to Canada, and it always threw him into a fit of passion. He received it as an attempt to destroy his independence, or to shackle his freedom of action. A thousand times I have heard him protest that he would rather die of starvation than descend to any meanness, or be guilty of any act that would deprive him of that title to an unpurchasable patriot, which he deemed the best heritage he could bequeath to his children.

CHARLES LINDSEY.

Toronto, 1862.



## CONTENTS

	Page
<i>CHAPTER I</i>	
THE PERIOD AND THE MAN . . .	1
<i>CHAPTER II</i>	
EARLY YEARS . . . . .	33
<i>CHAPTER III</i>	
UPPER CANADA UNDER THE CONSTITUTIONAL ACT	47
<i>CHAPTER IV</i>	
"THE COLONIAL ADVOCATE" . . .	85
<i>CHAPTER V</i>	
SILENCING THE PRESS . . . . .	113
<i>CHAPTER VI</i>	
ENTERS PARLIAMENT . . . . .	145
<i>CHAPTER VII</i>	
EXPULSIONS FROM THE ASSEMBLY . . .	181
<i>CHAPTER VIII</i>	
MACKENZIE'S MISSION TO ENGLAND . . .	217

# CONTENTS

<i>CHAPTER IX</i>	<b>Page</b>
MUNICIPAL AND LATER PARLIAMENTARY CAREER	<b>255</b>
<i>CHAPTER X</i>	
SIR FRANCIS BOND HEAD'S ARBITRARY METHODS	<b>291</b>
<i>CHAPTER XI</i>	
PRECURSORS OF CIVIL WAR . . . . .	<b>323</b>
<i>CHAPTER XII</i>	
A SPURT OF CIVIL WAR . . . . .	<b>357</b>
<i>CHAPTER XIII</i>	
FRONTIER WARFARE . . . . .	<b>411</b>
<i>CHAPTER XIV</i>	
AFTER THE REBELLION . . . . .	<b>433</b>
<i>CHAPTER XV</i>	
THE TRIALS OF AN EXILE . . . . .	<b>451</b>
<i>CHAPTER XVI</i>	
LAST YEARS, ILLNESS AND DEATH . . . . .	<b>503</b>
INDEX . . . . .	<b>529</b>

## CHAPTER I

### THE PERIOD AND THE MAN

**T**HERE are many circumstances which give to the life, character and career of William Lyon Mackenzie a peculiar and almost pathetic interest, and which render them well worthy of a permanent record in the memoirs of the "Makers of Canada." They not only represent the strong mental and moral equipment of an individual—one of a race which has been identified with constitutional liberty and reform in all the oversea states of the Empire—but they also represent an important epoch in British colonial history. It was an epoch of political transition, and Mackenzie stands out in it conspicuously, a commanding and picturesque personality who did much to create, as well as to inspire and promote, the movement which made the transition one from an evil to a better state of things. He was a representative man of the period—a man of thought and resource who had a genius for successful political agitation<sup>1</sup>—a man of action who, as a distinguished publicist has said, "embodied the sentiment of his time" in working towards political ideals in the State. If it be true that "the types of men living at particular periods

<sup>1</sup> "The greatest agitator that ever Upper Canada has had within her limits."—D. B. Read, Q.C., *The Rebellion of 1837* (1896), p. 122.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

afford the best studies of history," Mackenzie cannot be ignored by the historian.

The great interest which attaches to his life, especially in his years of strength and vigour, is derived from the fact that it extended over a period of political and critical unrest with the spirit and action of which he was completely identified. Mackenzie in those years had to be reckoned with, at every turn in the arena, by the men who governed; and he must be given a place by himself, but none the less a distinguished place, amidst the conflicting influences, and the strifes and antagonisms which, culminating in a civil war, wrought a revolution in the system of government in Canada, and thereafter in British colonial government everywhere. That was an issue which, it has been well said, "evolved out of the discord of conflicting ideals, the foundations of a permanent and worthy settlement of the relations of the Crown to the colonies," and "broadened, once for all, the lines of constructive statesmanship in all that relates to the colonial policy of England."<sup>1</sup> There probably never was a period in the history of this country when the two political parties were more sharply divided, and more clearly distinguished, upon a great public question. It was a comparatively small forum for such a debate; the cause was worthy of a greater tribunal than that to which the argument was

<sup>1</sup> Stuart J. Reid, *Life and Letters of Lord Durham* (1906), Vol. ii, p. 156.

## GOLDWIN SMITH'S SKETCH

addressed. But the final judgment in the matter was momentous and far-reaching in its consequences. The principles which were laid down by the Reformers in that controversy, under the leadership of Mackenzie and his coadjutors, were those which were embodied by Lord Durham in his famous Report, and were subsequently crystallized into legislation by the parliament of Great Britain. They are the principles upon which the Australian commonwealth and the states of South Africa, as well as Canada, are governed to-day, and by which, in fact, in all the outlying dominions of the Crown, imperial unity is reconciled, and may continue to be reconciled, with complete self-government.

Mackenzie has been described as "a reformer ahead of his time," as "the stormy petrel" of the ante-rebellion era in Upper Canada, and in other terms, less equivocal and less deserved, by the calumny which pursued him to his grave. Mr. Goldwin Smith's portraiture of him is that of "a wiry and peppery little Scotchman, hearty in his love of public right, still more in his hatred of public wrong-doers, clever, brave, and energetic, but, as tribunes of the people are apt to be, far from cool-headed, sure-footed in his conduct, temperate in his language, or steadfast in his personal connections."<sup>1</sup>

These references to Mackenzie's personal qualities

<sup>1</sup> *Canada and the Canadian Question* (1891), p. 111.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

and character as a public man might easily be multiplied. He had at all times, even when political feeling ran high in the constituencies, friends and admirers amongst men of all parties. Speaking of his election for Haldimand, the first open constituency after his return from exile, when he defeated the late Hon. George Brown, the most formidable opponent he could have encountered, a prominent resident of that county stated, in a published interview, that "Mackenzie had support from Conservatives as well as Reformers; in fact, as I happen to know, he always had a great many warm Conservative friends, who admired his pluck as well as his independence and honesty."<sup>1</sup> And referring to his election as first mayor of Toronto, a Conservative historian has written that "the combined suffrages of his party supporters and of the moderate Tories placed him in the office of chief magistrate of the city. It has never been doubted that the choice then made was a good one. It is but fair to the memory of Mr. Mackenzie to say that, in all his political conduct and extravagances, he was not actuated by personal resentment. He was a determined advocate of reform, and in his political course made himself many enemies,

<sup>1</sup> The *Star* newspaper, Toronto, December 27th, 1900. The interview was with Dr. Harrison, of Selkirk, Ontario, an ex-president of the Provincial Medical Association, and described as "a veteran Liberal, one of the old guard, who has been president of the Reform Association of his county."



## W. J. RATTRAY'S SKETCH

but they were not personal, but political enemies."<sup>1</sup>

"Mackenzie died, as he had lived, a poor man," said one of the most brilliant writers on the Canadian press. "Throughout his second political career, he was an ultra-Reformer, one might almost say an irreconcilable. Although he had seen enough of republicanism to dislike it, he remained a Radical to the last. Had he been so disposed, he might have taken office in the short-lived Brown-Dorion administration; but he loved the freedom of his independent position, and would have proved restive in official harness. Whatever his faults of judgment and temper may have been, he was, beyond question, an honest, warm-hearted and generous man. That he should be a free lance in politics was to be expected from his antecedents and his temperament; but there was always a *bonhomie* about him which made even those he opposed most strenuously his warmest personal friends. . . . In looking back upon a career so unfruitful on the surface, and so unprofitable to himself, the natural verdict will be that it was a failure. Still, when it is considered that he was the pioneer of reform, the first who formulated distinctly the principle of responsible government, among the first to advocate a confederation of the provinces, and, above all others, the man who infused political vitality into the electorate, we cannot

<sup>1</sup> D. B. Read, Q.C., *Rebellion of 1837* (1896), p. 209.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

say that he lived in vain. Like other harbingers of a freer time, he suffered that the community might enjoy the fruits of his labour, the recompense for his misfortunes. When responsible government was at length established, he was chafing as an exile in a foreign land. When he re-entered politics, the battle had been won, and others had reaped the reward. With all his faults, and he had many, no man has figured upon the political stage in Canada whose memory should be held in warmer esteem than William Lyon Mackenzie."<sup>1</sup>

There is a measure of truth in all these descriptions, and in others of a similar character which might be recited. Reformers who are earnest and sincere are seldom other than "ahead of their time," and one of the sacrifices which they have to make, if they are true to their ideals, is the sacrifice of "personal connections," and sometimes also of political friendships. History is full of examples of this species of independence and passion for an idea. Lord Durham, whose services to Canada can never be forgotten, and whose memory will ever be revered by the Canadian people, was, as a commoner, his biographer tells us, "far in advance of his times." The Whigs of that generation, his own

<sup>1</sup> W. J. Rattray, *The Scot in British North America* (1881), Vol. ii, pp. 482, 483. Mr. Rattray, who is mentioned elsewhere in these pages, was a distinguished graduate of the University of Toronto, and a classmate of the late Chief Justice Thomas Moss, who used to speak of him as the ablest man within the range of his acquaintance. He died September 26th, 1883.

## A MAN AHEAD OF HIS TIME

political allies, did not share his desire for "sweeping reforms," and especially his early endeavours to destroy the "rotten boroughs" of England. "He was often regarded by them with petulant impatience, and even as a thorn in their side, but he never wavered in his allegiance to what he regarded as the first conditions of progress, and he stood, all through the reign of George IV, like an incarnate conscience in the path of the official leaders of his party. . . . They were convinced that parliamentary reform had not yet come within the range of practical politics."<sup>1</sup> But all this did not deter him from breaking away from his personal and political alliances, and proposing a bill for the reform of parliament eleven years before it was carried, and before "the new era of government by public opinion began"

To say that Mackenzie was "a reformer ahead of his time," is only to say, as the fact was, that he typified opinions in favour of a system of government, lines of policy, and methods of administration, which were in sharp and hostile contrast to those which were stubbornly, and at times oppressively, adhered to by his adversaries, and of which he was the uncompromising and implacable foe. Mackenzie's ideas of civil government and administration were entirely opposed to those of the military and semi-military rulers who represented the Crown

<sup>1</sup> Stuart J. Reid, *Life and Letters of Lord Durham* (1906), Vol. i, pp. 144-6.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

in Upper Canada, and to those who, firmly entrenched in their offices and privileges and having the whole power and patronage of the executive at their command, were set about those men, during the most strenuous years of his career. But they were ideas which, although since carried out to the fullest extent, were all but dormant when he appeared on the scene. Mackenzie inspired them with life and vigour. His propaganda gave them a powerful hold on the public mind, and a momentum that was irresistible. It was his long, unselfish and self-sacrificing struggle, amidst enormous difficulties and against tremendous odds, which first aroused the people to a true sense of their citizenship, and to the real value of those free institutions which were their just heritage. And it was he who, though aided by other able men, unquestionably bore the brunt of the battle for constitutional reform.

In his course of action in regard to these things, Mackenzie did not always wait to see whether the principles which he espoused were practicable. He had the courage to advocate an opinion long before it was ripe for realization. What he believed to be good for the commonwealth he did not hesitate to say was good, and he supported it with all his might as a journalist, on the platform, and in parliament—brooking no opposition from friend or foe—whether public opinion was prepared for it or not. To this extent he was not what might be

## NOT AN OPPORTUNIST

called a "practical man"—a charge which he sometimes had to meet—in politics. To this extent, also, he was "ahead of his time" and inconstant in his "personal connections." He was not of those who would support or oppose any proposal or measure on the principle of mere political expediency. He had in fact a scorn of expediency and a hatred of half-measures in the presence of justice. Neither did he oppose a measure at a particular time because it was impracticable, and support it only when it could be carried; but whatever his attitude, he could give, and almost invariably did give, practical reasons for his support or opposition. In all questions, great or small, involving honesty, purity and uprightness in public life, economy in the public expenditure, prudence and thrift in the preservation of the public domain, and a full recognition of the constitutional rights of the people, his voice and pen and action were never uncertain. These things lay close to his heart, and their opposites had his relentless hostility.

Mackenzie is also one of the "old Liberals" against whom party in its madness was wont to hurl relentlessly the taunt of disloyalty. How far the taunt was really deserved, the readers of this volume must be left to judge. Many of them may remember that the chiefs of the insurrection, and the great body of their friends and supporters, were still living when the famous apothegm of Junius was adopted as its motto by the leading Reform

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

journal of Canada. Mackenzie believed in the truth which it enunciated and acted on it. It was one of the articles of his creed that "the subject who is truly loyal to the chief magistrate will neither advise nor submit to arbitrary measures." He carried the doctrine to extremes; but, as was said by the reviewer in dealing with the fact, one should not "fail to see the group of events as it stands in its historic surroundings, and to judge the acts and actors with a fair and comprehensive reference to the circumstances of the period."<sup>1</sup> "Loyalty" in those days, if we may judge by some occurrences, was an equivocal and easily convertible virtue. The despatch of a colonial minister to the lieutenant-governor of Upper Canada, making some concessions to the long-enduring people of the province, and dismissing two law-officers of the Family Compact for their tyrannical conduct—treatment which was mildness itself compared to the unremitting and, at times, brutal persecution to which Mackenzie was subjected—was sufficient to sap the "loyalty" of the Compact, and to call forth threats of alienation from "the glorious Empire of their sires," and of "casting about for a new state of political existence."<sup>2</sup>

Mackenzie never went further than this sort of "veiled treason" in his peaceable demands for

<sup>1</sup> *The Week*, newspaper, November 19th, 1885.

<sup>2</sup> "The legislative council treated the despatch with open contempt." Goldwin Smith, *Canada and the Canadian Question* (1891), p. 14.

## NOT AN ANNEXATIONIST

colonial self-government. He never was an annexationist as that term is now popularly understood ; he had no desire for union with the United States. Until hope of redress was crushed by absolute despair, no public man of his time gave stronger proofs of his attachment to the British Crown and British institutions, or laboured more earnestly to preserve imperial authority over the Canadian provinces. That, prior to the outbreak, he lost faith in the remedial justice of the government as then administered ; and that he aimed to deprive the Crown and its colonial representatives and ministers of the authority which they debased and abused, and to hand it over, with proper restrictions, to the representatives of the people, goes without saying. That for this purpose he joined in a temporary appeal for aid to some of the American people, is equally true ; but there is no evidence worthy of the name that annexation of the provinces to the neighbouring states was his immediate or ultimate goal. His last message to the emissaries of Sir Francis Bond Head, while standing in armed resistance to the oligarchy, was "independence and a convention to arrange details." "Mr. Mackenzie," said a Conservative writer, the author of several historical works dealing with that early period, "was not an admirer of the American constitution. On the contrary, he preferred the British constitution, and would have been satisfied with that constitution enforced in its entirety,

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

including responsibility to the elective House and so to the people, instead of its responsibility to the Crown, as it prevailed in Canada.”<sup>1</sup> “He was a constitutional Reformer; yet his programme was certainly moderate enough. He was a staunch friend to British connection, opposed to the abortive Union Bill of 1818, and one of the first to propose a British North American confederation.”<sup>2</sup>

The question of loyalty involved in the rebellion itself is no longer the debatable question it once was. There is a great deal, as we shall see, in connection with the circumstances leading up to that event, to palliate and excuse it, if not to justify it absolutely. And, judging by the later literature on the subject, controversial though some of it may be, this is the view which is now all but universally entertained. In any case the responsibility for the insurrection, deplorable as it was, should not be made to rest on Reformers, who, after long years of heroic but fruitless effort to effect a change in the system of government by constitutional means, were at last goaded by their rulers into asserting the justness of their cause by physical force. The history of political agitations which have culminated in great political reforms, or in revolutions which have compelled reforms, proves that, in nearly every

<sup>1</sup> D. B. Read, Q.C., *The Rebellion of 1837* (1896), p. 162.

<sup>2</sup> W. J. Rattray, *The Scot in British North America* (1881), Vol. ii, p. 455.



## REBELLION OFTEN NECESSARY

instance, the dominant power or party against whom the agitation has been directed has refused to believe in the popular demand until revolution either actually came, or was no longer capable of being resisted.

“History proves that the rights of constitutional liberty, which British subjects enjoy to-day, have only been obtained by agitation, and, in some cases, by the exercise of force. Magna Charta, the greatest bulwark of British liberty, was forced by the barons from an unwilling monarch. Other incidents in history show that grievances have only been remedied when the oppressed, despairing of obtaining success by lawful agitation in the face of opposition by entrenched officialism, have been compelled to fly to arms in defence of their rights. Few will deny to-day, in the light of history, that the cause of constitutional government in Canada was materially advanced by the action of William Lyon Mackenzie, and that results have justified the rising of 1837.”<sup>1</sup> “It was one of a series of revulsions of popular feeling, recorded in British history, which has extended and broadened incalculably the liberties of the British race and nation.”<sup>2</sup> “It may be that Mackenzie was impetuous and turbulent, but the rebellion of 1837 was at best a pitiful expression of the discontent which the greed and the oppression of the Family

<sup>1</sup> *The Globe*, Toronto, December 11th, 1900.

<sup>2</sup> *The Star*, Toronto, April 14th, 1904.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Compact had developed. Too much has been said of the rash counsels and unhappy adventures of Mackenzie, and too little of the crying grievances which an insolent and autocratic executive would not redress, and of the privileges they were resolved to maintain. It is in such fashion that the decisive blow has been dealt to tyranny and privilege all down the splendid centuries of British history ; and if in the story of Liberalism in all countries there are wild and sanguinary chapters, it is because only in that way could popular government be established and perpetuated.”<sup>1</sup>

“Did the pages of history,” said Lord Durham in one of his great speeches on the Reform Bill, “not teem with instances of the folly and uselessness of resistance to popular rights ? The Revolution of 1741, the French Revolution of 1789, the separation of the North American colonies, might all have been averted by timely and wise concession. Can any man with the slightest knowledge of history attempt to persuade me that if Charles I, after the Petition of Right, had kept his faith with his people, he would not have saved his crown and his life ? Again, with reference to the French Revolution, I say that if Louis XVI had adopted the advice given by his ministers, the people would have been satisfied, the ancient institutions of the country ameliorated, the altar, the throne, and the

<sup>1</sup> J. S. Willison, *Sir Wilfrid Laurier and the Liberal Party* (1903), Vol. i, p. 2.

## LORD DURHAM'S VIEW

aristocracy preserved from the horrible fate which afterwards befell them. Twice had Louis XVI opportunities—first, under Turgot's ministry, secondly, under Necker's—of conciliating the country, and averting that fatal catastrophe by limited concessions. The nobility resisted and the Revolution followed. I need only add my conviction that, if after the repeal of the Stamp Act, England had not destroyed all the benefit of that concession by the Declaratory Act, and the re-imposition of the tea duties, North America would at this hour have been a portion of the British Empire. The course of events has always been the same. First, unreasoning opposition to popular demands; next, bloody and protracted struggles; finally, but invariably, unlimited and ignominious concessions." Durham might also have referred to the other French Revolution of 1830, when Charles X was deposed for his persistent endeavours to maintain an unpopular ministry in power, or he might have cited the revolt of Belgium against Holland, leading to its creation as an independent kingdom—events, we are told, "which were hailed with outbursts of enthusiasm in England, and perceptibly quickened the demand for reform."

In Great Britain itself, Catholic Emancipation and the Parliamentary Reform of 1832 were only conceded when the country was on the brink of revolution. "Agitation had evidently obtained for Ireland what loyalty and forbearance had never

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

procured ; and though the fear to which our statesmen had yielded might be what Lord Palmerston asserted, 'the provident mother of safety,' a concession to it, however wise or timely, gave a very redoubtable force to the menacing spirit by which concession had been gained."<sup>1</sup> Sir Robert Peel "was proud of having made a great sacrifice for a great cause [namely, Catholic Emancipation]. There can be little doubt that he had prevented a civil war in which many of the most eminent statesmen of foreign countries would have considered that the Irish Catholics were in the right."<sup>2</sup> And, speaking of the Reform Bill, the same writer says that "some plan of Parliamentary Reform had of necessity to be proposed. The true Conservative policy would have been to propose a moderate plan before increased disquietude suggested a violent one." "He [Peel] was converted with respect to the Catholic question, and was converted to Liberal views, but when he professed this conversion, it was to save the country from civil war. He was converted with respect to the Corn Laws, and was converted to Liberal convictions ; but when he professed this conversion, it was to save the country from famine."<sup>3</sup>

Referring to the Duke of Wellington, Durham's biographer says, that "perhaps his solitary claim to

<sup>1</sup> Lord Dalling and Bulwer, *Sir Robert Peel: An Historical Sketch* (1874), p. 73.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 71.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 81, 142.

## REFORMS—AVERTING ANARCHY

political regard is that he eventually extorted a reluctant consent from the king for Catholic Emancipation—a concession which lost all its grace because it was the outcome of panic, and could no longer be refused without peril. . . . . It became law only after a protracted and bitter struggle, which brought Ireland to the brink of rebellion.”<sup>1</sup> And, referring to the rejection by the Lords of the second Reform Bill, he says, “Lord Grey at once moved the adjournment of the House, and the country stood on the brink of revolution. . . . . The king seemed to have forfeited his popularity as if by magic, and the people, in their bitter disillusionment, were prepared to go almost any lengths—even to that of armed resistance—rather than submit to the contemptuous refusal of their just demands. . . Riots occurred in many towns, and whispers of a plot for seizing the wives and children of the aristocracy led the authorities to order the swords of the Scots Greys to be rough sharpened. It will probably never be known how near the country came at that moment to the brink of a catastrophe which would have overturned both law and order. . . . . The Reform Act was a safety valve at a moment when political excitement had assumed a menacing aspect, and the nation seemed on the verge of anarchy.”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Stuart J. Reid, *Life and Letters of Lord Durham* (1906), pp. 192, 193.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 285, 289, 290, 296.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

“The chiefest authors of revolutions have been, not the chimerical and intemperate friends of progress, but the blind obstructors of progress; those who, in defiance of nature, struggle to avert the inevitable future, to recall the irrevocable past; who chafe to fury by damming of its course the river which would otherwise flow calmly between its banks, which has ever flowed, and which, do what they will, must flow forever.”<sup>1</sup>

It is not necessary to institute any comparison with these great political and revolutionary movements, in other countries, in order to excuse or justify the revolutionary movement for constitutional reform which lay at the root of every other reform in government and administration in Canada. The evidence is overwhelming as to the grievances suffered by the people, their endeavours to remove them by legitimate means, and the absolute refusal of their reasonable demands by the advisers and representatives of the Crown. These latter, as was truly said, were living in “an atmosphere of constitutional fiction.”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Goldwin Smith, *Three English Statesmen* (1868), pp. 3, 4.

<sup>2</sup> “All the special grievances and demands of the Reformers were summed up and merged in their demand for ‘responsible government.’ By responsible government they meant that the government should be carried on, not by an executive nominated by the governor and independent of the vote of parliament, but, as in England, by a cabinet dependent for its tenure of office on the vote of the Commons. They meant, in short, that supreme power should be transferred from the Crown to the representatives of the people. It was nothing less than a revolution for which they called under a mild and constitutional

## IMPERIAL OPPOSITION

Lord John Russell, a representative Whig, and the member of a Whig administration, speaking in his place in the House of Commons of the demands of Lower Canada, said : " The House of Assembly of Lower Canada have asked for an elective legislative council, and an executive council which shall be responsible to them and not to the government and Crown of Great Britain. We consider that these demands are inconsistent with the relations between a colony and the mother country, and that it would be better to say at once, 'Let the two countries separate,' than for us to pretend to govern the colony afterwards."<sup>1</sup> And, speaking in the same place, only nine months before the actual outbreak in 1837, he said that "cabinet government in the colonies was incompatible with the relations which ought to exist between the mother country and the colony. Those relations required that His Majesty should be represented in the colony not by ministers, but by a governor sent out by the king, and responsible to the parliament of Great Britain. Otherwise Great Britain would have in the Canadas all the inconveniences of colonies without any of their advantages."<sup>2</sup>

These opinions of the colonial minister were endorsed by the imperial parliament in resolutions

name." Goldwin Smith, *Canada and the Canadian Question* (1891), p. 112.

<sup>1</sup> Speech, May 16th, 1836.

<sup>2</sup> Speech, March, 1837.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of both Houses passed on April 28th and May 9th, in the same year (1837). The resolution refusing the concession of responsible government declared "that while it is expedient to improve the composition of the executive council in Lower Canada, it is unadvisable to subject it to the responsibility demanded by the House of Assembly of that province." Amendments favouring the recognition of responsible government were moved in the House of Commons, but were rejected; and Lord Brougham entered his dissent, with reasons, on the journals of the House of Lords. In a despatch to Lord Sydenham, as late as October 14th, 1839, which deals with the great "difficulty" Sydenham may encounter "in subduing the excitement which prevails on the question of what is called responsible government," Lord John Russell lays special stress on the action of the imperial authorities more than two years before. "The Assembly of Lower Canada," he says, "having repeatedly pressed this point, Her Majesty's confidential advisers at that period thought it necessary not only to explain their views in the communications of the secretary of state, but expressly called for the opinion of parliament on the subject. The Crown and the Houses of Lords and Commons having thus decisively pronounced a judgment upon the question, you will consider yourself precluded from entertaining any proposition on the subject. It does not appear, indeed, that any very definite



## THE TRUE REMEDY REFUSED

meaning is generally agreed upon by those who call themselves the advocates of this principle, but its very vagueness is a source of delusion, and, if at all encouraged, would prove the cause of embarrassment and danger."

The despatch shows clearly enough that the home government saw difficulties, under certain circumstances,—theoretical and imaginary they really were,—in the application of the principle of executive responsibility to a colony, but none, as the minister states further on in his despatch, "to the practical views of colonial government recommended by Lord Durham," as he understood them.<sup>1</sup> What is important, however, to notice is, that the attitude and policy of the home government, above indicated, with respect to Lower Canada, *prior to the outbreak*, were just the same with respect to Upper Canada. The true remedy that was sought for the grievances complained of was distinctly refused to both provinces. It made no difference who was at the head of the colonial office, Tory or Whig, the answer to the petitions for redress was, in effect, the same. Glenelg was of opinion that, "in the administration of Canadian affairs, a sufficient practical responsibility already existed without the introduction of any hazardous schemes"—which "schemes," be it added, were what really

<sup>1</sup> "At first ministers at home were apprehensive lest the application of that principle to a dependency should lead to a virtual renunciation of control by the mother country." Erskine May, *Constitutional History*, 3d. Ed., Vol. iii, p. 367.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

brought "peace with honour," by the men who advocated them, to this country. In Upper Canada the answer was sufficiently galling. Sir Francis Bond Head's reply to the protests of his executive council on one occasion was, that he was the sole responsible minister, and that he was only bound to consult his council when he felt the need of their advice. "The lieutenant-governor maintains," said he "that responsibility to the people, who are already represented in the House of Assembly, is unconstitutional; that it is the duty of the council to serve him, not them." The message exemplified the man, and was a mild epitome of the arbitrary theory and practice of executive responsibility which prevailed during his own and the previous régimes, but which was effectually shattered by the insurrection.

All these things were known to the Reformers in both Upper and Lower Canada. It is scarcely to be wondered at that, under these circumstances, coupled with the actual situation at their own doors in every town and hamlet in the province, the prospects of redress seemed infinitely distant, and that hope died within the people's hearts. In Upper Canada, only three months following the decisive action of the imperial parliament, Sir Francis Bond Head must have read a manifesto, published in the public prints, from the Reformers of Toronto to their fellow-Reformers throughout the province, which was plainly a declaration for

## BOND HEAD INVITES REBELLION

independence; and this meant a political revolution. He could not but know that this final and portentous remonstrance was being approved by considerable sections of the people in all parts of the country; that the arrogant and autocratic exercise of the authority of the Crown, and the abuses of the vicious system of administration, had alienated popular sympathy and support from the government; that the seeds of disaffection were sown broadcast; and that, as in Ireland and England, during the last days of the fierce agitation for Catholic Emancipation and Parliamentary Reform, the country was on the brink of civil war. And yet, servant and representative of the Crown as he was, he, at that very time, according to his own admission, subsequently published, was encouraging armed resistance to the government in order to exhibit his power in suppressing the revolt!<sup>1</sup>

How far the insurrection of 1837 can be excused or justified, is a question upon which every thoughtful person must form his own conclusions from a perusal and consideration of the history of the time. The question is a practical and not an academic one, for no one admits that rebellion against a regularly organized government is never justifiable. The data for an impartial judgment are

<sup>1</sup> "It certainly appeared too much as if the rebellion had been purposely invited by the government, and the unfortunate men who took part in it deliberately drawn into a trap by those who subsequently inflicted so severe a punishment on them for their error." Lord Durham's *Report*, p. 72.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

largely supplied by the narrative of events and the commentaries thereon, which are contained in the pages of this volume. For a considerable period following the outbreak, public opinion in Canada and in England, for reasons which need not be discussed here, was condemnatory of the appeal to physical force, but it was far from unanimous; it was impossible that it should be unanimous. The movement failed in the field through no lack, as the historian has told us, of capacity and courage on Mackenzie's part; still it failed, and there was a natural reaction of sympathy and opinion, stimulated by the aftermath of the frontier disturbances, against the movement and those who were concerned in it personally and politically, as well as against the party with which they were identified. Greater patience, renewed petitions and protests, firmer faith in the disposition and willingness of the imperial authorities to accede to the constitutional changes so earnestly and unavailingly demanded, would, in due time, it has been said, have ensured a responsible executive and the full and complete benefits of parliamentary government as it was in Great Britain. The political tendency of the times was favourable to Liberal doctrines and constitutional reform, and the home government had already been moving, and would continue to move, in that direction. Such is the argument, in brief, usually made against the movement.

The reply is interrogatory—How long must

## THE CASE AS TO REBELLION

a free people, entitled to freedom and all the other benefits of British institutions, and fit for self-government, endure the tyranny, oppression, and general viciousness of such a system as prevailed prior to 1837? What is the time limit in such a case, for history has set such a limit in some other cases? Determined as was the attitude of the people of Upper Canada, startling and significant as was the warning conveyed by the insurrection, and intensely dissatisfied and alienated, according to Lord Durham and Lord Sydenham, as large numbers of the most law-abiding persons in the province were, even after the rebellion was crushed,—the old system was long in dying. Under circumstances and influences that one would have supposed had greatly hastened its demise, it died hard; for not until the régime of Lord Elgin, more than ten years after the first angry shot was fired in the Canadian provinces, were the long-looked-for measures of remedial justice and reform fairly and fully in force.<sup>1</sup> If, said the Reformer, under such adventitious aids backed by a rebellion *de facto* (strong or weak, it matters not), the people had so long to wait, how long must the waiting have been

<sup>1</sup> "In 1847 responsible government was fully established under Lord Elgin. From that time, the governor-general selected his advisers from that party which was able to command a majority in the legislative assembly, and accepted the policy recommended by them. The same principle was adopted, about the same time, in Nova Scotia; and has since become the rule of administration in other free colonies." Erskine May, *Constitutional History*, 3d. Ed., Vol. iii, pp. 367, 368.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

—how long the practice of the virtues of patience and forbearance, had Upper Canada never beheld a “rebel” in arms?

Questions like these have occasionally provoked an answer. Mr. W. J. Rattray, a thoughtful publicist and writer on historical and political subjects, has given it as his opinion that, were it not for the rebellion, many years must have elapsed before the British government would have consented to carry out the reforms advocated in Mackenzie’s “Seventh Report on Grievances,” and subsequently recommended by Lord Durham. “Had these concessions,” he says, “been only made three years before, there would have been no rebellion; and it may safely be affirmed likewise that, but for the rebellion, responsible government would not even now have been granted.”<sup>1</sup> Other answers have been given at different times, either in the columns of the newspaper press, or in public speeches and addresses. But, in whatever form they have appeared, they show that public opinion with respect to the rebellion, aided as it has been by historical research and a calmer and more deliberate consideration of the causes and outcome of the whole movement, has been greatly modified in the intervening years.

In a speech delivered by the Hon. Edward Blake, M.P., to his Irish constituents in the summer of 1898, with respect to the Irish rebellion of 1798, Mr. Blake said: “Rebellion is morally justified

<sup>1</sup> *The Scot in British North America* (1881), Vol. ii, p. 485.

## EDWARD BLAKE'S OPINION

upon two conditions: first, that there are grievances that are serious, overwhelming and long endured, and that peaceable redress has turned out to be impossible; and, secondly, that there is some reasonable chance of success at any rate in the rising." These conditions were not wanting in 1837. An eminent historian has declared that "Toronto all but fell into the hands of the rebels. Mackenzie, who showed no lack either of courage or capacity as a leader, brought before it a force sufficient for its capture, aided as he would have been by his partisans in the city itself, and he was foiled only by a series of accidents, and by the rejection of his bold counsels at the last."<sup>1</sup> "The rebellion in both provinces, though vanquished in the field of war, was victorious in the political field, and ended in the complete surrender of imperial power."<sup>2</sup> The same authority has also expressed the opinion, which is all but universally accepted, that in both Canadas it was, in fact, not a rebellion against the British government, but a petty civil war, in Upper Canada between parties, in Lower Canada between races, though in Lower Canada the British race had the forces of the home government on its side. "We rebelled neither against Her Majesty's person nor government, but against colonial misgovernment," were the words of one of the rebel leaders in Lower Canada. "The two movements were

<sup>1</sup> Goldwin Smith, *Canada and the Canadian Question* (1891), p. 119.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 97.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

perfectly distinct in their origin and their course, though there was a sympathy between them, and both were stimulated by the general ascendancy of Liberal opinions since 1830 in France, in England, and in the world at large. The rebellion was the end of Sir Francis Bond Head. Then came Lord Durham, the son-in-law of Grey, . . . to inquire into the sources of the disturbance, pronounce judgment, and restore order to the twofold chaos.”<sup>1</sup>

The origin and history of the insurrection in Canada have also, within very recent years, occupied public attention in Great Britain and South Africa, in connection with the rebellion and the terribly destructive war which followed in that part of the king's dominions. Comparisons were not unnaturally made between the condition of affairs at the seats of rebellion in each country prior to the outbreak, and the justification in each case for the revolt. It is worthy of notice that the historic parallel, on the score at least of provocation and justification, is favourable to Canada and to those who took part in the insurrection in these provinces; and such evidently was the opinion of the British government, and of public opinion in Great Britain, so far at any rate as it was represented in parliament. The revolt in Canada was officially stated to be “founded on grievances under constitutional conditions which were recognized as unsatisfactory

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 120.



## JOSEPH CHAMBERLAIN'S OPINION

by the government of the day and altered by subsequent legislation. In the Cape there has been adhesion to the Queen's enemies, during war, of those who have not even the pretext of any grievance, and who have for a generation enjoyed full constitutional liberty."<sup>1</sup> It was "unnecessary," wrote the ministers at Cape Town to Sir Alfred Milner, "for the purpose of tracing the mode of dealing with those guilty of the crime of rebellion or high treason in Canada, to give any history of the causes which led up to the rebellion in Upper and Lower Canada. In both cases the disturbance had its origin in a conspiracy for the redress of grievances which were more or less well grounded, and recognized as being so by the reforms which followed the outbreak."<sup>2</sup> And speaking on the same point, in his place in the House of Commons, in a debate on the address (January 20th, 1902), when the policy and conduct of the government were under criticism, the colonial secretary, Mr. Chamberlain, said: "Just let me for a moment, in two or three words, remind the House what took place in Canada. The Canadians had great grievances, which the Cape rebels had not. The Cape rebels had every liberty, every right, every privilege which the Canadians desired, or which they have since acquired. There was

<sup>1</sup> Extract from telegram from Mr. Chamberlain, colonial secretary, to Sir Alfred Milner, May 5th, 1900.

<sup>2</sup> Extract from Memo. by ministers at Cape Town to Governor Sir Alfred Milner, April 27th, 1900.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

justification—or an excuse—for the conduct of the Canadian rebels. There was no justification of any kind for the conduct of the Cape rebels. In the case of Canada there was justification which was admitted by subsequent legislation. The wrongs of the Canadians were subsequently redressed, but they were redressed on the initiation of this country, and not as terms or conditions of surrender.”<sup>1</sup>

Sir Wilfrid Laurier, since he became first minister of Canada, has referred to the rebellion on two notable occasions. Speaking in the House of Commons, on his motion of condolence with respect to the death of the late Queen, he said: “Let us remember that, in the first year of the Queen’s reign, there was a rebellion in this very country; there was a rebellion in the then foremost colony of Great Britain, rebellion in Lower Canada, rebellion in Upper Canada; rebellion—let me say it at once, because it is only the truth to say it—rebellion, not against the authority of the young Queen, but rebellion against the pernicious system of government which then prevailed.”

The second occasion was the banquet of the Canadian Club in London, England, on July 16th, 1902, when, in responding to the toast of “The Dominion of Canada,” he said: “The loyalty of Canada has been enhanced by the free institutions given to her. If it had not been for the charter

<sup>1</sup> *The Parliamentary Debates*, 4th Series, Vol. 101, p. 376. The *Times* report is the same.

## SIR WILFRID LAURIER'S OPINION

of liberty which she had received, perhaps the condition of things would have been different. In 1837 Canada was in a state of turmoil and excitement. There was rebellion not only in the province of Quebec, but in the British province of Ontario. The rebellion, in his mind, was quite justified by the unworthy system which then obtained, and by attempting to rule what ought to have been a free people by methods which were unsuited to them. But in 1899, when they had been given a free régime and had a parliament to which the government of the country was responsible, when they had the blessings of responsible government in the same measure that they had in England, when the dominion of her late Majesty was threatened in a distant part of her domain, the very sons of the rebels of 1837 were the first to come to the rescue and to maintain the dominion of Her Majesty in South Africa. That was the result of the wise policy that had been followed with regard to Canada and the other colonies of Great Britain."

These various expressions of opinion touching the question of 1837, whence imputations of disloyalty against Mackenzie and the Reformers of his time have been drawn, and which are supplemented elsewhere in these pages, are not unworthy of consideration. The lapse of years, and a clearer and truer perception and understanding of the events in which he figured, of the system of government and abuses which he assailed, of the forces, political and

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

personal, which beset him, and of the man himself, have manifestly wrought a more rational judgment with respect to those old and exasperating matters of controversy. Their true significance is understood as it never was before by statesmen and publicists, and by those who inspire and mould the thought of the nation. "The tumult and the shouting" of crimination and recrimination, which they once provoked, have passed with the passing of the men of the old dispensation ; and loyalty to the Crown not being, as in fact it never has been, the exclusive possession of any particular party in the State, these old charges of disloyalty, whencesoever they come, must be regarded as a spent force in the politics and government of Canada.

## CHAPTER II

### EARLY YEARS

**T**HE part played by William Lyon Mackenzie in the making of Canada embraces the political history of Upper Canada, and more particularly of the Reform party in Upper Canada, from the year 1824, when he came upon the scene as the editor and publisher of a newspaper in the interests of good government and constitutional reform, down to the outbreak in December, 1837. Mackenzie's work and influence may also not unfairly be held to extend to the results of the revolutionary movement with which he was identified—to Lord Durham's mission, his Report, which formed the basis of the Union Act of 1840, the beneficent change of imperial policy towards Canada, and the reforms which followed in its train. The good as well as the ill should be weighed in the balance of popular judgment. The period itself was one of unrest and growing discontent, of agitation and turbulence, of stress and storm, but it was also a period of rapid development of public opinion in favour of a radical change in the constitution of the Canadas. Mackenzie was conspicuous all those years as a journalist and parliamentarian, employing every legitimate means and power at his command for the progress and improvement of political condi-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

tions, and the betterment of the people. The culmination of the struggle was a civil war, undertaken and ended unsuccessfully for the concession to Canada of those principles of self-government within the Empire which were denied the advocates and friends of reform, and the denial of which, under circumstances of intolerable provocation, set the country aflame with insurrection.

In writing this biography it will be my duty, as far as convenient, to allow the subject of it to tell his own tale; and where opinions must be expressed, it will be my aim to make them judicial and just, though I may not conceive that he was always right, either in act or opinion.

Mackenzie's parents were married at Dundee, Scotland, on May 8th, 1794. Of this marriage, William Lyon Mackenzie, the subject of this biography, was the sole issue. He was born at Springfield, Dundee, on March 12th, 1795; and his father died when the child was only twenty-seven days old. His mother, by the death of her husband, who left behind him no property of any account, became to a great extent dependent upon her relatives, of whom she had several in the Highlands; and she sometimes lived with one and sometimes with another. Some of them were poor, others well to do; but the mother always managed, by some ingenuity of industry, to keep a humble home over the heads of herself and her boy. Her constitutional temperament always kept her busy;

## HIS MOTHER

let her be where she might, her highly nervous organization rendering inaction difficult to her, except towards the close of her life. In this respect, there was a remarkable resemblance between herself and her son; and from her, it may safely be affirmed, he derived the leading mental characteristics that distinguished him through life.

Her dark eyes were sharp and piercing, though generally quiet; but when she was in anger, which did not often occur, they flashed out such gleams of fire as might well appal an antagonist. The small mouth and the thin, compressed lips, in harmony with the whole features, told of that unconquerable will which she transmitted to her son. The forehead was broad and high, and the face seldom relaxed into perfect placidity; there were always on the surface indications of the working of the indomitable feelings within.

Her strong religious bias made Mrs. Mackenzie an incessant reader of the Scriptures, and such religious books as were current among the Seceders. With this kind of literature she early imbued the mind of her son; and the impressions thus formed were never wholly effaced. The strongest reciprocal affection existed between her and her son, at whose house she spent the last seventeen years of her life, having followed him to Canada in 1822. She had attained the mature age of ninety years when she died, a fact which goes to show that it was through her that Mackenzie inherited a physical frame cap-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

able of extraordinary endurance, as well as his natural mental endowments.

Daniel Mackenzie, father of the subject of this biography, is described as a man of dark complexion; and his grandfather, Colin Mackenzie, used to bear the cognomen of "Colin Dhu," or black Colin. Daniel learned weaving in all its branches; but, entering into an unprofitable commercial speculation, he was reduced to keeping a few looms for the manufacture of "green cloth."

In June, 1824, just when he had entered on his editorial career, Mackenzie was called upon to meet the charge of disloyalty; and his defence, which traces his ancestry, is in his happiest mood.

"My ancestors," he said, "stuck fast to the legitimate race of kings, and, though professing a different religion, joined Charles Stuart, whom (barring his faith) almost all Scotland considered as its rightful sovereign. Colin Mackenzie, my paternal grandfather, was a farmer under the Earl of Airly in Glenshee, in the highlands of Perthshire; he, at the command of his chieftain, willingly joined the Stuart standard, in the famous 1745, as a volunteer. My mother's father, also named Colin Mackenzie, and from the same glen, had the honour to bear a commission from the prince, and served as an officer in the Highland army. Both my ancestors fought for the royal descendant of their native kings; and after the fatal battle of Culloden, my grandfather accompanied his unfortunate prince to the Low Countries,



## HIS ANCESTRY

and was abroad with him on the continent, following his adverse fortunes for years. He returned at length, married, in his native glen, my grandmother, Elizabeth, a daughter of Mr. Spalding of Ashintully Castle, and my aged mother was the youngest but two of ten children, the fruit of that marriage. The marriage of my parents was not productive of lasting happiness; my father, Daniel Mackenzie, returned to Scotland from Carlisle, where he had been to learn the craft of Rob Roy's cousin, Deacon Jarvie of the Saltmarket, Glasgow, in other words, the weaving business, took sickness, became blind, and, in the second year of his marriage with my mother, died, being in his twenty-eighth or twenty-ninth year. I was only three weeks old at his death; my mother took upon herself those vows which our Church prescribes as needful at baptism, and was left to struggle with misfortune, a poor widow, in want and in distress. . . .

“Well may I love the poor, greatly may I esteem the humble and the lowly, for poverty and adversity were my nurses, and in youth were want and misery my familiar friends; even now it yields a sweet satisfaction to my soul that I can claim kindred with the obscure cotter and the humble labourer of my native, ever honoured, ever loved Scotland.

“My mother feared God, and He did not forget nor forsake her; never in my early years can I recollect that divine worship was neglected in our

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

little family, when health permitted; never did she in family prayer forget to implore that He, who doeth all things well, would establish in righteousness the throne of our monarch, setting wise and able counsellors around it. A few of my relations were well to do, but many of them were poor farmers and mechanics, (it is true my mother could claim kindred with some of the first families in Scotland; but who that is great and wealthy can sit down to count kindred with the poor?) yet amongst these poor husbandmen, as well as among their ministers, were religion and loyalty held in as due regard as they had been by their ancestors in the olden time. Was it from the precept, was it from the example, of such a mother and such relations, that I was to imbibe that disloyalty, democracy, falsehood, and deception, with which my writings are by the government editor<sup>1</sup> charged? Surely not. If I had followed the example shown me by my surviving parent, I had done well; but as I grew up I became careless, and neglected public and private devotion. Plainly can I trace, from this period, the commencement of those errors of the head and of the heart which have since embittered my cup, and strewn my path with thorns, where at my age I might naturally have expected to pluck roses." . . .

<sup>1</sup> Charles Fothergill, editor of the *Upper Canada Gazette*, then published in Toronto, and King's Printer. The *Gazette*, like the *Moniteur* of Paris, had an official and a non-official side.

## SCHOOL DAYS

His first school teacher was Mr. Kinnear, of Dundee, who was master of a parish school. One of his schoolmates, from whom I have sought information, describes him as "a bright boy with yellow hair, wearing a short blue coat with yellow buttons." Though very small when he first entered school, he was generally at the head of his class. His progress in arithmetic, particularly, was very rapid. He was often asked to assist other boys in the solution of problems which baffled their skill; and, while he rendered this service, he would pin papers or draw grotesque faces with chalk on their coat-backs.

At the age of ten years, some difficulty occurring between him and his mother, he resolved to leave home and set up on his own account. For this purpose he induced some other boys of about his own age to accompany him to the Grampian Hills, among which he had often been taken, and where, in a small castle which was visible from Dundee, and of which they intended to take possession, they made the romantic resolve of leading the life of hermits. They never reached the length of the castle, however, and after strolling about a few days, during part of which they were terribly frightened at the supposed proximity of fairies, they were glad to trudge their way back to the town, half famished. This incident is characteristic, and might have been regarded as prophetic; for the juvenile brain that planned such enterprises would

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

not be likely to be restrained, in after life, where daring was required. It is probable that the difficulty between young Lyon and his mother, which led to this escapade, arose out of the long reading tasks which it was her custom to impose upon him. He was in this way thoroughly drilled in the Westminster Catechism and Confession of Faith; he learned the Psalms and large portions of the Bible by rote, and was early initiated into Baxter's *Call to the Unconverted*, and several similar works. When one of these tasks had been given him, his mother used to confine him closely till it had been mastered. This early exercise of the memory, it may be reasonably assumed, tended to give to that faculty the strength which in after life was a source of astonishment to many.

Those who did not know Mackenzie's personal habits often attributed to his unaided memory much that was the result of reference to those stores of information which he never ceased to collect, and which were so arranged as to admit of easy access at any moment. He has left in his own hand-writing a list of "some of the books read between the years 1806 and 1819," in which are fifty-four works under the head of "divinity," one hundred and sixty-eight on history and biography, fifty-two of travels and voyages, thirty-eight on geography and topography, eighty-five on poetical and dramatic literature, forty-one on education, fifty-one on arts, science, and agriculture, one

## HIS EARLY BUSINESS CAREER

hundred and sixteen miscellaneous, and three hundred and fifty-two novels; making, in all, nine hundred and fifty-eight volumes in thirteen years. One year he read over two hundred volumes. With his tenacious memory, Mackenzie must have been enabled to draw, from time to time, upon these stores, during the rest of his life. The works are confined almost exclusively to the English language; and the truth is, that he had only an imperfect knowledge of any other. Of a tendency to scepticism, of which he was accused in the latter part of his life—with what justice will hereafter be seen—there is, in the works which must have tended to give a cast to his mind, an almost entire absence.

In early youth, politics already possessed a charm for him, the Dundee, Perth and Cupar *Advertiser*, the first newspaper he ever read, serving to gratify this inclination. But he was soon admitted to a wider range of political literature; for he was introduced to the Dundee news-room at so early a period of life that he was for years after its youngest member.

For a short time after leaving school, and when he must have been a mere boy, he was put into Henry Tullock's draper shop, Dundee; but disliking the work he did not long remain there, probably only a few months. He afterwards became an indentured clerk in the counting-house of Gray, a druggist in a large way of business in Dundee. It was probably while in the counting-house of Gray,

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

that Mackenzie acquired that knowledge of the mysteries of accounts which afterwards made his services of considerable value as chairman of the Committee of Public Accounts in the assembly of Canada, and which enabled him to render important service in the Welland Canal investigation, and on other occasions when financial mysteries had to be solved.

At an early age, apparently when he was about nineteen, he went into business for himself at Alyth, some twenty miles from Dundee, setting up a general store in connection with a circulating library. He remained there for three years, when the result of inexperience assumed the shape of a business failure. His creditors were all honourably paid after he had acquired the necessary means in Canada, at the distance of some years. It was about the middle of May, 1817, when he left Alyth; and he soon afterwards went to England, where at one time we find him filling the situation of clerk to the Kennett and Avon Canal Company, at another time in London; and he used to relate that he was for a short time in the employ of Earl Lonsdale as a clerk.

The idea of going to Canada is said to have been first suggested to him by Edward Lesslie, of Dundee. Before starting he visited France. The date of this visit cannot be fixed with certainty; but it was probably in November or December, 1819. He confesses to having, a little before this time,

## SAILS FOR CANADA

plunged into the vortex of dissipation and contracted a fondness for play. But all at once he abandoned the dangerous path on which he had entered, and after the age of twenty-one never played a game at cards. A more temperate man than he was, for the rest of his life, it would have been impossible to find.

In April, 1820, Mackenzie was among the passengers of the *Psyche* bound for Canada, a young man just turned twenty-five years of age, who, without having enjoyed any other advantages of education than the parochial and secondary schools of Dundee offered, had a mind well stored with varied information which he had devoured with keen literary appetite and appreciation. It was fated that this young man should change the destiny of the country to which the good ship *Psyche* was bearing him. He was of slight build and scarcely of medium height, being only five feet six inches in stature. His massive head, high and broad in the frontal region and well rounded, looked too large for the slight wiry frame it surmounted. He was already bald from the effects of a fever. His keen, restless, piercing blue eyes, which threatened to read your most inward thoughts, and the ceaseless and expressive activity of his fingers, which unconsciously opened and closed, betrayed a temperament that could not brook inaction. The chin was long and rather broad; and the firm-set mouth indicated a will which, however it might be baffled and thwart-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

ed, could not be subdued. The lips, firmly pressed together, constantly undulated in a mass, moving all that part of the face which lies below the nostrils; with this motion the twinkling of the eyes seemed to keep time, and gave an appearance of unrest to the whole countenance.

After his arrival in Canada, Mackenzie was for a short time employed in connection with the survey of the Lachine Canal; but it could only have been a few weeks, for in the course of the summer he entered into business in York, as the present city of Toronto was then called. There John Lesslie and he were in the book and drug business, the profits of the books going to Lesslie, and those of the drugs to Mackenzie. The question arose of finding another place at which to establish a second business, and Dundas was selected. Here he conducted the business of the partnership for fifteen or sixteen months, during which time, I have heard him say, a clear cash profit of £100 a month was made, until the partnership was dissolved, by mutual consent, in the early part of 1823. A division of the partnership effects was then made; and, in papers which have been preserved, Mackenzie appears as a purchaser from the firm of Mackenzie & Lesslie to the amount of £686 19s 3½d. The goods included in this purchase were as miscellaneous as can well be imagined, and with this stock a separate business was commenced; but it was not long continued, for in the autumn of the same year Mackenzie removed



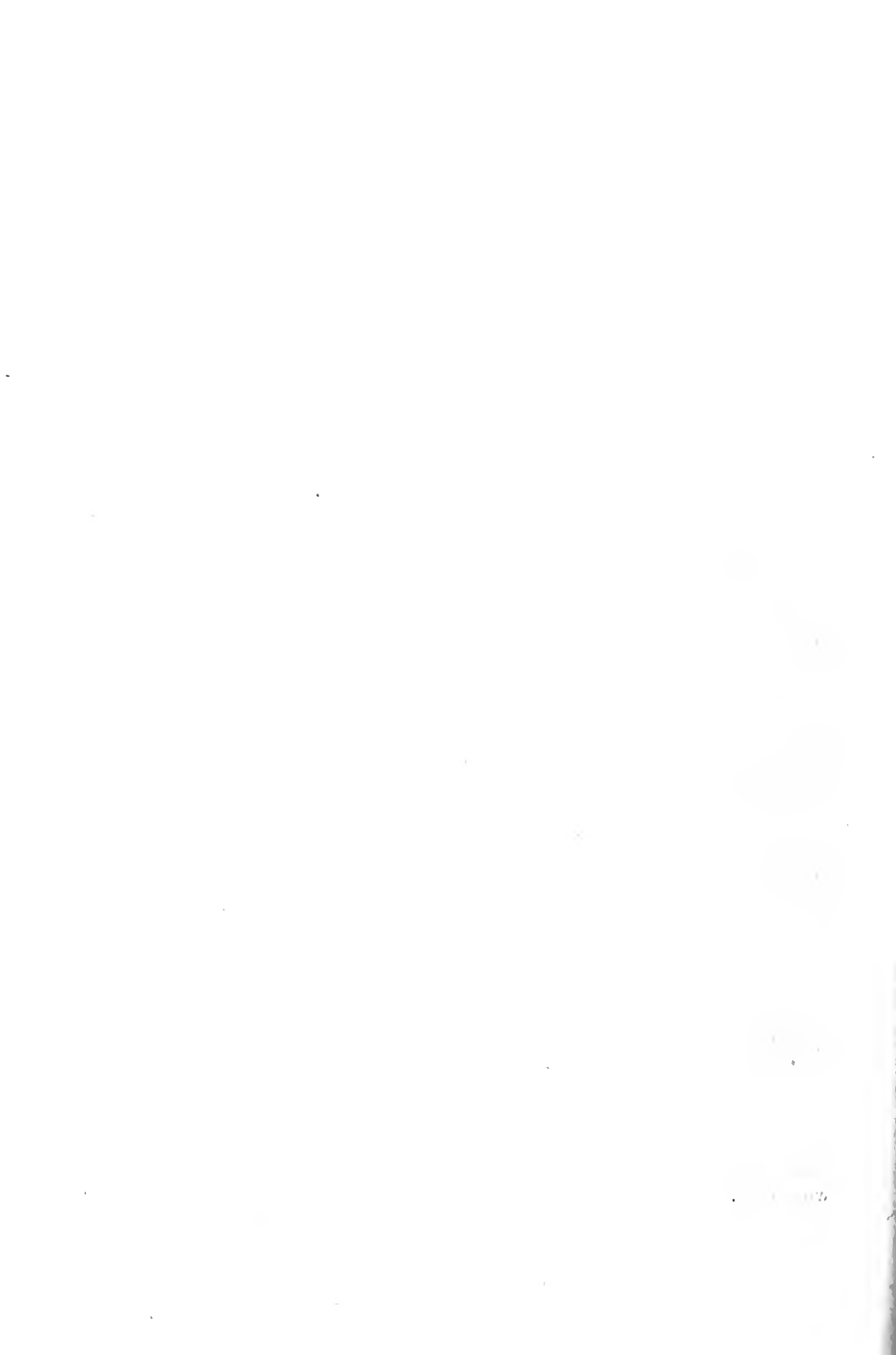
## ABANDONS COMMERCE

to Queenston, and there opened a general store. He remained only a year; and before the expiration of that time he had abandoned commerce for politics; the stock of goods was disposed of to a store-keeper in the country; and, as a journalist, he made the first step in the eventful career which opens with this period of his life.

While living in Dundas, Mackenzie was married on July 1st, 1822, at Montreal. Miss Isabel Baxter,<sup>1</sup> his bride, may be said to have been a native of the same town as himself; for she was born at Dundee, and he at Springfield, a suburb of the same place; they both were at the same school together.

Up to this time, Mackenzie had not held any other office in Canada than that of school trustee; and he confessed that even that mark of public confidence inspired him with pride. He and David Thorburn were elected to that office at the same time, at Queenston.

<sup>1</sup> Miss Isabel Baxter was the second daughter of Peter Baxter of Dundee, Forfarshire, Scotland, who settled near Kingston in the county of Frontenac, where he became the owner of a valuable farm property, which, after his death, passed into the hands of George Baxter, one of his sons. George Baxter was master of the Royal Grammar School at Kingston, and had, as two of his pupils, Sir Richard Cartwright and the late Sir John A. Macdonald. His sister, Isabel, who married Mackenzie, came to Canada with Mackenzie's mother, and the marriage took place three weeks after her arrival. The youthful bride, who had scarce attained her majority, has been described as "a bright, handsome, Scotch lassie, who preserved her refined features, and her gentle, winsome manner till past the age of seventy." Mrs. Mackenzie died at Toronto on January 12th, 1873, in her seventy-first year. See sketch of her life, with portrait, at page 221 of Morgan's interesting work on *Types of Canadian Women* (1903).



### CHAPTER III

#### UPPER CANADA UNDER THE CONSTITUTIONAL ACT

**I**N the year 1824, when Mackenzie, as a journalist, commenced his public career, the province of Upper Canada was being governed under the Constitutional Act of 1791.<sup>1</sup> The Quebec Act of 1774,<sup>2</sup> which it supplanted, was found inadequate for the purposes it was intended to serve. This was owing to difficulties inherent in the situation, but which tended, nevertheless, to the extension of popular government. The Act made no provision for an elective legislative body; the only body for legislative purposes was a council appointed by the Crown, composed principally of English residents, notwithstanding the great numerical superiority of the French population. The repeal of the Act was due to the uncertainty and confusion arising out of the French legal system, which had been made applicable to the English as well as the French sections of the country, the agitation in the legislative council against that system and in favour of the introduction of English law, the backward state of legislation in the province, and the agitation and demand for an elective assembly which followed the

<sup>1</sup> 31 Geo. III, c. 31.

<sup>2</sup> 14 Geo. III, c. 83.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

immigration into Canada of the United Empire Loyalists. These immigrants, who had left the thirteen colonies when the latter declared themselves independent of the mother country, had been accustomed to representative institutions in the colonies which they abandoned, and brought with them a natural desire for similar institutions in this country. In about a year after they colonized the continental part of Nova Scotia, which was in 1784, the home government created the present province of New Brunswick, and gave it a legislative assembly. This stimulated a demand for the same kind of a body in what was afterwards known as Upper Canada, and also amongst the English residents of Lower Canada. These latter hoped thereby to secure an elective assembly for the whole province of Quebec, in which, with the help of the representatives chosen by the new English incomers, they would be able to counterbalance the French vote in Lower Canada. Even the French themselves joined in the demand for such an assembly, influenced partly, no doubt, by the progressive ideas of the time, but also by the hope of finding in a French assembly a security for their language, laws and institutions, more especially their ecclesiastical system, which they could not find in a legislative council controlled by men of a different race and creed.

The Constitutional Act had several distinct objects in view. One was to confer legislative authority

## THE OBJECTS OF THE ACT

in Lower Canada on a French assembly, and so overcome the difficulties in regard to the old ecclesiastical system, and especially the old civil law, to which the legislative council had been inimical. A second object was to give the like legislative power to an English assembly in Upper Canada. The third object was to enable the two races to work out their own political future apart from each other, under a constitution resembling that of Great Britain, as far as the circumstances of the country would admit.<sup>1</sup>

The debate on the bill in the House of Commons was conducted in the main by three of the most famous men in parliamentary history, Pitt, the younger, Burke and Fox. Pitt said that the question was, whether parliament should agree to establish two legislatures. The principle was to give a legislature to Quebec in accord, as nearly as possible, with the British constitution. The division of the province was liable to some objections, but to fewer than any other measure. He regarded the division as essential, as he could not otherwise reconcile the clashing interests known to exist. "I hope," he said, "this separation will put an end to the competition between the old French inhabitants and the new settlers from Britain and the British colonies." Burke approved of the division. "For us to attempt," he said, "to amalgamate two

<sup>1</sup> See despatch of Lord Grenville to Lord Dorchester, October 20th, 1789, in Christie's *History*, Vol. vi, Appendix, pp. 16-26.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

populations composed of races of men diverse in language, laws and habitudes, is a complete absurdity. Let the proposed constitution be founded on man's nature, the only solid basis for an enduring government." He thought the English ought to enjoy the English constitution, the French, the old Canadian constitution. Fox was on the whole rather against the division of the province. But, in discussing the policy of the Act, he laid down a principle which was destined, after half a century, under the Union Act of 1840,<sup>1</sup> to become the rule of colonial administration. "I am convinced," said he, "that the only means of retaining distant colonies with advantage, is to enable them to govern themselves." On the question of the legislative council he favoured an elective body, whose members should possess qualifications higher than those of the House of Assembly, and to be chosen by electors of higher standing than those having votes for the Lower House. It was during this debate on the Constitutional Act that the memorable quarrel took place between Burke and Fox which severed their long private friendship.

The Constitutional Act, as an instrument of government, was far in advance of the Québec Act, and was a remarkable step in the political development of the country. Its effect upon the French was beneficial in one important particular: it educated them to a considerable extent in self-

<sup>1</sup> 3-4 Vict., c. 35.

## EFFECTS OF THE ACT

government, and taught them to appreciate its advantages. But at the same time it continued the work, which the Quebec Act had practically commenced, of strengthening them as a distinct nationality desirous of perpetuating their own favoured institutions. This, it has been said, was an influence which did not make for a homogeneous nation, and, by segregating the French from the other provinces, was not in the interest of the French-Canadians themselves. The British statesmen, however, who were responsible for the Constitutional Act had no wish or desire to destroy the national life and character of the people of French Canada. The Act as a whole was the handiwork of Pitt. He remembered that, in less than ten years from the time that the French power was broken in America, the thirteen colonies, having no longer the dread of French aggression, declared their independence. In his speech in the House of Commons he said that the real object was to create two colonies separate from and jealous of each other, so as to guard against a repetition of the rupture—"the great Anglo-Saxon schism"—which had separated the thirteen colonies from the mother country. It was a short-sighted policy, but is not to be wondered at. English statesmen could hardly be expected at that time to foresee the advent of colonial self-government half a century afterwards, and its successful reign in the subsequent years, much less the germ of the federal system which was undesignedly in-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

roduced by giving each province the control of its own affairs.

Under the Constitutional Act, the former province of Quebec, or what remained of it after the revolutionary war, was divided into the two provinces of Upper and Lower Canada, the division taking effect on December 26th, 1791, by an order of the king in council. The division line was practically the river Ottawa, which separated roughly the French and English settlements, and left most of the seigniories, relics of the Canadian feudal system created under the French régime, in Lower Canada. A legislative council and a legislative assembly were constituted within each province, by whose advice and consent the sovereign, represented by the governor, or (in the case of Upper Canada, the younger province,) the lieutenant-governor, and appointed by him, should have power "to make laws for the peace, welfare and good government" of the separate provinces. In Upper Canada the legislative council was to consist of "a sufficient number of discreet and proper persons, being not fewer than seven," who were to be summoned thereto, under the great seal of the province, by the governor or lieutenant-governor, or person administering the government, every such person to hold his seat for life, subject to be vacated in certain cases defined by the statute. The Speaker of the council was to be appointed and removed by the lieutenant-governor. His Majesty was also em-



## MAIN PROVISIONS OF THE ACT

powered by the Act to confer upon any subject of the Crown by letters-patent, under the great seal of either province, "any hereditary title of honour, rank, or dignity of such province," and "to annex thereto, by the said letters-patent, an hereditary right of being summoned to the legislative council of such province." This provision for creating a political aristocracy emanated from Pitt, and was favoured by Burke but opposed by Fox, who, as we have seen, declared his preference for an elective instead of a nominative council.

The legislative assembly was to consist of not less than sixteen members, who were to be chosen by electoral districts of which the limits and the number of representatives of each district were fixed by the lieutenant-governor. This representation was increased twice in subsequent years, until, under the régime of Sir Peregrine Maitland, it was made self-regulating by an Act passed for that purpose. In 1828, when Mackenzie was first elected, the number of members was forty-eight.

One other element of the provincial constitution was the executive council, who are referred to in four sections of the statute<sup>1</sup> as being "appointed by His Majesty, his heirs or successors, within such province, for the affairs thereof"—which meant, of course, by the lieutenant-governor.

There was thus in Upper Canada, under this

<sup>1</sup> Sections 7, 34, 38 and 50, the words of reference being substantially the same in each section.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

instrument of government, a reproduction of the British civil polity—a lieutenant-governor, who represented the Crown, a legislative council, nominated by the Crown, corresponding to the House of Lords, an assembly, elected by the people, corresponding to the House of Commons, and an executive council, representing the confidential advisers of the sovereign. These features of the new system were emphasized by General Simcoe, the first governor of the province, in his speech at the close of the first session of the first parliament of Upper Canada, on October 15th, 1792. He congratulated his yeomen commoners on possessing “not a mutilated constitution, but a constitution which has stood the test of experience, and is the very image and transcript of that of Great Britain.” “Though it might be the express image in form,” says Mr. Goldwin Smith, “it was far from being the express image in reality of parliamentary government as it exists in Great Britain, or even as it existed in Great Britain at that time. The lieutenant-governor, representing the Crown, not only reigned but governed with a ministry not assigned to him by the vote of the assembly but chosen by himself, and acting as his advisers, not as his masters. The assembly could not effectually control his policy by withholding supplies, because the Crown, with very limited needs, had revenues, territorial and casual,<sup>1</sup> of its own. Thus the imita-

<sup>1</sup>The “casual and territorial revenues” were derived from the sale

## LORD DURHAM'S CRITICISMS

tion was somewhat like the Chinese imitation of the steam vessel, exact in everything except the steam."<sup>1</sup>

Lord Durham's commentaries on the political constitutions provided by the Act of 1791, as already outlined, are highly instructive. These disclosed, as he could not help noticing, common weaknesses and defects. "It is impossible," he says, "to observe the great similarity of the constitutions established in all our North American provinces, and the striking tendency of all to terminate in pretty nearly the same results, without entertaining a belief that some defect in the form of government, and some erroneous principle of administration, have been common to all; the hostility of the races being palpably insufficient to account for all the evils which have affected Lower Canada, inasmuch as nearly the same results have been exhibited among the homogeneous population of the other provinces."<sup>2</sup> A common defect is also observed in

of timber on the Crown lands and from other sources, and, for a long time, were held and appropriated by the lieutenant-governor and his officials instead of by the House of Assembly, which should have controlled these and all other public moneys. This species of finance, as long as it lasted, was naturally a subject of constant contention between the Crown officials and the representatives of the people.

<sup>1</sup> *Canada and the Canadian Question* (1881), p. 100.

<sup>2</sup> *Durham's Report*, p. 32. There have been several different editions of Lord Durham's Report, namely, the original English edition, 1839, published in London by the British government, the Canadian reprint of the same year by Robert Stanton, Queen's Printer, Toronto, and a recent English edition by Methuen & Co., 1902. The page references in the present volume are to the Canadian edition.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

the irritating relations between the executive and the popular body. "It may fairly be said that the natural state of government in all these colonies is that of collision between the executive and the representative body. In all of them the administration of public affairs is habitually confided to those who do not co-operate harmoniously with the popular branch of the legislature; and the government is constantly proposing measures which the majority of the assembly reject, and refusing its assent to bills which that body has passed."<sup>1</sup>

Turning to counterparts in the Canadian constitution of King, Lords and Commons in Great Britain, he deals first with the governor, or lieutenant-governor, and says: "The fact is that, according to the present system, there is no real representative of the Crown in the province; there is in it literally no power which originates and conducts the executive government. The governor, it is true, is said to represent the sovereign, and the authority of the Crown is, to a certain extent, delegated to him; but he is, in fact, a mere subordinate officer, receiving his orders from the secretary of state, responsible to him for his conduct, and guided by his instructions."<sup>2</sup>

"It has, therefore, been the tendency of the local government to settle everything by reference to the colonial department in Downing Street. Almost every question on which it was possible to

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 32.    <sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 37.

## DURHAM'S RECOMMENDATIONS

avoid, even with great inconvenience, an immediate decision, has been habitually the decision of reference; and this applies, not merely to those questions on which the local executive and legislative bodies happened to differ—wherein the reference might be taken as a kind of appeal—but to questions of a strictly local nature, on which it was next to impossible for the colonial office to have any sufficient information.”<sup>1</sup>

One of Durham's recommendations to the imperial authorities was a revision of the constitution of the legislative councils under the Constitutional Act, so as to make the second body of the proposed united legislature a useful check on the popular House, and so prevent a repetition of those collisions between the councils and the assemblies which had been such a fruitful cause of dangerous irritation. “The present constitution of the legislative councils of these provinces” (*i.e.* under the Act of 1791), he says, “has always appeared to me inconsistent with sound principles, and little calculated to answer the purpose of placing the effective check, which I consider necessary, on the popular branch of the legislature. The analogy which some persons have attempted to draw between the House of Lords and the legislative council seems to me erroneous. The constitution of the House of Lords is consonant with the frame of English society, and, as the creation of a precisely similar body, in such a state

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 45.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of society as that of these colonies, is impossible, it has always appeared to me most unwise to attempt to supply its place by one which has no point of resemblance to it, except that of being a non-elective check on the elective branch of the legislature. The attempt to invest a few persons, distinguished from their fellow-colonists neither by birth nor hereditary property, and often only transiently connected with the country, with such a power, seems only calculated to ensure jealousy and bad feeling in the first instance, and collision at last.<sup>1</sup>

Having noticed the collisions between the executive and the representative body (*ante* p. 56), he points out that "the collision with the executive government necessarily brought on one with the legislative council. The composition of this body . . . must certainly be admitted to have been such as could give it no weight with the people, or with the representative body, on which it was meant to be a check. The majority was always composed of members of the party which conducted the executive government; the clerks of each council were members of the other; and, in fact, the legislative council was practically hardly anything but a veto, in the hands of public functionaries, on all the acts of that popular branch of the legislature in which they were always in a minority. This veto they used without any scruple."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 104.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 37.

## THE ASSEMBLY'S JUST DEMANDS

In the scheme of government initiated by the Constitutional Act, the position and powers of the House of Assembly were of vital consequence to the future well-being of the province. A voice in the selection of persons in whose administration of affairs it could feel confidence, and the control of the public revenues, were powers which were essential to the usefulness of such a representative body. Although the financial disputes were more easily arranged in Upper than in Lower Canada, the assembly was systematically deprived from the outset of any control over the executive government. The argument which Lord Durham presented against this stultification of the assembly was most incisive and convincing, and, coupled with his arraignment of the abuses to which it gave rise, was a complete vindication of the policy and attitude of Mackenzie and the Reform party.

“The powers,” he says, “for which the assembly contended appear to be such as it was perfectly justified in demanding. It is difficult to conceive what could have been their theory of government who imagined, that, in any colony of England, a body invested with the name and character of a representative assembly could be deprived of any of those powers which, in the opinion of Englishmen, are inherent in a popular legislature. It was a vain delusion to imagine that, by mere limitations in the Constitutional Act, or an exclusive system of government, a body, strong in the consciousness

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of wielding the public opinion of the majority, could regard certain portions of the provincial revenues as sacred from its control, could confine itself to the mere business of making laws, and look on as a passive and indifferent spectator, while those laws were carried into effect or evaded, and the whole business of the country was conducted by men in whose intentions or capacity it had not the slightest confidence. Yet such was the limitation placed on the authority of the assembly of Lower Canada;<sup>1</sup> it might refuse or pass laws, vote or withhold supplies, but it could exercise no influence on the nomination of a single servant of the Crown. The executive council, the law-officers, and whatever heads of departments are known to the administrative system of the province, were placed in power without any regard to the wishes of the people or their representatives; nor indeed are there wanting instances in which a mere hostility to the majority of the assembly elevated the most incompetent persons to posts of honour and trust. However decidedly the assembly might condemn the policy of the government, the persons who had advised that policy retained their offices and their power of giving bad advice. If a law was passed after repeated conflicts, it had to be carried into effect by those who had most strenuously opposed

<sup>1</sup> The whole of this commentary on the assembly of Lower Canada applies, as Lord Durham points out at page 64 of his Report, to the Upper Canada assembly as well.



## “THE TRUE PRINCIPLE”

it. The wisdom of adopting the true principle of representative government, and facilitating the management of public affairs by entrusting it to the persons who have the confidence of the representative body, has never been recognized in the government of the North American colonies. All the officers of government were independent of the assembly; and that body, which had nothing to say to their appointment, was left to get on, as it best might, with a set of public functionaries whose paramount feeling may not unfairly be said to have been one of hostility to itself.”<sup>1</sup>

“A body of holders of office thus constituted,” he proceeds to say, “without reference to the people or their representatives, must in fact, from the very nature of colonial government, acquire the entire direction of the affairs of the province. A governor, arriving in a colony in which he almost invariably has had no previous acquaintance with the state of parties, or the character of individuals, is compelled to throw himself almost entirely upon those whom he finds placed in the position of his official advisers. His first acts must necessarily be performed, and his first appointments made, at their suggestion. And as these first acts and appoint-

<sup>1</sup> The comments of Mr. Rattray and Mr. Read on the constitutional helplessness of the House of Assembly, under the practical operation of the Act, are just as pronounced as those of Durham. The same may be said of all other writers on the period. See *The Scot in British North America* (1881), Vol. ii, pp. 462, 463; and *The Rebellion of 1837* (1896), pp. 128, 154.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

ments give a character to his policy, he is generally brought thereby into immediate collision with the other parties in the country, and thrown into more complete dependence upon the official party and its friends. Thus a governor of Lower Canada<sup>1</sup> has almost always been brought into collision with the assembly, which his advisers regard as their enemy. In the course of the contest in which he was thus involved, the provocations which he received from the assembly, and the light in which their conduct was represented by those who alone had any access to him, naturally imbued him with many of their antipathies; his position compelled him to seek the support of some party against the assembly; and his feelings and his necessities thus combined to induce him to bestow his patronage, and to shape his measures to promote the interests of the party on which he was obliged to lean. Thus, every successive year consolidated and enlarged the strength of the ruling party. Fortified by family connection, and the common interest felt by all who held, and all who desired, subordinate offices, that party was thus erected into a solid and permanent power, controlled by no responsibility, subject to no serious change, exercising over the whole government of the province an authority utterly independent of the people and its representatives, and possessing the only means of

<sup>1</sup> The same remarks apply to Upper Canada. See foot-note *supra*, p. 60.

## “IRRESPONSIBLE GOVERNMENT”

influencing either the government at home, or the colonial representative of the Crown.”<sup>1</sup>

“It is difficult to understand how any English statesman could have imagined that representative and irresponsible government could be successfully combined. There seems, indeed, to be an idea that the character of representative institutions ought to be thus modified in colonies; that it is an incident of colonial dependence that the officers of government should be nominated by the Crown, without any reference to the wishes of the community whose interests are entrusted to their keeping. It has never been very clearly explained what are the imperial interests which require this complete nullification of representative government. But, if there be such a necessity, it is quite clear that a representative government in a colony must be a mockery, and a source of confusion. For those who support this system have never yet been able to devise or to exhibit, in the practical working of colonial government, any means for making so complete an abrogation of political influence palatable to the representative body.”<sup>2</sup>

Durham's description of the executive council is no less graphic. “The real advisers,” he says, “of the governor have, in fact, been the executive council, and an institution more singularly calculated for preventing the responsibility of the acts

<sup>1</sup> Lord Durham's *Report* pp. 34, 35.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 35.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of government resting on anybody can hardly be imagined. It is a body of which the constitution somewhat resembles that of the Privy Council; it is bound by a similar oath of secrecy; it discharges in the same manner anomalous judicial functions; and its 'consent and advice' are required in some cases in which the observance of that form has been thought a requisite check on the exercise of particular prerogatives of the Crown. But in other respects it bears a greater resemblance to a cabinet, the governor being in the habit of taking its advice on most of the important questions of his policy. But, as there is no division into departments in the council, there is no individual responsibility, and no individual superintendence. Each member of the council takes an equal part in all the business brought before it. The power of removing members being very rarely exercised, the council is, in fact, for the most part, composed of persons placed in it long ago; and the governor is obliged either to take the advice of persons in whom he has no confidence, or to consult only a portion of the council. The secrecy of the proceedings adds to the irresponsibility of the body; and when the governor takes an important step, it is not known, or not authentically known, whether he has taken the advice of this council or not, what members he has consulted, or by the advice of which of the body he has been finally guided. The responsibility of the executive council has

## THE FAMILY COMPACT

been constantly demanded by the Reformers of Upper Canada, and occasionally by those of the Lower Province. But it is really difficult to conceive how desirable responsibility could be attained, except by altering the working of this cumbrous machine, and placing the business of the various departments of government in the hands of competent public officers.”<sup>1</sup>

In another part of his Report, Lord Durham deals with “the effect which the irresponsibility of the real advisers of the governor had in lodging permanent authority in the hands of a powerful party, linked together, not only by common party interests, but by personal ties.” And this leads naturally to a description of the Family Compact. “But in none of the North American provinces,” he says, “has this exhibited itself for so long a period, or to such an extent, as in Upper Canada, which has long been entirely governed by a party commonly designated through the province as the ‘Family Compact,’ a name not much more appropriate than party designations usually are, inasmuch as there is, in truth, very little of family connection among the persons thus united. For a long time this body of men, receiving at times accessions to its numbers, possessed almost all the highest public offices, by means of which and of its influence in the executive council it wielded all the powers of government; it maintained influence in the legisla-

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 48, 49.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

ture by means of its predominance in the legislative council ; and it disposed of the large number of petty posts which are in the patronage of the government all over the province. Successive governors, as they came in their turn, are said to have either submitted quietly to its influence, or, after a short and unavailing struggle, to have yielded to this well-organized party the real conduct of affairs. The bench, the magistracy, the high offices of the Episcopal Church, and a great part of the legal profession, are filled by the adherents of this party ; by grant or purchase, they have acquired nearly the whole of the waste lands of the province ; they are all powerful in the chartered banks, and, till lately, shared among themselves almost exclusively all offices of trust and profit. The bulk of this party consists, for the most part, of native-born inhabitants of the colony, or of emigrants who settled in it before the last war with the United States ; the principal members of it belong to the Church of England, and the maintenance of the claims of that Church has always been one of its most distinguishing characteristics. A monopoly of power so extensive and so lasting could not fail, in process of time, to excite envy, create dissatisfaction and ultimately provoke attack ; and an opposition consequently grew up, in the assembly, which assailed the ruling party by appealing to popular principles of government, by denouncing the alleged

## RESPONSIBLE GOVERNMENT

jobbing and profusion of the official body, and by instituting inquiries into abuses for the purpose of promoting reform and especially economy.”<sup>1</sup>

The crux of the existing political situation, the radical remedy aimed at, and, as experience has proved, the only effective one, the contrast in this respect with the agitation in Lower Canada, and the manner in which the official party, although in a minority in parliament, despoiled the Reformers of their popular victories in the constituencies, are also clearly indicated. “The struggle, though extending itself over a variety of questions of more or less importance, avowedly and distinctly rested on the demand for responsibility in the executive government.”<sup>2</sup> . . . “It was upon this question of the responsibility of the executive council that the great struggle has, for a long time, been carried on between the official party and the Reformers; for the official party, like all parties long in power, was naturally unwilling to submit itself to any such responsibility as would abridge its tenure, or cramp its exercise, of authority. Reluctant to acknowledge any responsibility to the people of the colony, this party appears to have paid a somewhat refractory and nominal submission to the imperial government—relying, in fact, on securing a virtual independence by this nominal

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 65, 66.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 65.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

submission to the distant authority of the colonial department, or to the powers of a governor over whose policy they were certain, by their facilities of access, to obtain a paramount influence.”<sup>1</sup>

“The Reformers, however, at last discovered that success in the elections insured them very little practical benefit; for the official party, not being removed when it failed to command a majority in the assembly, still continued to wield all the powers of the executive government, to strengthen itself by its patronage, and to influence the policy of the colonial governor and of the colonial department at home. By its secure majority in the legislative council, it could effectually control the legislative powers of the assembly. It could choose its own moment for dissolving hostile assemblies; and could always insure, for those that were favourable to itself, the tenure of their seats for the full term of four years allowed by the law. Thus the Reformers found that their triumphs at elections could not, in any way, facilitate the progress of their views, while the executive government remained constantly in the hands of their opponents. They rightly judged that, if the higher offices and executive council were always held by those who could command a majority in the assembly, the constitution of the legislative council was a matter of very little moment; inasmuch as the advisers of the governor could always take

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 67.



## THE OBJECT DESIRED

care that its composition should be modified so as to suit their own purposes. They concentrated their powers, therefore, for the purpose of obtaining the responsibility of the executive council; and I cannot help contrasting the practical good sense of the English Reformers of Upper Canada with the less prudent course of the French majority in the assembly of Lower Canada, as exhibited in the different demands of constitutional change most earnestly pressed by each. Both, in fact, desired the same object; namely, an extension of popular influence in the government. The assembly of Lower Canada attacked the legislative council—a body of which the constitution was certainly most open to obvious theoretical objections on the part of all the advocates of popular institutions, but, for the same reason, most sure of finding powerful defendants at home. The Reformers of Upper Canada paid little attention to the composition of the legislative council, and directed their exertions to obtaining such an alteration of the executive council as might have been obtained without any derangement of the constitutional balance of power; but they well knew that, if once they obtained possession of the executive council and the higher offices of the province, the legislative council would soon be unable to offer any effectual resistance to their meditated reforms.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 66, 67.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

One other salient feature of the constitution of 1791, which, being fully discussed in a subsequent chapter, calls only for a passing notice, is the series of provisions creating the Clergy Reserves and establishing a State Church in Canada.<sup>1</sup> The lieutenant-governor was empowered to make allotments of land, in the proportion of one lot in seven in the province, for the "support and maintenance of the Protestant clergy," the rents arising therefrom to be applicable to that purpose only. The expression "Protestant Clergy" was at first construed to mean the Anglican clergy solely, but the Church of Scotland having been expressly recognized as a "Protestant" church by the Act of Union of England and Scotland, in 1706, the ministers of that Church, in 1819, were held by the English law-officers of the Crown to be considered as "Protestant clergy," and so entitled to share in the funds. The provisions concerning the Reserves might be varied or repealed by the provincial parliament, but any enactments for that purpose had to be approved by the English parliament before being assented to by the king. Considering the political influences of the time, and the manner in which they were exercised, this reservation constituted a strong protection and safeguard for the church establishment.

The effect of these Church endowments upon the religious denominations themselves, upon the

<sup>1</sup> These are contained in sections 36 to 42, inclusive, of the Act.

## THE CLERGY RESERVES

legislature, and throughout the whole country, was most pernicious. In the opinion of many persons, as remarked by Lord Durham in his Report, they were one of the chief causes of the rebellion. Durham speaks of them as "an abiding and unabating cause of discontent;" and concludes that "the result of any determination on the part of the English government or legislature to give one sect a predominance and superiority would be, it might be feared, not to secure the favoured sect, but to endanger the loss of the colony, and, in vindicating the exclusive pretensions of the English Church, to hazard one of the fairest possessions of the British Crown."<sup>1</sup>

It is unnecessary to consider any other provisions of the Constitutional Act, because they were overshadowed in importance by those to which reference has already been made. The constitutional question, as it may well be called, was the vital question during the period covered by the Act, and the gravity of the constitutional question, in so far as it affected popular parliamentary rule in the province, may at once be seen by the insignificant place occupied by the legislative assembly in the order and authority of government. Briefly summarized, the order was this: (1) A colonial secretary in England who supervised the provincial government; (2) a lieutenant-governor in the province who acted under an imperial commission and in-

<sup>1</sup> Report, pp. 76, 77.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

structions; (3) an executive council appointed by the lieutenant-governor and responsible to him alone; (4) a legislative council composed of members appointed for life by the lieutenant-governor; and (5) a legislative assembly elected by the people on a limited franchise, and exercising little control over the finances and government of the province.

This was the constitution under which the people of Upper Canada were living when Mackenzie cast in his lot with them in the year 1820. Its history affords a fair illustration of the dictum of the old Greek philosopher, that "a good constitution in itself is not more necessary than men with proper sympathies and understandings to administer it." Admirable as it appeared in the broad pages of the statute-book, no man of Mackenzie's intelligence and discernment could fail to perceive what an ill-constructed and mischievous machine it was in its practical operation. He declared war against it, and against the men who were upholding and defending it for their own selfish ends—at first with moderation, which developed into intense hostility, until at last, with his life in his hands and at the sacrifice of everything which life holds dear, he was constrained to strike the blow which compassed its destruction.

It was a conflict of less than fourteen years, because Mackenzie's attitude was not publicly defined until the appearance of the first number of the

## EVILS OF EXISTING SYSTEM

*Colonial Advocate* in the early summer of 1824. At that time the evils of the system of government which had grown up under the new constitution were fully developed. Their name was legion. Frequent collisions between the executive and the legislative assembly, and between the assembly and the legislative council;<sup>1</sup> abuses of the provincial grants for local public works; a weak and unpopular administration of the royal prerogative; interference of the colonial department in the purely local affairs of the province;<sup>2</sup> the irresponsibility of the executive council, and the absence of any division of the public service into regular ministerial departments; the Clergy Reserves and the establishment of recatories, and the fierce bitterness and strife to which

<sup>1</sup> During the eight years preceding 1837, no fewer than three hundred and twenty-five bills passed by the legislative assembly were rejected by the legislative council—an average of more than forty for each session. Making every allowance for the proper rejection of some of them, the fact is cogent evidence of the direct and perpetual conflict that prevailed between the two deliberative branches of the legislature. It shows, as has been said, that “the Upper House had no weight with the people, and the Lower House no weight with the Crown.”

<sup>2</sup> In 1839, after Lord Durham had presented his Report to the home government, Lord Glenelg, the colonial minister, expressed the opinion that “parliamentary legislation, on any subject of exclusively internal concern to any British colony possessing a representative assembly, is, as a general rule, unconstitutional. It is a right of which the exercise is reserved for extreme cases, in which necessity at once creates and justifies the exception.” (Parliamentary Papers, 1839, No. 118, p. 7.) This was really the first official acknowledgment of the right of colonial self-government, and the cause of the change of opinion is not hard to determine.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

these gave rise; the want, in a large part of the province, of roads, post-offices, mills, schools and churches; the corrupt and wasteful appropriation of the Crown lands;<sup>1</sup> the lack of proper arrangements for the reception and disposition of immigrants; the Family Compact—another name for the concentration of political power and patronage in

<sup>1</sup> The method of granting public lands was one of the great evils of the time. Under Governor Simcoe there were free grants of wild lands to actual settlers, which was a good policy; but, under his successors, the public lands were used for enriching the favourites of the government. Each member of the executive council was given five thousand acres, and each of his children twelve hundred acres. Favoured members of the legislative council and their children were dealt with in the same liberal fashion; other influential persons received twelve hundred acres each. For the first thirty-five years under the Constitutional Act, these grants were in the discretion of the governor-in-council, which was shamefully abused. Thousands of acres, whole townships, in fact, in some cases, were owned or controlled by individual grantees. Grants were not unfrequently made to persons in the service of the officials, and afterwards transferred to the officials themselves or their children. One case on record is that of a three days' old child of a member of the legislative council, to whom a grant of a reserve, applied for, was actually made! Lord Durham gives the following statement of the land grants: "In Upper Canada, 3,200,000 acres have been granted to 'U. E. Loyalists,' being refugees from the United States who settled in the province before 1787, and their children; 730,000 acres to militia men; 45,000 acres to discharged soldiers and sailors; 255,000 acres to magistrates and barristers; 136,000 acres to executive councillors and their families; 36,900 acres to clergymen, as private property; 264,000 acres to persons contracting to make surveys; 92,526 acres to officers of the army and navy; 500,000 acres for the endowment of schools; 48,520 acres to Colonel Talbot; 12,000 acres to the heirs of General Brock; and 12,000 acres to Doctor Mountain, a former Bishop of Quebec; making altogether, with the Clergy Reserves, nearly half of all the surveyed land in the province." *Durham's Report*, p. 94.

## THE BANE AND THE ANTIDOTE

the hands of a few persons, and the tyranny, maladministration and manifold evils which it produced; the appointment of military men as lieutenant-governors; the exorbitant salaries, for perfunctory services, of certain public officials; the union of judicial and legislative functions in the same persons; the appointment of judges and other public officials during the pleasure of the executive and not during good behaviour;—these and an incalculable number of minor grievances, of which they were the direct and inevitable cause, constantly provoked the just resentment and challenged the attacks of the Reformers under Mackenzie and the other Reform leaders of the time. It was of these that Lord Durham wrote in his Report, in which both the bane and the antidote of the existing system are clearly indicated: “Such are the lamentable results of the political and social evils which have so long agitated the Canadas; and such is their condition that, at the present moment, we are called on to take immediate precautions against dangers so alarming as those of rebellion, foreign invasion and utter exhaustion and depopulation. When I look on the various and deep-seated causes of mischief which the past inquiry has pointed out as existing in every institution, in the constitutions, and in the very composition of society throughout a great part of these provinces, I almost shrink from the apparent presumption of grappling with these gigantic diffi-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

culties. Nor shall I attempt to do so in detail. I rely on the efficacy of reform in the constitutional system by which these colonies are governed, for the removal of every abuse in their administration, which defective institutions have engendered. If a system can be devised which shall lay, in these countries, the foundation of an efficient and popular government, ensure harmony in place of collision between the various powers of the State, and bring the influence of a vigorous public opinion to bear on every detail of public affairs, we may rely on sufficient remedies being found for the present vices of the administrative system. . . .

“We are not now to consider the policy of establishing representative government in the North American colonies. That has been irrevocably done; and the experiment of depriving the people of their present constitutional power is not to be thought of. To conduct their government harmoniously, in accordance with its established principles, is now the business of its rulers, and I know not how it is possible to secure that harmony in any other way than by administering the government on those principles which have been found perfectly efficacious in Great Britain. I would not impair a single prerogative of the Crown; on the contrary, I believe that the interests of the people of these colonies require the protection of prerogatives which have not hitherto been exercised. But the Crown must, on the other



## MACKENZIE'S JUSTIFICATION

hand, submit to the necessary consequences of representative institutions, and if it has to carry on the government in union with a representative body, it must consent to carry it on by means of those in whom that representative body has confidence.”<sup>1</sup>

After all, the strongest justification of Mackenzie and the Reformers of his time, apart from the facts and transactions themselves, is this exhaustive statement on the affairs of British North America, presented to the home government by Lord Durham at the close of his brief administration in Canada. The Report is beyond praise. It is one of the classics of British political literature, and a splendid addition to the many famous State papers in the archives of the nation. The masterly analysis of the whole situation, the grasp of conditions, the exposition of principles and the practical wisdom embodied in the Report, and its far-reaching influence on British colonial government, are great and enviable monuments to its illustrious author. Reading between the lines one can easily see the painful impression produced on his mind by his investigation of affairs in Canada at that time, yet there is, in the language and tone of the whole document, a restraint of feeling and reserve of censure, and a fairness and moderation of statement and conclusion, which are admirable in the extreme. A more finished, instructive and

<sup>1</sup> *Report*, pp. 118, 119.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

thoroughly judicial deliverance, on the many and difficult questions of a great controversy, has never been made by any British statesman. "The Report," writes one who has done justice to the character and work of Durham and the memorable part which he played in the annals of the Empire, "was a noble and far-sighted plea for autonomy and equality. Durham, to borrow his own words, sought to turn Canada from a 'barren and injurious sovereignty' into 'one of the brightest ornaments in the young Queen's Crown.' The Durham Report brought about, not merely the union of two distracted provinces, but gave the people of Canada self-government, without imperilling a single prerogative of the throne. It marked a new era in the relation of England to her colonies; for the broad and philosophic principles upon which it was based were capable, as after years have shown, of application to similar problems of government in almost every quarter of the globe. Its outcome was not only the redress of political grievances, or even the creation of new and splendid opportunities for adventurous but loyal sons of England under other skies; it was all this, but it was more. It was the recognition, based on the knowledge, inspired by sympathy, and made luminous by moral vision, that the authority of the mother country rested on other than material ascendancy. Lord Durham appealed to the sentiments and ideals of men, and laid,

## ANALOGY OF GRIEVANCE REPORT

four-square to all the winds that blow, the foundations, not only of that great Dominion, which he did not live to see, but also of that passionate loyalty—a veritable union of hearts—which served England well in recent years of warfare and of peril.”<sup>1</sup> “Canada will one day do justice to my memory,” were the dying words of this famous constitutional reformer. The day has long since come, and the radiance of its gratitude will never be dimmed.

For the conclusions and findings of Lord Durham in this celebrated Report, Mackenzie is fairly entitled to a large share of credit. Long before Durham’s State paper was laid before the British parliament, Mackenzie had prepared the “Seventh Report on Grievances” for the information of the imperial authorities. It no doubt contained considerable matter which was irrelevant from an imperial standpoint, although not so considered by the author, who, in his narrative based on the knowledge and experience of thousands of persons on the spot, was naturally anxious to recite every material fact and circumstance, however insignificant. Durham, as we know, made independent inquiries for the information on which his Report was formulated, but he certainly profited largely from Mackenzie’s labours. A perusal and comparison of the two documents shows that, with

<sup>1</sup> Stuart J. Reid, *Life and Letters of Lord Durham* (1906), pp. 337, 338.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

some few exceptions, the statements of fact as to political and economic conditions in the province, and the remedies and recommendations proposed for their amelioration and improvement, are substantially the same. The control of the Crown lands, which had been one of the most fruitful sources of official favouritism and corruption, was perhaps the most important question upon which the two men differed, Mackenzie as a home ruler favouring local, and Durham imperial, control; but, so far as the constitutional changes were concerned, they were both of one mind as to the true and imperative remedy. The fact that the two reports support and corroborate each other gives weight and value to both of them as historical and constitutional documents, and fully justifies, if any justification were necessary, the position of Mackenzie and the Reform party with respect to the whole bill of indictment against the existing system.

One of the arguments which the Reformers had to meet in their controversies with the official party, during this period, was derived from the Constitutional Act itself. The Act, it was said, was silent on the question of executive responsibility. The argument would have been just as cogent with respect to the Union Act, 1840,<sup>1</sup> which was based on Lord Durham's Report, or to the British North America Act, 1867,<sup>2</sup> because there is no provision

<sup>1</sup> 3-4 Vict., c. 35.

<sup>2</sup> 30-31 Vict., c. 3.

## EXECUTIVE RESPONSIBILITY

on the subject in either of those statutes. Nor was any such provision necessary, so far as the Constitutional Act was concerned. The question was one in regard to which, as Lord John Russell said, the Act was "necessarily silent." This point did not escape the attention of Lord Durham, who shows very clearly that a change of policy in the provincial government might be effected by a single despatch to the governor-general containing instructions, coupled with an assurance on His Excellency's part, that the government of the province "should henceforth be carried on in conformity with the views of the majority in the assembly." Durham's argument on the question was followed up by a distinct recommendation that "the responsibility to the united legislature of all officers of the government, except the governor and his secretary, should be secured by every means known to the British constitution. The governor, as the representative of the Crown, should be instructed that he must carry on his government by heads of departments, in whom the united legislature shall repose confidence; and that he must look for no support from home in any contest with the legislature, except on points involving strictly imperial interests."<sup>1</sup> The "assurance" and "instructions," referred to by Lord Durham, were subsequently conveyed by Lord John Russell in despatches dated September 7th and October 14th,

<sup>1</sup> *Report*, p. 139.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

1839, to Lord Sydenham, the first governor-general of the united province.<sup>1</sup>

The authorship of Lord Durham's Report, which has given rise to some controversy, appears to be satisfactorily settled by his biographer. "It would be idle," Mr. Stuart J. Reid says, "to ignore the oft-repeated statement that Durham did not write the Report which bears his name. It rests on mere hearsay evidence at best, and is untrue, and therefore unjust." He proceeds to show that the story originated with Lord Brougham, Durham's most vindictive enemy, whose testimony is worthless. Brougham attributed the work to Gibbon Wakefield and Charles Buller, both of whom accompanied Durham to Canada, Buller as Durham's secretary. "Buller, in process of time, obtained the credit of the whole production. The late Henry Reeves was reponsible for this, perhaps more than any one else, by a foot-note which he inserted in the *Greville Memoirs*. He gives no authority whatever for the statement, and it may, therefore, be dismissed as gossip, which, after floating about the world for a generation or more uncontradicted, was accepted as historical fact. Gibbon Wakefield, so far as is known, never claimed the authorship of the Report. Charles Buller, so far from doing so, actually denounced as a 'groundless assertion' the view that Lord Durham did not write it. This declaration was made in the pages of the *Edinburgh*

<sup>1</sup> See *Journals of Legislative Assembly*, 1841, pp. 390-6.

## AUTHORSHIP OF DURHAM'S REPORT

*Review*, in an article on Canadian affairs, which was unsigned. It is now possible to state with authority, that that article was actually written by Charles Buller, and, therefore, though even in the *Dictionary of National Biography* he is credited with the authorship of the Report, the statement, on his own showing, falls to the ground. It may be further added that, in the unprinted *Sketch of Lord Durham's Mission to Canada*, Buller speaks at some length of the Report, expresses admiration of its contents, and, by no single phrase or even word, hints that he was responsible for it. Unless the present writer is greatly mistaken, such a claim was never made in Buller's lifetime; if it had been, he would instantly have repudiated it. The truth is, the Report, so far as the facts which it embodied were concerned, was necessarily to a large extent the work of Durham's assistants. Buller, Wakefield, Turton and lesser men, all had a hand in gathering the materials for it. Durham himself admitted as much in one of his last speeches in the House of Lords, where he paid a generous tribute to the men who, under his directions, had accumulated the evidence which he turned to such memorable account in this great State paper."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Stuart J. Reid, *Life and Letters of Lord Durham* (1906), Vol. ii. pp. 338, 340, 341.





## CHAPTER IV

### "THE COLONIAL ADVOCATE"

WHEN Mackenzie abandoned trade for politics, he was doing well, and had done well ever since he commenced business. A perseverance in the career on which he had entered four years before would have led to wealth. In the first number of the *Colonial Advocate*, published at Queens-  
ton on May 18th, 1824, he describes himself as being "as independent as editors can well be." The step which he had now taken was one of the most important in his whole career, since it involved everything that followed. Why did he take it? Fortunately the answer can be given in his own words. Writing from the United States to a friend, after the rebellion, he says:—

"When you and your father knew me first, in 1820, I was a young man connected with trade in York and Dundas. The prudent, judicious, and very profitable manner in which I conducted, alone, the partnership concerns of a large trading establishment at the head of Lake Ontario, surely afforded satisfactory evidence that I had no occasion to leave my private pursuits for the stormy sea of politics with a view to the improvement of my pecuniary prospects. When I did so, and assumed, as the westernmost journalist in the British domin-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

ions on the continent of America, the office of a public censor, I had no personal enemies, but was on friendly terms with many of the men whom since then I have steadily opposed. I never interfered in the public concerns of the colony in the most remote degree, until the day on which I issued twelve hundred copies of a newspaper without having asked or received a single subscriber. In that number I stated my sentiments, and the objects I had in view, fully and frankly. I had long seen the country in the hands of a few shrewd, crafty, covetous men, under whose management one of the most lovely and desirable sections of America remained a comparative desert. The most obvious public improvements were stayed; dissension was created among classes; citizens were banished and imprisoned in defiance of all law; the people had been long forbidden, under severe pains and penalties, from meeting anywhere to petition for justice; large estates were wrested from their owners in utter contempt of even the forms of the courts; the Church of England, the adherents of which were few, monopolized as much of the lands of the colony as all the religious houses and dignitaries of the Roman Catholic Church had had the control of in Scotland at the era of the Reformation; other sects were treated with contempt and scarcely tolerated; a sordid band of land-jobbers grasped the soil as their patrimony, and, with a few leading officials who divided the public revenue

## UPPER CANADA IN 1820

among themselves, formed 'the Family Compact,' and were the avowed enemies of common schools, of civil and religious liberty, of all legislative or other checks to their own will. Other men had opposed, and been converted, by them. At nine-and-twenty I might have united with them, but chose rather to join the oppressed, nor have I ever regretted that choice, or wavered from the object of my early pursuit. So far as I or any other professed Reformer was concerned in inviting citizens of this union to interfere in Canadian affairs, there was culpable error. So far as any of us, at any time, may have supposed that the cause of freedom would be advanced by adding the Canadas to this Confederation, we were under the merest delusion."

This picture of Upper Canada in 1820 may be highly coloured; but in the general outlines, repulsive as they are, there is too much truth. The limner lived to see a change of system in Canada; and after he had had a more than theoretical experience of democracy in the United States—having resided there for several years—he warns Canadians not to be misled by the delusion that the cause of liberty would be advanced by uniting these provinces to the American republic. When we come to see at what price he purchased the experience which entitled him to express such an opinion, the value of this admonition cannot fail to be enhanced in the estimation of all unprejudiced judges.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

In some respects the condition of the province in 1820 was worse than Mackenzie described it. He dealt only with its political condition; but the absence of demand for employment made wretched those who depended solely upon their labour for subsistence. When Lord Hamilton suggested, in the House of Commons in 1820, that an emigration to the North American colonies would be the most effectual means of relieving distress at home, the Chancellor of the Exchequer replied that the emigrants who had recently gone there, "so far from finding increased means of subsistence, had experienced a want of employment fully equal to that which existed in the most distressed manufacturing districts of this country. The North American provinces of Great Britain had been so overloaded with emigrants that the government of Canada had made the strongest remonstrances to the government of this country on the subject."

The condition of things otherwise was very unsatisfactory. Protest against existing abuses seemed impossible; public meetings, the actors in which had been deputed to represent any portion of the electors, were illegal; and everything in the shape of a convention was held to be seditious. A provincial statute known as the Alien Act, passed in 1804, made it possible to arrest any person, who had not been an inhabitant of the province for six months and who had not taken the oath of allegiance, on the mere suspicion that he was "about

## THE ALIEN ACT, 1804

to endeavour to alienate the minds of His Majesty's subjects from his person or government, or in any wise with a seditious intent to disturb the tranquillity thereof." If such a person failed to prove his innocence, he must, on notification, quit the province within a named time, failing which he might be formally tried. On trial, if adjudged guilty, he was to be ordered to quit the province, and if he did not do so, he was deemed guilty of a felony and to suffer death as a felon without benefit of clergy.

Robert Gourlay, an educated Scotsman, son of a gentleman of considerable fortune, and who was reputed to be the best informed man in the kingdom respecting the poor of Great Britain, came to Canada in 1817, where he and his wife owned land in the county of Oxford. Having studied the existing conditions in Upper Canada, he began to discuss them by writings and speeches in a manner that had not before been heard in the province. In his voluminous writings, he was careful to confine himself to statements of fact and to avoid exaggeration. He aroused public indignation to a high degree against the ruling party. The Compact decided on his destruction, and a criminal prosecution for libel followed. He was tried at Kingston after arrest, but found not guilty. He was arrested again on a similar charge, and tried and acquitted at Brockville. The prisoner conducted his own defence. The alleged libel occurred in two paragraphs of a petition

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

to the Prince Regent, drafted by Gourlay, and approved of, printed and published by sixteen residents of the Niagara district, six of whom were magistrates.

But matters were not to rest here. Perjured evidence was procured against him, and as members of the legislative council were permitted to set the law in motion under the Alien Act, William Dickson and William Claus, magistrates and members of the council, brought him to trial before themselves under the Act, and adjudged that he should leave the province within ten days. This order he refused to obey. "I resolved," he says, "to endure any hardship rather than to submit voluntarily." Thirteen days after, on January 4th, 1819, the same magistrates issued an order for commitment, under which he was arrested and confined in Niagara gaol until he could be tried at the next sittings of the court of general gaol delivery. Meantime, being brought before Chief Justice Powell on a writ of *habeas corpus*, affidavits of respectable persons were read declaring him to be a natural-born British subject, domiciled for the previous nine months at Queenston in Upper Canada, and affirming that he was respected and esteemed and that he had taken the oath of allegiance. But he was remanded to gaol to await trial.

"After two months confinement," he wrote, "in one of the cells of the gaol, my health began to suffer, and, on complaint of this, the liberty of

## THE CASE OF ROBERT GOURLAY

walking through the passages and sitting at the door was granted. This liberty prevented my getting worse the four succeeding months, although I never enjoyed a day's health but by the power of medicine. At the end of this period, I was again locked up in the cell, cut off from all conversation with my friends but through a hole in the door, while the jailor or under-sheriff watched what was said, and for some time both my attorney and magistrates of my acquaintance were denied admission to me. The Quarter Sessions were held soon after this severe and unconstitutional treatment commenced, and on these occasions it was the custom and duty of the grand jury to perambulate the gaol, and see that all was right with the prisoners. I prepared a memorial for their consideration, but on this occasion was not visited. I complained to a magistrate through the door, who promised to mention my case to the chairman of the Sessions, but the chairman of the Sessions happened to be the brother of one of those who had signed my commitment, and the court broke up without my obtaining the smallest relief. Exasperation of mind, now joined to the heat of the weather, which was excessive, rapidly wasted my health and impaired my faculties. I felt my memory sensibly affected, and could not connect my ideas through any length of reasoning but by writing, which many days I was wholly unfitted for by the violence of continual headache." The jury was irregularly drawn from "a line of nearly

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

twenty miles, along which it was well known that there was the greatest number of people prejudiced and influenced against me.”<sup>1</sup>

After more than seven months confinement, Chief Justice Powell, on August 20th, 1819, proceeded with the trial, John Beverley Robinson acting as prosecuting attorney. No attempt was made to convict Gourlay of sedition; the only charge that was pressed against him was his refusal to leave the province. His condition, when brought into court, was that of a broken-down man bereft of reason, and though he had prepared a written defence, which he had in his pocket, he could not remember what he had done with it. He had obtained the opinion of several eminent English counsel that his imprisonment was wholly unjustifiable, and Sir Arthur Peggott was convinced that he should have been discharged under the writ of *habeas corpus*. He was found guilty—guilty of not having left the province. On being asked if he had anything to say why the sentence of the court should not be passed on him, he burst into a “loud, strident peal of unmeaning, maniacal laughter.” The sentence of the court was that he must leave the province within twenty-four hours, and he was reminded of the risk he would run in disobeying, or in returning later to Upper Canada; that is to suffer death as a felon, without benefit of clergy. That day he crossed the Niagara River—an

<sup>1</sup> Gourlay's *Statistical Account of Upper Canada*. Gen. Int. xiii.



## GOURLAY BANISHED

exile. "I thanked God," he wrote several years afterwards, "as I set my first foot on the American shore, that I trod on a land of freedom." Such were the methods adopted by the ruling faction in 1819 to put down public discussion.

The object of a convention which was held at York, in 1818, was to arrange for sending commissioners to England to bring before the imperial authorities the condition of the province, with a view to its amelioration. Colonel Beardley of Hamilton, the chairman, was tried by court-martial and deprived of his commission. Among the delegates, there were many who had shown their attachment to their sovereign during the War of 1812. The lands to which they were entitled, as bounty, were withheld from them on account of their presence at that assemblage. A very difficult and irritating question also arose of the state of the naturalization laws as they affected persons of British birth who had remained in the United States till after 1783, and then came to settle in the province. Of the post-office revenue, no account was given; and, in return for high rates of postage, the service was very indifferently performed.

With what opinions did the future leader of an insurrection, which it cost many millions of dollars to quell, set out? Was he a fierce Democrat, who had resolved, with malice prepense, to do all in his power to overthrow those monarchical institutions which had suffered gross abuse at the hands

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of those to whom their working had been confided? No prospectus having gone forth as an *avant courier* of the *Colonial Advocate*, the first number of the journal, which was in octavo form, was devoted chiefly to an exposition of the principles of the editor. The range of topics embraced was wide, and the tone of discussion, free from the bitterness that marked his later writing, was frank. A Calvinist in religion, proclaiming his belief in the Westminster Confession of Faith, and a Liberal in politics, yet was Mackenzie, at that time, no advocate of the voluntary principle. On the contrary, he lauded the British government for making a landed endowment of the Protestant clergy in the provinces, and was shocked at the report that, in 1812, voluntaryism had robbed three millions of people of all means of religious ordinances. "In no part of the constitution of the Canadas," he said, "is the wisdom of the British legislature more apparent than in its setting apart a portion of the country, while yet it remained a wilderness, for the support of religion." Mackenzie compared the setting apart of one-seventh of the public lands for religious purposes to a like dedication in the time of the Christians. But he objected that the revenues were monopolized by one Church, to which only a fraction of the population belonged. The envy of the non-recipient denominations made the favoured Church of England unpopular. Though this distribution of the revenues was manifestly in accordance

## THE ADVOCATE'S SALUTATORY

with the law creating the Reserves, the alteration of that law, if it should not meet the wishes of the people, had been contemplated and provided for by its framers. By this argument Mackenzie was easily brought to the conclusion "that Catholic and Protestant, Episcopalian and Presbyterian, Methodist and Baptist, Quaker and Tunker, deserve to share alike in the income of these lands;" and he expressed a hope that a law would be enacted "by which the ministers of every body of professing Christians, being British subjects, shall receive equal benefits from these Clergy Reserves." But this was not to be; for agitation on the question was to be directed to the abrogation, not the equal division, of these reservations.

On this question, the conservative character of Mackenzie's opinions was found to be out of harmony with the general sentiment, as it gradually unfolded itself, and his own opinions changed. As the subject was more discussed, he saw reason to change them. On another question—that of establishing a provincial university—he contended for a principle, the adoption of which would have prevented a great deal of subsequent difficulty. Cordially seconding the proposal of Dr. Strachan to establish such an institution, he predicted that it would attract but few students and not answer the purpose for which it was required "if tied down by tests and oaths to support particular dogmas." This warning was unheeded, and, for the reasons he had

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

given, the university had to be turned upside down a quarter of a century afterwards.

The executive government, the legislative council, the bench, the bar, the Church, all came in for a share of attention. Lieutenant-Governor Sir Peregrine Maitland, a son-in-law of the then governor-general of Canada, the fourth Duke of Richmond, was disadvantageously compared to De Witt Clinton, of the state of New York. The members of the executive, apparently for no sound reason, were described as "foreigners." The legislative council, a majority of whose members held offices under the Crown, and were even pluralists in a small way, were represented as being "always selected from the tools of servile power." The dependent position of the judges, being removable at the pleasure of the executive, was lamented. As for the Church which claimed to be the established religion of the country, its ministers were declared to be not of that class who endure persecution for conscience' sake. The bar was admitted to have four righteous members, and might, therefore, be considered to be in a hopeful condition.

In so many words, the young journalist volunteered a disclaimer, by way of anticipation, of being a Radical Reformer. He had joined no Spafield mobs. He had never benefited by the harangues of Hunt, Cobbett, or Watson. He was not even chargeable with being a follower of Gourlay, who had already rendered himself odious to the ruling

## HIS BANISHMENT SUGGESTED

faction. With none of these sins was Mackenzie chargeable. And though he was a warm Reformer, he "never wished to see British America an appendage of the American union." American liberty was good, but British liberty was better. From the Americans we might learn something of the art of agriculture; but of government nothing. Yet our own system of cross-purposes required reformation. The proposed Union Bill of 1818 had been rightly rejected, and the only desirable union was one of all the British American colonies. The law of primogeniture was condemned.

Such were the views promulgated by the young journalist at the outset of his career. Yet, moderate and even conservative as they were on many points, an organ of the official party suggested that he should be banished from the province, and the whole edition seized. We look upon them now as being, for the most part, moderate and rational. The views which he expressed in reference to a provincial university, before it had been brought into existence, afterwards came in the shape of a reform, the fruit of a long and bitter controversy. Members of the legislature no longer hold subordinate offices, much less are they pluralists. The judges hold their offices for life, and are not removable at the pleasure of the executive. The executive council can only be composed of such men as can obtain the favour of a legislative majority. The Church of England, having no exclusive privileges and making no pre-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

tensions to dominancy, no longer excites jealousy, envy, or hatred. All the provinces of British America have been united under one government. The right of primogeniture has been abolished, and intestate estates are equally distributed among the children. The mode of administering the government has been so revolutionized as to be equivalent to a complete change of system. The game of cross-purposes, of which Mackenzie complained, is no longer played between two branches of the legislature, or between the popular branch and the executive.

Something new under the sun had appeared in the newspaper world of Upper Canada. To official gazettes containing a little news, and semi-official sheets, which had the intense admiration of the ruling oligarchy, little York had previously been accustomed. To newspaper criticism, the executive had not been inured; and it was determined that the audacity of the new journal should be rebuked. In spite of all his protestations, Mackenzie was called upon to defend himself against an imputation of disloyalty; and, judging from his reply, he appears to have felt this as one of the most galling, and at the same time one of the most untrue, accusations that could have been made against him. A Mackenzie disloyal! In the annals of the whole clan no record of so unnatural a monster could be found. On June 10th, 1824, Mackenzie replied at great length. A part of this reply has already been given in the way

## ANSWERS DISLOYALTY CHARGE

of family history; and the more material parts of the remainder must not be omitted.

“Had Mr. Fothergill not been pleased to accuse me in plain terms of democracy, disloyalty, and foul play, I should not have devoted so much of this number to party argument. It is necessary for me, however, when my good name is so unexpectedly and rudely assailed, in the first place, to deny, in plain and positive terms, such a charge; it will then accord with my duty, as well as with my inclination, to inquire how far he or any man is entitled, from any observations of mine, to advance such statements as appear in the official papers of the 27th ult. and 3rd instant.

“I consider it the bounden duty of every man who conducts a public newspaper, to endeavour to so regulate his own conduct in private life that the observations he may publicly make on the words and actions of others, may not lose their weight and influence on being contrasted with his own behaviour, whether as the head of a family or as an individual member of society. Were I a native of the village in which I now write, or of the district in which it is situated, the whole of my past life could be fairly referred to as a refutation, or as a corroboration, of what he has urged against me; but as that is not the case, this being only the fifth year of my residence in Canada, I must refer to that residence, and to such other circumstances as I may consider best calculated to do away with

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

the injurious impression that will be raised in the minds of those who do not know me, and who may, therefore, be unjustly biased by his erroneous statements. I will, in the first instance, refer to every page of the four numbers of the *Advocate* now before the public; I may ask every impartial reader, nay, I may even ask Mr. Robinson<sup>1</sup> himself (that is, if he has any judgment in such matters), whether they do not, in every line, speak the language of a free and independent British subject? I may ask whether I have not endeavoured, by every just means, to discourage the unprofitable, unsocial system of the local governments, so detrimental to British and colonial interests, and which has been productive of so much misery to these colonies? Whether I have not endeavoured to inculcate in all my readers that god-like maxim of the illustrious British patriot, Charles James Fox, that ‘that government alone is strong that has the hearts of the people.’? It is true, my loyalty has not descended so low as to degenerate into a base, fawning, cringing servility. I may honour my sovereign, surely, and remember the ruler of my people with the respect that is due unto his name and rank, without allowing my deportment to be equally respectful and humble to His Majesty’s butcher, or his baker, his barber, or his tailor! . . .

“It may be proper that I should for this once

<sup>1</sup> Then attorney-general.



## COMPLAINS OF SLANDER

add a few other reasons why disloyalty can never enter my breast; even the name I bear has in all ages proved talismanic, an insurmountable barrier. There are many persons in this very colony who have known me from infancy, so that what I may say there or here can easily be proved or disproved if it should ever become of consequence enough to deserve investigation. If Mr. Fothergill can find that any one who bears the name which, from both parents, I inherit, if he can find only one Mackenzie, and they are a very extensive clan, whether a relation of mine or otherwise, whether of patrician, or (as he terms me) of plebeian birth, who has ever deserted or proved disloyal to his sovereign in the hour of danger, even I will allow that he had the shadow of a reason for his false and slanderous imputations; but if in this research he fails, I hope, for the sake of truth and justice, for the honour of the Canadian press, for the sake of the respectability of that official journal of which he has the management, if not for mine which never wronged him, that he will instantly retract a charge, which, to say the least of it, is as foolish and groundless as the observations he has connected with it are vain and futile. Only think of the consequences which might result from owing allegiance to a foreign government; think that in a few short weeks, or it may be years, one might be called on, upon the sanctity of an oath, to wage war against all that from childhood upwards he had held most dear; to

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

go forth in battle array against the heritage of his ancestors, his kindred, his friends, and his acquaintances; to become instrumental in the subjugation, by fire and sword, to foreigners, of the fields, the cities, the mausoleums of his forefathers—aye, perhaps in the heat of battle, it might be his lot to plunge the deadly blade into the breast of a father, or a brother, or an only child. Surely this picture is not overcharged. In our days it stands on record as having been verified.”

There is no reason, not even in the subsequent history of Mackenzie, to doubt the sincerity with which these protestations were made. Years after, in a letter to Lord Dalhousie, governor-in-chief, he went so far as to suggest the possible return to their allegiance to England of the United States, if it were once understood that the full rights of British subjects were to be conferred upon the colonies. And he constantly raised a warning voice to show the danger of a persistent refusal to give to colonists the full enjoyment of those rights. His nature had evidently to undergo a great change before he could become a leader of insurrection.

Mr. Fothergill does not appear to have shown any disposition to prolong the personal contest he had provoked; and he afterwards in the legislature became an advocate of the man he had at first made a personal antagonist. In December, 1826, we find him moving in the assembly that a small sum be paid to Mackenzie for the reports of the debates he

## NO GOVERNMENT PATRONAGE

had published. This, he said, would help to draw attention in the proper quarter to our country. It was plain that newspapers which assumed anything like independence in their principles or feelings were, in Upper Canada, totally excluded from benefiting by any advertising over which the government had control. He thought the newspapers furnished, and the bills, resolutions, etc., reported by the editor of the *Advocate*, were fully as useful to the country, and as deserving of payment from the funds of the people, as were the proclamations for which the *Kingston Chronicle* received £45 the year before from the casual revenues of the Crown.

The motion for granting Mackenzie £37 16s. was carried; but the lieutenant-governor struck the item out of the contingencies, and it was not paid. Mr. Fothergill, having had experience of newspaper publishing, was no indifferent judge of the difficulties he described. The advance postage payment by the publishers on every weekly paper, for the yearly output, must have been next to a prohibition of newspapers; and we may be sure that they were regarded with no friendly eye by the government. While postage was exacted on Canadian newspapers in advance of their transmission, United States papers were allowed to come into the province without being prepaid, an anomaly characterized by Mackenzie as a premium upon democratic principles, and a not in-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

effectual method of revolutionizing opinion in the Canadas.

A union of all the British American colonies had few earlier advocates than Mackenzie. In a letter to the Right Hon. George Canning, dated June 10th, 1824, he writes:—

. . . “A union of all the colonies, with a government suitably poised and modelled so as to have under its eye the resources of our whole territory, and having the means in its power to administer impartial justice in all its bounds, to no one part at the expense of another, would require few boons from Britain, and would advance her interests much more in a few years than the bare right of possession of a barren, uncultivated wilderness of lake and forest, with some three or four inhabitants to the square mile, can do in centuries. A colonial marine can only be created by a foreign trade aided by free and beneficial institutions; these, indeed, would create it as if by the wand of an enchanter. If that marine is not brought into being; if that trade, foreign and domestic, continues much longer shackled by supreme neglect, and by seven inferior sets of legislative bodies reigning like so many petty kings during the Saxon heptarchy, England may yet have cause to rue the day when she neglected to raise that only barrier or counterpoise to republican power which could in the end have best guarded and maintained her interests. . . .

“British members of parliament and political

## ADVOCATES CONFEDERATION

writers who talk of giving the colonies complete independence now, either know not that our population and resources would prove very insufficient to preserve our freedom, were it menaced, or else they desire to see the sway of England's most formidable rival extended over the whole of the vast regions of the North American continent."

Nor was this a mere casual expression of opinion, for, on December 14th, 1826, his journal continued the advocacy of this measure under the head of "A Confederation of the British North American Colonies."

Some years before, the colonial department had had this union under consideration, and, in 1822, John Beverley Robinson, at the request of the imperial authorities, gave his opinions at length on a plan of union that had been proposed.<sup>1</sup> He thought he saw many advantages in such a union; but the imperial government appear to have entertained a fear that it would lead to the colonies combining against the mother country, a fear not entertained by Mr. Robinson. The question attracted some attention in Nova Scotia about the same time, and Thomas C. Haliburton wrote a pamphlet in which union was advocated.

In July, 1824, soon after Mackenzie had entered on the career of a journalist, a general election came on. The result, a majority opposed to the executive, there is no reason to believe was much

<sup>1</sup> *Canada and the Canada Bill*, 1840.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

affected by his writings, since he had issued only a few numbers of his paper. There had been a great change in the *personnel* of the House. Only sixteen members of the previous assembly had been re-elected; there were twenty-six new members. In the new House the government was destined to be confronted by large majorities, even on their own measures, but the principle of executive responsibility was not acknowledged, and no question of ministerial resignation ever followed a defeat.

The House met on January 11th, 1825. As the session approached, Mackenzie saw reasons for removing his establishment to York, then the seat of the government for Upper Canada. A paper published at Queenston must necessarily reproduce stale accounts of the legislative proceedings. It was doubtful whether any newspaper, which had then been published in Upper Canada, had repaid the proprietor the cost of its production. Any publisher who sent a thousand sheets through the post-office must pay eight hundred dollars a year postage, quarterly in advance. Postmasters received nothing for distributing newspapers, and were accordingly careless about their delivery. Since 1821, Francis Collins had furnished the principal reports of the legislative debates; but it is in evidence that, up to 1827, the operation of publishing them had never been remunerative. The new House paid a reporter one hundred pounds for reporting during the session, the reports to be delivered to the

## PARLIAMENTARY REPORTS

papers for publication, unless the committee on printing should exercise the arbitrary discretion of refusing to allow any particular report to be printed. While these reports were permitted to be published in the *Observer*, they refused to allow them to appear in the *Advocate*. The question came up in the House, and, although there was no decision upon it, the exclusion was not long maintained. The spite against the *Advocate* was carried to great lengths. During the ceremony of re-interring the remains of General Brock at Queenston Heights on September 13th, 1824, some person, in the absence of Mackenzie, put into a hole in the rock at the foundation of the monument a bottle, which he had filled with coins and newspapers, and among which was a single number of the *Advocate*. When the fact became known to the authorities, the foundation was ordered to be torn up and the obnoxious paper taken out, so that the ghost of the immortal warrior might not be disturbed by its presence, and the structure not be rendered insecure!

Adding a bookstore to his publishing house, Mackenzie at one time entertained the idea of relying principally on the printing of books, and the issuing of a political sheet occasionally. The *Advocate* had not indeed appeared with strict regularity, only twenty numbers having been published in six months. Some numbers had, after several weeks, been reprinted, and others continued to be asked for after they could be supplied. The last number

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of the *Advocate* published at Queenston, bears date November 18th, 1824; and the first number printed in York appeared on the twenty-fifth of the same month. In January, 1825, its circulation was stated at eight hundred and thirty.

The first trial of party strength, if such the election of Speaker could be considered, seemed to indicate a pretty well-balanced House, the vote being twenty-one against nineteen; but, upon other questions, the government minority shrank to much smaller dimensions. John Willson, of Wentworth, had become the successor of Speaker Sherwood. The Reformers were in ecstasies. "The result of this election," said Mackenzie, "will gladden the heart, and sweeten the cup, of many a Canadian peasant in the midst of his toil." The advantage of such a victory must, however, be very small, under a condition of things which permitted the advisers of the sovereign's representative to keep their places in spite of a permanently hostile legislative majority. Not only were ministers not responsible to the House, they did not admit that they had any collective responsibility at all. The attorney-general said, in his place in the House, "he was at a loss to know what the learned member from Middlesex meant by a prime minister and a cabinet; there was no cabinet; he sat in that House to deliver his opinions on his own responsibility; he was under no out-door influence whatever."

All eyes were turned towards the governor; and,



## WOE TO THE CANDID EDITOR

as there was no responsible ministry to stand between him and public censure, the authority of the Crown, which he represented, could not fail to be weakened by the criticism of executive acts. The new House was described by Mackenzie as being chiefly composed of men who appeared to act from principle, and were indefatigable in the discharge of their duties.

The *Advocate*, at the end of a year after its commencement, had appeared forty-three times. The subscribers, who were accounted with at the rate of fifty-two numbers for a year, were warned that they must not expect any greater regularity in future. One year's experience had taught the proprietor that "the editor in Canada who, in the state the province was then in, will attempt freely to hazard an opinion on the merits and demerits of public men, woe be to him! By the implied consent of King, Lords and Commons, he is doomed to speedy shipwreck, unless a merciful Providence should open his eyes in time, and his good genius prompt him 'to hurl press and types to the bottom of Lake Ontario.'" In any event, the experiment must have been a hazardous one in a country where the population was scattered over a very wide extent of territory, and numbered only 157,541.

The one paper circulating among this population, which yielded a certain profit, was the *Upper Canada Gazette*. It became necessary for Mackenzie to notice a report that he had been offered the editor-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

ship of this official paper in reversion. He showed the absurdity of the supposition that such an offer could be made to him who had opposed nearly all the measures of the government. Fothergill, the editor of the official paper, had joined the extreme Liberals on the alien question, contending that all Americans then in the country ought to have the full rights of British subjects conferred upon them by statute; and he had moved strong resolutions on the back of an inquiry into the mysteries of the post-office revenue, taking the ground that it was contrary to the Constitutional Act to withhold from the legislature an account of this revenue, or to deprive the House of the right of appropriating it. By this course, he had assisted in producing those numerous defeats which had fallen, one after another, with such irritating effect, upon the government. A man who did this could not long continue a special favourite of the government in those times; but that Mackenzie was ever thought of in connection with the editorship of the non-official part of the official *Gazette*, is out of the question. The ink of Fothergill's reported speech on the post-office question was scarcely dry when he was dismissed from the situation of King's Printer. He had not abused his trust by turning the paper, with the conduct of which he was charged, against the government, but he had ventured to confront a gross abuse in the assembly. That was his crime, and of that crime he paid the penalty. It was no doubt in-

## FOTHERGILL DECAPITATED

convenient to have a King's Printer who, even in his legislative capacity, opposed himself to the government; but the fault lay in the system which permitted the incumbent of such an office to hold a seat in the legislature. The union of judicial and legislative powers in the hands of one person was a still greater evil; and though it might have been productive of far worse results, it was permitted to exist long after the period now referred to.

Free speech met small encouragement at the hands of the executive. Francis Collins, who had been the official reporter of the legislature for five years, commenced, in an evil hour, the publication of a newspaper, the *Canadian Freeman*, and in that year, 1825, the governor cut off his remuneration. He exhausted his means in the vain effort to report the debates at his own cost, and found himself embarrassed with debt.

About six weeks before his printing office was destroyed by a mob, Mackenzie drew a contrast between the life of an editor, in those days, and that of a farmer, in which a vast balance of advantage appeared in favour of the latter. The perpetuity of task-work involved in the conduct of even a weekly paper was felt to be such a drag that he became appalled at it; and for the moment he resolved to have done with politics and political newspapers. Writing of the *Advocate* he said: "I will carry it on as a literary and scientific work, will enrich its pages with the discoveries of eminent

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

men, and the improvements of distinguished artists; but from thenceforth nothing of a political or controversial character shall be allowed to appear in the *Journal of Agriculture, Manufactures and Commerce*."

How long this resolution was kept cannot be determined; but the next number of his journal, which took the folio shape, was chiefly filled with a long review of the politics of the Upper Province. He gave an account of the effect of his two years' journalistic campaign, claiming to have largely assisted in producing a party revolution. Men were astonished at the temerity of his plain speaking; for, since Gourlay's banishment, the prudent had learned to put a bridle on their tongues. Timid lookers-on predicted, in their astonishment and with bated breath, that the fate of Gourlay would soon fall on Mackenzie and silence his criticisms. Nearly the whole press of the country was on his back; but, in spite of the rushing torrent of abuse, he kept the even tenor of his way, avoiding personalities as much as possible.

## CHAPTER V

### SILENCING THE PRESS

ONE fine summer evening, June 8th, 1826, a genteel mob composed of persons closely connected with the ruling faction walked into the office of the *Colonial Advocate* at York, and, in accordance with a preconcerted plan, set about the destruction of types and press. Three pages of the paper in type on the composing-stones, with a "form" of the journals of the House, were broken up, and the face of the letter battered. Some of the type was then thrown into the bay, to which the printing-office was contiguous; some of it was scattered on the floor of the office; more of it in the yard and in an adjacent garden. The composing-stone was thrown on the floor. A new cast-iron patent lever-press was broken. "Nothing was left standing," said an eye-witness, "not a thing." This scene took place in broad daylight, and it was said that one or two magistrates, who could not help witnessing it, never made the least attempt to put a stop to the outrage. The valiant type destroyers, who chose for the execution of their enterprise a day when Mackenzie was absent from the city, were most of them closely connected with the official party, which was then in a hopeless minority in the legislature, and had recently been exasperated by a succession of defeats.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Mr. Baby, inspector-general, was represented on the occasion by two sons, Charles and Raymond, students-at-law. Henry Sherwood, son of Mr. Justice Sherwood, who, while yet a law student, held the office of clerk of assize, gave his personal assistance. Mr. Lyons, confidential secretary of Governor Maitland, was there to perform his part. To save appearances, Sir Peregrine found it necessary to dismiss Lyons from his confidential situation; but he soon afterwards rewarded him with the more lucrative office of registrar of the Niagara district. Samuel Peters Jarvis, son-in-law of a late chief justice of the Court of Queen's Bench, performed his part, and found his reward in the appointment to an Indian commissionership. Charles Richardson, a student-at-law in the office of the attorney-general, showed his zeal for the cause of his official friends, and received in requital the office of clerk of the peace for the Niagara district. James King, another clerk of assize and student-at-law in Solicitor-General Boulton's office, did not hesitate to give his active assistance. Charles Heward, son of Colonel Heward, auditor-general of land patents and clerk of the peace, and Peter Macdougall, a merchant or shopkeeper in York and an intimate friend of Inspector-General Baby, complete the list of eight against whom the evidence, afterwards taken, was sufficiently strong for conviction. The whole number of persons concerned in the destruction of the

## OFFERS TO PAY DAMAGES

*Advocate* office was fifteen; and it is difficult to believe that this band of young men, subordinate officials and sons and relatives of the official party, could have planned in secret this outrage on the property of an obnoxious journalist, and executed it, without the knowledge of any of their superiors. The audacity of the rioters and the open connivance of leading officials who witnessed the scene with satisfaction, form an instructive comment on the state of society in the Family Compact of the little town of York, in the year of grace, 1826.

When it became certain that a verdict for damages would be obtained, and that a criminal prosecution might also be instituted, an offer was made through J. B. Macaulay (afterwards chief justice), solicitor for the culprits, "to pay at once the full value of the damage occasioned to the press and types, to be determined by indifferent and competent judges selected for that purpose." The letter containing this offer disavowed any desire on the part of "the gentlemen" to do an irreparable injury to the property, claimed credit for the attack having been made openly and with a full sense of its responsibility, and alleged that it was not prompted by malice, political feeling, or private animosity, but by "the personal calumnies of the later *Advocates*."<sup>1</sup> "This advance," it was

<sup>1</sup> "So far as the 'personal calumnies' were concerned, it is clear that Mr. Mackenzie did not begin them in the columns of his paper. . . . That he criticized official acts with a freedom and warmth to which the ruling class were unaccustomed, must be admitted. But he was gen-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

said, "was in conformity with the original intention," and from no desire to withdraw the matter from a jury, in which event it was hoped there would be no attempts to prejudice the cause, nor any complaints of a reluctance to compensate, voluntarily, a damage merely pecuniary, although provoked by repeated assaults on private character not susceptible of adequate redress.

If the party who committed the violence had, from the first, intended to pay the damage they had done in the deliberate businesslike way indicated by Mr. Macaulay, it is surprising that some of them should have absconded in order to evade the consequences of their crime; but it is possible that they feared a criminal prosecution, and left their solicitor and friend, who had himself offered more provocation to criticism than any of them, to make a bargain that would save them from the gaol. The press-destroying mob were probably surprised at the indignation their achievement excited in the public mind; and in the beginning they endeavoured to stem the torrent by issuing two placards in justification. But Mackenzie had been guilty of no aggression to turn the tide of

erous enough to recognize the good qualities of his opponents, and, until they assailed him personally with a virulence nothing he had written could justify, he never assailed individual character; . . . and there is nothing to prove that, if he had been spared those bitter personal attacks, he would not have maintained his policy of moderation and forbearance." W. J. Rattray, *The Scot in British North America* (1881), Vol. ii, pp. 458, 459.



## THE QUESTION OF PROVOCATION

public feeling against him, and the experiment failed. It was not till after this that the above offer was made. The first proposal not being listened to, a second was made through the same medium, which met the same fate as the first; and, indeed, if there had been no object in making an example of the perpetrators of an outrage that reflected on all concerned, the amount offered as compensation was ridiculously inadequate. But Mackenzie refused any amicable settlement with Macaulay's clients and friends; and there was nothing left but to send the case to trial, and let a jury, upon the hearing of the evidence, award equitable, and, if they thought fit, exemplary damages.

Macaulay, in the first letter in which he proposed a settlement of the matter, assumes that the outrage was caused by "the personal calumnies of the later *Advocates*;" and it becomes necessary to see where the aggression commenced, and what degree of provocation the independent journalist had given to the official party by whose satellites the work of destruction had been done. Nothing is plainer, on an examination of the facts, than that, until violently provoked, Mackenzie had been exceedingly sparing of personalities, and from the first he had been anxious to avoid them altogether. In one of the earliest numbers of his journal, he said: "When I am reduced to personalities, I will bring the *Advocate* to a close." To the personal abuse of the government papers he made no per-

sonal reply, confining himself to complaining, in the spirit of injury, of the wrong which he suffered. Of these, Carey's *Observer* appears to have been, up to this time, the greatest offender. Between the personal and political character of the actors with whom he had to deal, Mackenzie observed a proper distinction. Of Governor Maitland he said that "he was religious, humane, and peaceable; and if his administration had hitherto produced little good to the country, it may not be his fault, but the fault of those about him who abused his confidence." J. B. Macaulay (afterwards Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas) he described—and he did it from a sense of duty—as a gentleman evincing "so much honour, probity, just feeling, and disinterested good-will," as generated, in the publicist's mind, "a greater degree of respect and esteem for the profession in general than we had before entertained." He expressed a desire to see his friend replace Mr. Justice Boulton on the bench. Upon this latter functionary he had been, at first, playfully sarcastic, comparing him to Sir Matthew Hale, and latterly severe; but it will not be denied that the judge had fairly laid himself open to criticism. While opposing the attorney-general of the day (afterwards Chief Justice Robinson), he did ample justice to his talents and his personal character:—

"Mr. Robinson has risen in my estimation, in regard to abilities, from what I have seen of him during this session; indeed, there are not a few of

## FAIRNESS TO OPPONENTS

his remarks which I have listened to with pleasure; and some of the propositions he has made in parliament, the road bill especially (with a few modifications), have my entire approbation. As a private gentleman, as a lawyer, and as a law-officer, he stands as high in the estimation of the country as any professional man in it. As a counsellor of State to the Emperor of Russia, or Napoleon Bonaparte, he might have figured to advantage; but his principles will, if not softened down, forever unfit him for a transatlantic popular assembly. He advocates, with singular force, those doctrines the repugnance to which un-colonized the thirteen United States; and every taunt which he utters against our republican neighbours tells in account against the interests of Great Britain, so far as these are united with this colony. It is evident that Mr. Robinson has not been long enough in the school of adversity to learn wisdom and discretion. He is a very young man, and I do hope and trust that, when the heat and violence of party spirit abate within him, he will yet prove a bright and lasting ornament to the land which gave him birth, and that the powers of his mind will be exerted to promote the happiness and welfare of all classes of his fellow-subjects."

Mackenzie had been severe upon Jonas Jones, but that gentleman had first set the example of using harsh terms. He had said in reply to a very able speech in the House of Assembly on the alien question, that the member (Dr. Rolph) who made

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

it had a "vile, democratic heart, and ought to be sent out of the province." If an appeal to the Sedition Act could silence an opponent, why take the trouble to refute his arguments? He had, moreover, used threats of personal violence against Mackenzie, and was, of course, open to severe retaliation. In the legislative assembly he had called Mr. Hamilton, the member for Wentworth, a "fellow," when a scene followed on which it was necessary to drop the curtain to hide it from the vulgar gaze of the public. Considering these circumstances in mitigation, it must be confessed that the criticisms upon Mr. Jones scarcely exceeded the bounds of merited and justifiable severity. To Henry John Boulton, Mackenzie had declared an absence of personal dislike in criticizing his public acts. Considering Dr. Rolph too severe in his strictures on the government, he had opposed him on that account, and a personal estrangement had been the consequence.

Such is the manner in which Mackenzie had treated his political opponents during the two years he had controlled a political journal; and it may easily be conceived how slender was the pretext, on the ground of provocation, for the destruction of his printing-office. I do not say that he had never applied to his opponents language of severity, but I do say that he was not the aggressor; that under the greatest provocations he had avoided personalities; and that, at the worst, he had not

## HIS OPPONENTS' MALEVOLENCE

proceeded to anything like the extremity to which his assailants had gone; and this not for the want of materials to work upon.

In the meanwhile, how were his political adversaries bearing themselves towards Mackenzie? Macaulay had gone to the unwarrantable length of violating the seal of secrecy and publishing private letters addressed to him by Mackenzie, though there was not, in the conduct of the latter, the shadow of excuse for this outrage. Macaulay was now a member of the executive council, and Mackenzie, who had previously praised him, had hinted that he was not as independent as formerly; but this was in a private letter. The cause of the quarrel was utterly contemptible, and Macaulay showed to great disadvantage in it. A disagreement had taken place between the Rev. Dr. Strachan, then rector of York, and one John Fenton, who had officiated as clerk under the rector. Mackenzie, being in Niagara, learned that Mr. Radcliffe had received a letter from Mr. Fenton in which the latter stated his intention of publishing a pamphlet on the state of the congregation in York. Meanwhile Mr. Fenton was reinstated in his position. Accordingly, a paragraph was inserted in the *Advocate* which certainly left the impression that a fear of the threatened pamphlet had led to the reinstatement of Fenton with an increased salary. It is possible that the insinuation was not just; and yet this could not be said if there was no

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

mistake about the alleged facts on which it was founded. It was not denied that Mr. Fenton had been reinstated, but it was alleged that his salary was increased; and Mackenzie certainly had what seemed to be good authority for stating that the publication of a pamphlet had been announced. This was the only statement in dispute, and if it was not proved, it certainly was not disproved. Mr. Radcliffe might have been asked to write a note stating that he had not received such a letter from Mr. Fenton, and that would have settled the matter. Macaulay was one of the church-wardens, and, after the lapse of three weeks, he wrote to deny the statement that a pamphlet had been threatened, and that Mr. Fenton's reinstatement carried with it any increase of salary. His letter was sent to the *Advocate* for publication, and after it was in type he wrote to recall it, not because the matter had assumed a new shape, but because Mr. Fenton had written a denial of that part of the paragraph<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> The paragraph was in these words:—"Had the church-warden confined his remarks to his fellow functionary 'the clerk,' we would most readily have distributed the types of his letter yesterday, as he requested. But the tone he has seen fit to assume towards ourselves is not to be borne. There was a time when we looked upon *that church-warden* as one who would become the most open, manly, and independent of his class, but it has gone by. We prized his talents, his abilities, and his judgment far too high; and the tenor of his railing accusation against us will show the province that he has not improved the style of his compositions since he left off studying Byron. The church-warden, who is not one of our subscribers, will find to-morrow that, even to him, we shall not meanly truckle, nor shall we to any man, although the blackest poverty on earth should be our reward."

## A VINDICTIVE OFFICIAL

which related to the pamphlet. Mackenzie, on account of the offensive attitude the writer had assumed towards him, refused to cancel the letter to which Macaulay had appended, not his own signature, but the *nom de plume* of "A Churchwarden," and the few lines in which Mackenzie explained his refusal to comply with the request of a person who he thought had forfeited all claim to his indulgence, contain the whole extent of the provocation he gave to Macaulay. The latter must have been in an uncontrollable rage before he brought himself to publish the private letters addressed to him by Mackenzie on the subject of the Fenton affair, and to make jeering remarks in reference to Mackenzie's mother, an aged woman of seventy-five years. But he did not stop there; he sent the manuscript, into which he had condensed his rage, to Mackenzie, with an offer to pay him for its publication in the *Advocate*, a paper which he declared his intention to do all in his power to crush. One of his advertisements, a little less libellous than the rest, would have been published; but, the money being demanded in advance, Macaulay refused to redeem his promise, and pretended to have a right to insist on its publication without the payment he had at first offered. He taunted Mackenzie with his poverty, and with what he called "changing his trade," and advised him to "try to deserve the charity" of the public a little better than previously, if he expected to support his

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

mother and his family by the publication of a newspaper ; as if it were asking charity to publish a public journal at the usual price, and a crime for a man to support a mother who was too aged and too helpless to support herself.<sup>1</sup> Without even mentioning him by name, Mackenzie had described Macaulay as a man whom he had ceased to look upon as possessing manly independence ; and, in return, this member of the government claimed a right to have published in the *Advocate* letters containing gross personal abuse of its editor and ridicule of his aged mother. To these letters he had not the manliness to append his name ; if he had, he was aware that their virulence would not have prevented their publication, for in that case the writer would have placed himself, as well as his antagonist,

<sup>1</sup> This piece of insolence was founded on the following passage in a private letter addressed by Mackenzie to Macaulay: "As to the motives and character of my journal, let its unexampled circulation among the better classes in the colony speak for me. As to the result—I feel that I mean to do right—I am well satisfied that I am doing good, and, though I have to struggle with a slender capital, and a government who make the public advertising subservient to other purposes than that of giving general information of the thing advertised, I am well pleased and contented to struggle along through life as free as the air on the Scottish mountains; yea, and more so than the most voluptuous courtier can be, even in his most joyous hours. If I am enabled to maintain my old mother, my wife and family, and keep out of the hands of the law for debt, I care not for wealth, and should as willingly leave this earthly scene not worth a groat as if I were worth thousands. I one day thought I should have wished to have seen you member of the legislature for York, and that you would have become a useful and truly independent representative of the people. It was not to be, however. I greatly mistook your views, which, situated as you now are, are not likely to become more liberal."



## PRESS AMENITIES IN YORK

upon trial before the public; and every one who read them, in connection with the comments they must have provoked, would have been able to judge of the spirit in which they were conceived and the justice of their contents. The right to compel the editor to publish anonymous communications, which Macaulay had claimed, was wholly without foundation; and as for courtesy to such a correspondent it was out of the question. But it is useless to reason upon the acts of a man who had permitted passion so completely to get the mastery over his judgment.

I have gone fully into the provocation offered by Macaulay, because it was in reply to a pamphlet in which he embodied all this venom, that Mackenzie told some stories about certain members of the Family Compact that he never would have put into print if he had not been provoked beyond endurance. If, in striking back, a few blows fell upon Macaulay's official associates who had not joined openly in the provocation, and Mackenzie exceeded the bounds of strict retaliatory justice, it must be remembered that the connection between all the sections of the Family Compact was very close, and that when the last word of defiance has been hurled at a man, he is not to be bound by a very rigid etiquette if he finds it necessary to "carry the war into Africa." But the reply, calmly viewed at this distant day, so far as it affected Macaulay, appears mild and playful beside the savagery of the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

unprovoked attack ; I say unprovoked, because it does not exceed the bounds of fair or ordinary criticism to tell a political opponent that you have ceased to see in him a person possessed of manly independence. At the same time it must be confessed that some of Macaulay's friends came in for knocks which there is no public evidence of their having merited at Mackenzie's hands ; and it would have been better if he had confined the punishment he was well entitled to inflict to the man who alone had raised a hand to strike him down.

Macaulay's libel did not produce the effect intended. The object, it is plain enough, was to provoke Mackenzie into the use of language for which he might be prosecuted, and either banished, like Gourlay, or shut up in a prison. But Mackenzie was too wary to be caught in this clumsy trap ; and his reply, instead of retorting rage for rage, was playfully sarcastic and keenly incisive. The dialogue form was adopted, the speakers being a congress of fifteen contributors to the *Advocate*, who purported to have assembled in the blue parlor of Mr. McDonnell of Glengarry, at York. Patrick Swift, nephew of the immortal dean, who had inherited a share of his uncle's sarcasm, was a prominent actor, and infused his playful spirit into the other contributors. Over a huge bowl of punch, toasts are drunk, tales told, songs sung, and politics discussed. "Lawyer Macaulay" was "the knight of the rueful countenance ;" and it was hinted by one

## TRIAL OF THE PRESS RIOTERS

of the wits that even he had family reasons for not scoffing at persons for "changing their trade."

Mackenzie's enemies were furious. He had stung them to the quick; but he had dealt with matters to which it would not be desirable to give additional notoriety by making them subjects of prosecution. Truth might, legally speaking, be a libel, but there are unpleasant truths, which, though it be illegal to tell, cannot well be made a ground of action. Juries might be obstinate and refuse to convict a writer, who, after unbearable provocation, had been stung into telling unpleasant facts, a little dressed up or exaggerated though they may have been to give effect to their narration. It was clear that Mackenzie could not be banished for sedition. He could not even be tried under the Sedition Act, having been some years in the province; and he had neither spoken nor published anything of a seditious nature. What then remained? The sole resource of violence; and violence was used; the office of the *Advocate* was destroyed by a mob consisting of persons who bore suspiciously close relations to the government.

The trial came off at York, in the then new court-house, in 1826. The defendants had elected to have a special jury. Of the twelve jurors who were to try the case, nine resided in the country, and only three in York. Chief Justice Campbell was the presiding judge; and by his side sat, as associate magistrates, the Hon. William Allan and

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Alexander McDonnell. Both sides were well provided with able counsel. For the plaintiff, appeared the younger Bidwell and Stewart and Small; for the defendants, Macaulay and Hagerman. It was shown that the Hon. Mr. Allan, who played the part of associate justice on the trial, had been in conversation with Colonel Heward, whose son was among the desperadoes, at a point where they must have witnessed the whole scene. Though they were both magistrates, neither of them attempted to remonstrate with the defendants, nor to induce them to desist. The defendants called no witnesses; and Hagerman, in addressing the jury on their behalf, assailed the *Advocate*; but he did not venture to read the objectionable matter to the jury. Without a tittle of evidence to support his assertion, and in the teeth of well-known facts, he stated that Mackenzie had left York at the time his printing materials were destroyed to evade the payment of his debts.

After a trial which lasted two days, it seemed very unlikely that the jury would agree, for they remained out for thirty-two hours. During all this time, various amounts of damages had been discussed. Sums varying from £2,000 to £150 had found favour with different jurors; but the real difficulty was with one man—a George Shaw—who tried to starve his fellow-jurors into compliance with a verdict giving £150 damages; but, finding this impracticable, he at last gave way. Mr.

## RESULTS OF THE TRIAL

Rutherford, the foreman, named £625 and costs, and the amount was agreed to by all the jurors. Referring to the result of the trial, soon after, Mackenzie said : " That verdict re-established on a permanent footing the *Advocate* press, because it enabled me to perform my engagements without disposing of my real property ; and although it has several times been my wish to retire from the active duties of the press into the quiet paths of private life, I have had a presentiment that I shall yet be able to evince my gratitude to the country which, in my utmost need, rescued me from utter ruin and destruction." The money was raised by subscription, the political friends of the press-destroyers feeling in duty bound to bear harmless the eight volunteers who had performed the rough task of attempting to silence, by an act of violence, an obnoxious newspaper.

There remained the question of a criminal prosecution. Mackenzie, being called before the grand jury, declined to make any complaint ; but the matter was not allowed to rest. Francis Collins, having been proceeded against criminally by the attorney-general for four libels in April, 1828, retaliated upon the party of his accusers. On information laid by him, seven of the defendants, who had been cast in civil damages for the destruction of the *Advocate* office, were tried for riot. This proceeding, being of a retaliatory nature and taken against the wishes of Mackenzie, was not looked

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

on with much favour ; and though the defendants were found guilty, they were let off with nominal damages.

Though the trial of Collins was not proceeded with, the government paper announced that it had not been abandoned ; and it came on at the next assizes. Nor had the end of other judicial retaliations been reached. Mackenzie was not to escape ; and yet he deserved some consideration at the hands of the official party. When called as a witness in the type riot prosecution, which he had refused to originate, he said he had no desire to prosecute the rioters against whom civil damages had been obtained ; and he expressed a hope that they would receive only nominal punishment. His suggestion had been acted upon. But all this did not avail at a time when Collins was proceeded against for four libels in Upper Canada, and Mr. Neilson for an equal number in Lower Canada.

Before the trials for libel could come on, an event occurred, in the removal of Judge Willis, which was not calculated to inspire the defendants with confidence in the impartial administration of justice. If the local executive suspended a judge because his interpretation of the law did not accord with their views, the power of the executive in political prosecutions could not but be regarded as a source of danger to public liberty. Mr. Willis had only received his appointment on October 11th, 1827 ; and, on the sixth of the following June, he

## REMOVAL OF JUDGE WILLIS

was suspended until the pleasure of His Majesty's imperial government should be known. On a previous occasion, far from bending to the influence of power, he had undertaken to teach the attorney-general his duty. In the Hilary term then past, Mr. Justice Willis had taken his seat on the bench beside Chief Justice Campbell and Mr. Justice Sherwood; and differences of opinion on points of great legal importance had arisen among them. Before the following Easter term, the chief justice had obtained leave of absence; and the differences of opinion between the remaining two judges, Willis and Sherwood, were carried to such a length as to excite public attention. Under these circumstances, Judge Willis directed his special attention to the constitution of the court; and he found that the statute creating this tribunal provided "that His Majesty's chief justice, together with two puisne judges, shall preside in the said court." Considering the court illegally constituted without three judges, he refused to sit with Mr. Justice Sherwood as his only colleague, when, according to his reading of the law, there ought to be another. Sometime before Trinity term, it came to the knowledge of the provincial government that Mr. Justice Willis had come to this conclusion. When the opportunity presented itself, he delivered his opinion at length on the subject. Having dealt with the question of what was required, under the provincial statute, to constitute a legal Court of

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

King's Bench, he touched upon the cause of the legal inefficiency of that tribunal. The chief justice had obtained leave of absence; but he had obtained it from the lieutenant-governor alone, while Mr. Willis contended that the consent of the governor-in-council was necessary.

The opponents of Mr. Justice Willis accused him of showing temper in the delivery of his opinion; but the accusation, when sifted, was found to be groundless. A committee of the assembly, of which Dr. Baldwin was chairman, reported that they had "particularly inquired into this matter," and had come to the conclusion "that to the public eye and ear, the manner and language of Mr. Justice Willis, on the occasion of so expressing his opinion on the bench, relative to the defective state of the court, in no respect departed from the gravity and dignity becoming him as a judge; and peculiar malevolence alone could represent it otherwise." The evidence fully bore out this statement. "When Mr. Justice Willis delivered his opinion," Mr. Carey told the committee, "his conduct was dignified and honourable."<sup>1</sup>

When Mr. Justice Willis had concluded his opinion, an unseemly spectacle took place. Mr. Justice Sherwood ordered the clerk to adjourn the court. Mr. Justice Willis replied that it was impossible to

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Carey was editor of the *York Observer*, and had long been a firm supporter of the government; but at this time he was wavering in his allegiance.



## OPINIONS IN JUDGE'S FAVOUR

adjourn what did not exist; there was no legal court. Mr. Sherwood rejoined: "You have given your opinion: I have a right to mine, and I shall order the court to be adjourned." "He spoke," said Mr. Carey, "apparently under great irritation." Mr. Justice Willis bowed and withdrew, the clerk obeying the order of the remaining judge.

A difficulty that had occurred between Mr. Justice Willis and Attorney-General Robinson, on a previous occasion, was also made a subject of inquiry before the parliamentary committee; and Mr. Carey, in his evidence, stated that so far as manner was concerned, the only thing to complain of in the judge was his too great lenity in the presence of the treatment he received.

Dr. Baldwin, Robert Baldwin, and John Rolph, practising barristers, entered a protest against the legality of the court when it had been constituted with two judges, giving at length their reasons for agreeing with Judge Willis that, in order to a legal constitution of the court, there must be three judges. A petition, which the Duke of Wellington thought deserved no particular notice, bearing the signatures of thousands of Upper Canadians, in favour of the independence of the judiciary and sustaining the position of Judge Willis, was sent to the king and the two Houses of Parliament. The law point was finally decided by the Privy Council adversely to the views of Mr. Justice Willis, whose removal was thereupon ratified by the imperial government.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

It was now certain that the juries who might try the libel cases would not be directed by Mr. Justice Willis, but by some one whose affinity to the prosecutors was undoubted. Soon after the commencement of the York assizes, which opened on October 12th, 1828, the libel prosecutions against Collins came on. Of the libel upon the attorney-general, he was found guilty, and sentenced by Mr. Hagerman—who had temporarily gone upon the bench, leaving the Kingston collectorship of customs to take care of itself—to be imprisoned for twelve months in the York gaol, and to pay a fine of £50. The libel consisted of imputing “native malignancy” to the attorney-general, and of stigmatizing as “an open and palpable falsehood” a statement made by that functionary in open court.

It is not necessary to raise the question whether such libels as these ought to have been met by criminal prosecutions. But, if it was the duty of the attorney-general to prosecute Collins, it was also his duty to prosecute others connected with the government press, who had used fully as great a latitude of expression. One of these writers<sup>1</sup> had stigmatized several members of the legislative assembly as “besotted fools,” actuated by no other feeling than malice, to gratify which they paid no regard to truth or decency. Addressing a single member, the same writer informed him, “There are no bounds to your malice;” and the whole

<sup>1</sup> *Kingston Chronicle*.

## PROSECUTIONS FOR LIBEL

House was described as an "intolerable nuisance." "The poison of your malignant disposition," also made use of, was an expression fully as offensive as "native malignancy." If it was the duty of the attorney-general to prosecute for the use of such language, he was bound to perform that duty impartially, and was not entitled, in fairness, to single out opponents for victims, while the offences of political friends were overlooked.

A public subscription was raised to pay the amount of the fine; public meetings were held and committees formed to take the case of Collins into consideration. At a later period, the House interposed in behalf of Collins, but they failed to change the determination of the executive to keep him in close confinement for the whole of the prescribed term of his sentence. Sir John Colborne thought himself entitled to snub the House for their interference, by expressing extreme regret at the course they had taken. He forgot that the sovereign whom he represented was the fountain of mercy, and thought only of his obligation to carry a rigorous and cruel sentence into effect.

The threatened prosecution of Mackenzie for an alleged political libel had been kept suspended over his head for nearly a year. For some reason, however, the executive resolved to abandon the prosecution, and two days before the date fixed for the striking of the special jury, the attorney-general addressed a note to Mr. R. B. Sullivan, who acted

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

for Mackenzie, stating the conclusion that had been arrived at. The alleged libel, of which the prosecution was thus abandoned, was purely political. It was neither more nor less than a recommendation to certain constituencies to change their representatives at the next ensuing general election ; and was expressed in language that must be admitted to have been very strong, but also very general, why this should be done. The report of a committee of the House, on which the paragraph was founded, contained more serious accusations than the alleged libel itself. This committee, of which Mr. Beardsley was chairman, reported, among other things, "that some of the most daring outrages against the peace of the community have passed unprosecuted, and that the persons guilty have, from their connections in high life, been promoted to the most important offices of honour, trust, and emolument, in the local government."

Violence is a blindfolded demon, more likely to defeat its own objects than to attain them. The means taken to crush a public journal, obnoxious to the ruling faction, proved the cause of its resuscitation and firm establishment. At the very time when the press was broken and the type thrown into the bay, the last number of the *Advocate* had been issued. Macaulay could not have made a worse selection of the time for attempting to strike Mackenzie down. The latter seriously contemplated retiring from political discussions, and prudence

## REVIVAL OF THE "ADVOCATE"

might have suggested that he should be allowed to depart in peace. The publication, burthened as it was with a postal tax payable in advance, and addressing itself to a small scattered community, had never repaid the expenditure necessary to sustain it. What means its proprietor had made in trade were soon dissipated on the literary speculation. His property, real and personal, was worth twice the amount of his debts; but he was embarrassed for ready money, threatened with *capias* by one creditor, and thoroughly disheartened. From these embarrassments he resolved to free himself. With the consent of Mr. Tannahill, his principal creditor, Mackenzie went to Lewiston, in order to prevent the accumulation of law costs, till his affairs could be settled. Besides, his health was broken; and he had sometime before been thrown into a fever by the vexation he had suffered. His eldest daughter had died, and another member of his family was ill. Under these circumstances, it is not surprising that he should have sighed for that repose which journalism had interrupted in the first instance, and of which it still continued to prevent the return. But, while he loved repose, he had not been able to resist the excitement of the semi-public life of the journalist, who already dreamed of the overthrow of an administration and the reform of the oligarchical system then in operation. He who repiningly compared his own toils to the quiet life of the farmer,

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

would sit up whole nights, labouring assiduously to accomplish political ends. Though he could be a child among his children, and was never so happy as when he joined in their play, he would frequently consume two consecutive nights in the patient but exhausting labour of the pen.

While living at Queenston, Mackenzie became acquainted with Robert Randal, a Virginian by birth (and a near relative of John Randolph of Roanoke), who had come to this province as a settler, and was then living at Chippewa. Randal was a politician, and it is probable that his influence on Mackenzie first led him into politics. He was a man who, with a keen eye to the future, selected land at different places where future towns were certain to spring up. He became entangled in lawsuits involving property to a very large amount; and in one way and another was cruelly victimized. His lawyers played him false; and the officers of the law conspired to defraud him. He was involved in pecuniary embarrassments, and was charged with perjury for swearing to a qualification which, based on a long list of properties the ownership of some of which litigation had rendered doubtful, was declared to be bad. Mackenzie took his part, and, when Randal died, he bequeathed a share of his property to the man who had in some sort been his protector. The connection produced its effect upon Mackenzie for life.

## AIDS THE CAUSE OF THE ALIENS

In the spring of 1827, Mackenzie raised the question of sending to England an agent to plead with the British government the cause of the American-born aliens in Canada. A petition, said to have been signed by fifteen thousand persons, was ready to be carried to England. A central committee, charged with the protection of the rights of the aliens, met at Mackenzie's house, and he acted as its confidential secretary. This committee offered the mission to Dr. Rolph, who declined acceptance. The question was then between Fothergill and Randal; Mackenzie, favouring the appointment of the latter, carried his point. Randal was in the position of the persons whose cause he had to plead. On behalf of the committee, the delegate's instructions were drawn up by Mackenzie; and the committee having advanced a sum for his expenses, part of which had been raised by subscription, Randal set off for London in the month of March.

In order to smooth the way for the delegate in England, Mackenzie addressed letters to the Earl of Dalhousie, governor-in-chief, surcharged with expressions of loyalty, and recommending colonial representation in the imperial parliament. It is worthy of note that the first of these letters contains several extracts from American authorities predicting a dissolution of the federal union. After giving these extracts, the writer asks: "And is this the government, and are these the people, whose

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

alliance and intimacy we ought to court instead of those of England? No, my lord; their constitutional theory is defective, and their practice necessarily inconsistent. Their government wants consolidation; let us take warning by their example."

There were in the province a large number of persons, who, though born in British colonies, had, by the progress of events, and the effect of the laws resulting from those events, lost the legal quality and privileges of British subjects. All who were born in the old American colonies, and had continued to live there till after the peace of 1783, became, on September 3rd. of that year, by the Treaty of Independence, citizens of the United States. They therefore, by that fact, ceased to be British subjects. Both American and English law courts agreed as to the effect of the treaty upon the nationality of those who resided in the United States at the peace of 1783. The results were disastrous. Persons who had made immense sacrifices by adhering to the British standard during the Revolutionary War, lost, in some cases, large amounts of property, in consequence of their inability to inherit as British subjects.

By a British statute passed in 1790, a seven years' residence, the taking of the oath of allegiance, the observance of the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, according to the usages of the Protestant Church, and of other formalities, granted all aliens who came to the colonies the



## THE ALIEN QUESTION

rights of British subjects with certain reservations. But they could not become members of the Privy Council or of parliament; <sup>1</sup> they were incapacitated from holding any position of trust, civil or military, in the United Kingdom or Ireland; and they could not accept any grant of land from the Crown. The provisions of this statute were hardly ever complied with by alien emigrants from the United States. Men whose industry had cleared the country of forests, who had carried civilization into the wilds of the west and assisted in repelling invasion, found themselves aliens, without any legal security for their property.

Whatever might be the effect of a narrow or rigid construction of the Alien Law upon these persons, they had not hitherto received the treatment of aliens. They had received grants of land from the Crown and devised real property; some of them had held offices of trust in the militia, and spilt their blood in defence of the country in which they were now to be denied the rights of citizens, except upon conditions which they regarded as degrading. It was not to be expected that a man who had fought beside the gallant Brock would feel complimented if asked to take the oath of allegiance. The recent decision of the Court of King's Bench, in England, in the Ludlow case, created uneasiness, alarm and indignation. After

<sup>1</sup> In May, 1826, an Imperial Act was passed to render naturalized foreigners capable of sitting in the legislature of Upper Canada.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE .

much correspondence with the lieutenant-governors on the subject, the imperial government sent instructions to Sir Peregrine Maitland to cause a bill to be introduced into the legislature by which all the rights of British subjects could be conferred upon the aliens in the province. The bill passed the legislative council, whose members owed their nomination to the Crown, in the session of 1826 ; but when it was sent down to the assembly, it met an equal amount of opposition and support on two several divisions. The House was equally divided for a whole week ; and the bill, after being five times negatived by the casting vote of the Speaker, was at length irregularly passed. Though the division of numbers was so long equal, the majority of the members who spoke opposed those provisions which required all persons placed in the category of aliens by the recent judicial decision, to remedy their former neglect by complying with the prescribed formalities.

The bill passed by the legislature was of a nature which rendered necessary its reservation for the signification of the royal pleasure. To prevent the royal assent being given to it, Randal had been selected to bear the petition of some thousands of the persons whom it affected. His success was complete. Another bill, framed in conformity with the royal instructions, which Randal's exertions had procured, was introduced into the Upper Canada assembly by Bidwell, a prominent member

## RANDAL'S SUCCESSFUL MISSION

of the opposition, and carried. It invested with the quality of British subjects all residents of the province who had received grants of land from the Crown or held public office, as well as their children and remote descendants; all settled residents who had taken up their abode before the year 1820, their descendants to have the right to inherit in case the parents were dead; all persons resident in the province on March 1st, 1828, on taking the oath of allegiance after seven years' residence in some part of His Majesty's dominions. It was also provided that no person of the age of sixteen, on May 26th, 1826, should be debarred from inheriting property on account of its descent from an alien.

The success of Randal's mission to England had a material effect upon Mackenzie; for, ever after, except a few years about the period of the rebellion, he believed in the efficacy of an appeal to the imperial government. His own subsequent visit to the colonial office, and its success, confirmed an opinion which he cherished to the day of his death.

At no time does Mackenzie appear to have been a very strong partisan. Not that his views and position were not decided. He was strongly opposed to the ruling minority; but he was very far from having unbounded confidence in the majority of the assembly. Of the leaders of the opposition, Rolph and Bidwell, he sometimes spoke in sharp terms of condemnation, showing that he was under no sort

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of party control or leadership. When reminded by one of his own political friends in the House that certain petitions laid before the legislature were not privileged communications, that an action for libel would lie if they contained what the law regarded as libellous matter and were reprinted in a newspaper, his reply was that he intended to publish both the petitions in question in the next number of his paper, a promise which was faithfully kept.

## CHAPTER VI

### ENTERS PARLIAMENT

**B**EFORE the commencement of 1828, Mackenzie was a declared candidate for a seat in the next House of Assembly; and it is not impossible that he already aimed at attaining to the leadership. Speaking of this House as a body, in a letter to Earl Dalhousie, he said: "Many of these legislators are qualified to sign their names; but, as to framing and carrying through a bill on any subject whatever, the half of them wisely never attempted such a herculean task." And in the same letter he expressed undisguised contempt for the whole sham of colonial legislatures then in vogue. "I have long been satisfied," he said, "that if the North American colonies were rid of these inferior and subordinate legislatures, which are, and must ever be, insufficient for the purposes for which they were intended, and allowed instead a due weight in both branches of the British parliament, it would prove the foundation of their permanent and true happiness." The difficulty was that these representative assemblies were mocked with a semblance of that legislative power with the substantial possession of which they were never endowed. Even the Reformers had only an imperfect conception of the true remedy. The

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

ministry might be subjected to a succession of defeats in the assembly without raising a question of resignation ; and the Reform journals very seldom undertook to deal with the question of ministerial responsibility. Mackenzie was the "advocate of such a change in the mode of administering the government as would give the people an effectual control over the actions of their representatives, and through them over the actions of the executive." Most of those who essayed to effect reforms, contented themselves with encountering abuses in detail, a mode of warfare which left untouched a radically defective system of administration.

When we look back upon the system that existed, the mind is filled with astonishment that it should have enjoyed such comparative immunity from attack. A party triumph at the polls carried hardly any of the advantages of victory into the legislature. The members of the executive belonged to the minority. The majority might pass bills in the assembly, but, unless they pleased the ruling party, they were rejected by the Crown-nominated chamber. There was no general separation of legislative and judicial functions ; and when the assembly, in 1826, addressed the imperial government to remove the chief justice from the sphere of politics, the answer was that the governor had profited greatly by his advice, and that there was nothing in the circumstances of the colony to render a change of system desirable. The judiciary

## NOVEL REMEDY FOR A BAD SYSTEM

and the members of the executive received their appointments, and the greater part of their pay, from revenues belonging to England, on which they were largely dependent. When the House presented an address to the king praying that the bounty lands, which had been withheld from those officers of the militia who attended a convention on the grievances of the colony in 1818, should be given to them, Governor Maitland, by the command of His Majesty, replied that when they expressed "deep contrition" for presuming to ask for a redress of grievances, the lands would be granted to these erring militiamen of 1812. The system reacted upon itself; the bad advice sent by irresponsible ministers from this side came back across the Atlantic matured into the commands of the sovereign; and the name and the authority of England suffered, while the real culprits escaped the merited punishment of ejection from office by the votes of a majority of the people's representatives.

It is not surprising, under these circumstances, that a scheme so impracticable as colonial representation in the imperial parliament should have been turned to, in despair, by Mackenzie. A union of the colonies, which he had often advocated, would have necessitated a change of system, if it was to be an effective remedy for the glaring defects of administration which then existed.

In the commencement of 1828, while advocating

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

a responsible executive, Mackenzie disclaimed all "intention or desire to assist in cutting any colony adrift from its parent state." He confesses, however, that his proposal for representation in the imperial parliament had not met universal approbation. The ruling faction desired to have things their own way; and so comfortable were existing arrangements that they were afraid of the effects of a change. The people were unfortunately becoming suspicious of the external influence that sustained the oligarchy; and were wisely disinclined to listen to a scheme of representation in a distant parliament, where their feeble voice must have been drowned in the clangour of over six hundred representatives.

At the close of 1827, Mackenzie's pecuniary circumstances had greatly improved. In a letter written previous to the election, he gives us some information on this point: "By an unwearied application to business, I am now again an unencumbered freeholder of Upper Canada, to more than thrice the amount required by law as a parliamentary qualification, besides being possessed of nearly as much more lands, with good bonds for deeds. I have also valuable personal property, including a business which nothing but the actual knowledge of the election of a bad parliament, in aid of the present corrupt administration, would induce me to quit. Being, therefore, easy in my circumstances, entirely freed from the terrors



## DECLARES HIS CANDIDATURE

of litigation, prosperous in my business, in good health, and owing very few debts, I have applied to the people of the most populous county in Upper Canada for the highest honour in their gift, the surest token of their esteem and confidence."

Having once resolved to seek a seat in the legislature of his adopted country, Mackenzie waited for no deputations to solicit him to become a candidate; he submitted his claims to no clique of election managers, and heeded not their voluntary resolves. Months before the election was to take place, he issued an address to the electors of the county of York. James E. Small had been Mackenzie's solicitor in the famous type case; but he was astonished at the temerity of his late client in venturing, unasked, to declare himself a candidate for the representation of the most populous county in Upper Canada. It so happened that Small was to be a candidate for the same county. Jesse Ketchum and William Roe were the choice of a convention, but Mackenzie declared himself a candidate and thus announced himself:—

"I have attended two public meetings, but it is not my intention to go to any more until I meet the people at the hustings; it is a needless waste of time, and benefits nobody but the tavern-keeper. If I go into the legislature, it must be in my own way, or not at all. For I mean to break through all the old established usages, to keep no

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

open houses, administer to the wants of no publican, hire no vehicles to trundle freemen to the hustings to serve themselves, nor to court the favour of those leading men who have so powerfully influenced former elections. I will not lessen my own resources for maintaining independence by spending at the outset, as was done by others four years ago, a sum sufficient to maintain my large household for a twelvemonth; but, if I shall become one of the stewards of the province, I hope I shall be found not only faithful, but also fully competent to discharge the duties of a representative in such a way as ought to secure for me the confidence of an intelligent community." His first election cost £500.

Opposed by the administration and its organs from political reasons, Mackenzie's candidature was contested even by professed Liberal journals, from a business jealousy that derived its venom from the circumstance of his own paper having a circulation larger than any rival in Upper Canada. Assailed by every newspaper in York, except his own; libelled in pamphlets, and slandered in posters, he pursued the even tenor of his way, and managed to find time for the preparation of electioneering documents calculated to influence not merely the county of York but the whole province. The result showed that Small had miscalculated the relative influence of himself and his opponent. Ketchum and Mackenzie were elected.

## EVENTS OF HIS FIRST SESSION

The first session in which Mackenzie had a seat in the legislative assembly opened inauspiciously for the advisers by whom Sir John Colborne was surrounded. Having been convened on January 8th, 1829, it soon gave proof of its hostility to the administration. The vote on the speakership, which stood twenty-one for Willson, the late Speaker, and twenty-four for Bidwell, did not at all indicate the strength of parties; for, while Willson received the support of the government, the division showed that he still retained many friends among the opposition. The address in reply to the speech from the throne, founded on resolutions framed by Rolph and containing the strongest expressions of a want of confidence in the advisers of the governor, was carried with the nearest possible approach to unanimity: thirty-seven against one. In those days a unanimous vote of censure on the governor's advisers produced no change of ministry. The assembly complained of the government, when they ought to have struck a blow at the system which rendered it possible for a party, who could command only a small minority in the popular branch of the legislature, to continue their grasp on the reins of power. Such was the House in which Mackenzie first held a seat; such the practice of the government when he first entered public life.

During this session an event occurred that brought him into collision with two members of

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

the legislature who were afterwards active in his expulsion from the House. The new governor, Sir John Colborne, had been exhibited in effigy at Hamilton, and a rumour had found currency that there was a conspiracy to liberate Collins from gaol by force. Whatever connection these two subjects may have had, they were jointly referred to a special committee of inquiry. Gurnett had stated in his newspapers, that the intention of certain petitioners for the release of Collins was to liberate him by force, if necessary. On January 29th, Rolph moved that Gurnett be brought to the bar of the House to be interrogated touching this statement. When he came he refused to answer, on the ground that his evidence would implicate himself. Allan MacNab (afterwards Sir Allan) was among the witnesses called, and he refused to answer the questions put to him. On motion of Dr. Baldwin, he was declared guilty of a high breach and contempt of the privileges of the House. Being taken into custody by the sergeant-at-arms, and brought a prisoner to the bar of the House, he complained of having been tried and convicted without a hearing. His defence was not satisfactory to the House, and, on motion of Mackenzie, he was committed to the York gaol, under the warrant of the Speaker, during the pleasure of the House. Solicitor-General Boulton was also called as a witness. He, too, thought himself entitled to refuse to answer the questions of the committee, and, for this contempt

## PROPOSES POST-OFFICE REFORMS

and breach of privilege, was let off with a reprimand.

Mackenzie in the assembly soon became one of its most active members. He commenced as he ended, by asking for information and probing to the bottom questions of great public interest. In the committee-room he made his mark, during the first session, not less distinctly than in the House. As chairman of the select committee to inquire into the state of the post-office department in Upper Canada, he drew up a comprehensive report replete with the most valuable information and suggestions. The mail service was miserably performed; and matters were so managed as to leave a considerable surplus profit which failed to find its way into the provincial exchequer. Not a mile of new post-road could be opened, or a single post-office established, without the authority of the postmaster-general in England, who was necessarily destitute of the minute local information necessary for the correct determination of such questions. The postage on a letter between England and Canada ranged from five shillings to seven shillings and six pence. The tri-weekly mail between Montreal and the present city of Toronto was slowly dragged over roads that were all but impassable; and it was a standing wonder how the mail-carriers were enabled to perform their duties westward. Mackenzie recommended, as the beginning of all efficient reform, that the department should be

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

placed under the control of the local authorities. He also laid it down as a principle that no attempt should be made to draw a revenue from the post-office; but that the entire receipts should be devoted to the securing of additional postal facilities. Complaints had been made, in previous sessions, that the colonists were taxed, without their consent, through the post-office department, and that the surplus revenue was never accounted for, a complaint which had been met by Attorney-General Robinson by a reference to Dr. Franklin, who was said not to have regarded postage in the light of taxation.

Nor was this the only committee of which Mackenzie was chairman. In that capacity he made a report on the privileges of the House and the conduct of returning officers at the recent election, and he afterwards carried, on a vote of twenty-seven against five, a resolution that the chief clerk, with the approbation of the Speaker, should appoint the subordinate officers of the House, except the sergeant-at-arms and any others appointed under the existing law.

During this session, Mackenzie carried various other motions and addresses to the government. On nearly every vote he was sustained by immense majorities. When certain powerful interests were interfered with, his success was not so marked; and on a few occasions he failed to obtain a majority. In those days, the assembly counted a

## HIS REFORM RESOLUTIONS

chaplain among its servants, and in accordance with the attempt, which had not yet been abandoned, to give the Church of England a position of ascendancy in Upper Canada, he was a member of that Church. On a vote of eighteen against fourteen, Mackenzie carried a resolution which struck at this exclusiveness by declaring that, during the remainder of the session, the clergy of the town generally be invited to officiate, in turn, as chaplain, and that their services be paid out of the contingent fund.

But the government was so fenced in that it could exist in the face of any amount of opposition. During this session it was entirely independent of the House for the means of carrying on the government. No money grant was asked; and the House was officially informed that it would not be expected to trouble itself with the matter. The Crown revenue, which came into its hands under an imperial statute of 1774,<sup>1</sup> sufficed to defray the expenses of the government and of the administration of justice; and any bills passed by the House, which did not meet with the sanction of the government, could be easily disposed of in the council.

In this session he brought before the House a series of thirty-one resolutions—a moderate number compared with the celebrated ninety-two of

<sup>1</sup> The Quebec Revenue Act, 1774, (14 Geo. III, c. 83), and its amendment, the Quebec Revenue Act, 1775, (15 Geo. III, c. 40).

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Lower Canada—on the state of the province. He therein took a position far in advance of the times. Contending for that right of local self-government of which the constitution contained the guarantee, he asserted the right of the House to control the entire revenue arising within the province; complained that money voted for the civil service had been applied to the pensioning of individuals in sums of from £500 to £1,000 a year; denounced the favours shown to a particular Church, pensions, monopolies, and *ex-officio* and criminal informations, at the instance of the Crown, for political libels. The necessity of making the Canadian judges independent was asserted in opposition to opinions expressed in high quarters in England. The unlimited power of sheriffs holding office during pleasure was declared to be dangerous to public liberty, especially as the office was often filled by persons of neither weight nor responsibility. The patronage exercised by the Crown or its agent, the governor, in the province, was asserted to be at variance with sound policy and good government. Though the importance of Canada to England as a nursery for her seamen and as a country consuming a larger quantity of British goods in proportion to the population, was insisted on, it was alleged that the discontent arising from the abuse of power was one of the causes that led to the invasion of the province in the War of 1812; the resulting losses suffered by the most active



## SIR JOHN COLBORNE

friends of the British power, and falling most heavily on the Niagara district, ought, it was contended, to be made good out of the territorial revenue of the Crown instead of being left unliquidated or allowed to fall on a poor province. The appointment of an accredited agent at the seat of the imperial government, was declared to be desirable. The resolutions constituted a budget of grievances, most of which have been not only redressed but forgotten.

The arrival in the province of Sir John Colborne, in the capacity of lieutenant-governor, had been hailed as the sure promise of a new era. The illusion had vanished before the close of the session, during which an executive council, which found itself in a permanent minority in the popular branch of the legislature, had been kept in office.<sup>1</sup> Mackenzie, who had been elated by hopes which were destined not to be realized, now uttered complaints where he had before been disposed to bestow praise. He had gone into the legislature with a desire to point out, and, if possible, remedy, what he believed to be great abuses in the government.

In the spring of 1829, Mackenzie visited New York, Washington, Philadelphia, and other places

<sup>1</sup> The following is a list of the members of the executive council with dates of appointment: James Baby, 1792; John Strachan, 1818; William Campbell, 1825; James B. Macaulay, 1826; Peter Robinson, 1828; and George H. Markland, 1828. One had held office for thirty-seven years.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

in the United States, with a disposition to view everything he saw there in *colour de rose*. The alarming sound of a threatened dissolution of the union even then fell upon his ears; he could detect in it nothing but the complaints of disappointed faction. While on this visit he wrote a long letter on the political condition of Canada to the editor of the *National Gazette*. The authorship was not avowed, and though various conjectures were hazarded on the subject, it is difficult to see how it could have been a question at all. The letter bore the strongest internal evidence of its authorship, and was, besides, little more than an amplification of the thirty-one resolutions he had brought before the legislature in the previous session.

The contrasts made between the government of Canada, as then administered, and that of Washington, could hardly be otherwise than of a dangerous tendency. An English statesman might make them with impunity; but if a Canadian followed his example, his motives would not fail to be impugned. So it was with Mackenzie, who claimed to be, in English politics, neither more nor less than a Whig. These contrasts obtruded themselves by the proximity of the two countries; and there is no reason to suppose that, in Mackenzie's case, they at this time implied any disloyalty to England.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> As the general election of 1831 approached, the misrepresentations of the object of Mackenzie's mission to the United States continued to be repeated with increased virulence and rancour. He met

## AN UNPOPULAR EXECUTIVE

During the parliamentary recess, a vacancy having occurred in the representation of York by the appointment of Attorney-General Robinson to the chief justiceship of the Court of King's Bench, the vacant seat was contested between Robert Baldwin, whose father was then a member of the House, and James E. Small. Mackenzie supported the former, who obtained ninety-two votes against fifty-one given to his opponent. Taking the assembly for our guide, it would be difficult to imagine a government administered in more direct defiance of the public will than that of Canada in 1830. The legislative session opened on January 8th; and in the address in reply to the speech of the governor, the House was unanimous in demanding the dismissal of the executive council. "We feel unabated solicitude," said the representatives of the people, "about the administration of public justice, and entertain a settled conviction that the continuance about your Excellency of those advisers, who, from the unhappy policy they have pursued in the late

them by the publication of a letter he received from the chief clerk of the Department of State, dated Washington, July 28th, 1830, which concludes as follows: "I have just received a letter from Mr. Van Buren, the secretary, dated at Albany, the 23d of this month, expressly authorizing me to deny all knowledge of or belief, on his part, in the revolutionary designs imputed to you, as I now have the honour of doing, and to state, moreover, that he has not the smallest ground for believing that your visit had anything political for its object. He directs me also to add that, if the president were not likewise absent from the seat of government, he is well persuaded he would readily concur in the declaration which I have thus had the honour of making in his behalf."

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

administration, have long deservedly lost the confidence of the country, is highly inexpedient, and calculated seriously to weaken the expectations of the people from the impartial and disinterested justice of His Majesty's government." The House was unanimous in desiring the removal of the advisers of the governor ; but a discussion arose upon the proper method of accomplishing that object. Mackenzie hit upon the true remedy. "I would," he said, "candidly inform His Majesty's ministers that they do wrong to encourage and support in authority an organized body of men in direct opposition to the wishes of the people of the country." If there was any hope of making the wishes of the House prevail, it was by an appeal to England. The governor had, in the previous session, been appealed to by an almost unanimous vote of the House to remove his advisers ; but he had felt himself at liberty to ignore the wishes of the people's representatives. On a direct vote of a want of confidence, the government had, in the previous session, been able to muster one vote out of thirty-eight ; now their solitary supporter had deserted them. By the personal favour of the governor, they were still retained in office.

The governor received the address of the House with a curtness that revealed a petulant sullenness bordering on insult : "I return you my thanks for your address," was all he condescended to say. That it might not appear invidious, he used the same

## HIS REPORT ON BANKING

formula in receiving the echo address of the legislative council.

No member of the House had the same knowledge of financial matters, revenue, banking, and currency, as Mackenzie. There were more finished scholars, and more brilliant, though not more powerful, orators than he; but in his knowledge of the mysteries of accounts he was unrivalled. At the commencement of the session, he concluded an able speech on the currency by moving for a committee of inquiry. Of this committee he was chairman; and in that capacity made an elaborate report on banking and currency.

“The system of banking,” said the report, “in most general use in the United States, and which may with propriety be termed ‘the American banking system,’ is carried on by joint stock companies, in which the stockholders are authorized to issue notes to a certain extent beyond the amount of their capital, while their persons are privileged from paying the debts of the institution, in the event of a failure of its funds to meet its engagements.” On this system, which had found its way into Canada, Mackenzie was anxious that no more banks should be chartered; but, in case the House resolved upon that course, he recommended the following precautions as likely to afford some security to the bill-holders: “(1) That a refusal to redeem their paper should amount to a dissolution of their charter. (2) That the dividends be made out of the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

actual *bona fide* profits only. (3) That stock should not be received in pledge for discounts. (4) That stockholders, resident within the district in which any bank is situated, should not vote by proxy. (5) That either branch of the legislature should have the power to appoint proper persons to ascertain the solvency of the bank, or detect mismanagement, if they should see fit to institute an inquiry. (6) It should be stipulated that any Act of the legislature prohibiting the circulation of bills under five dollars, shall not be considered an infringement of the charter. (7) The book or books of the company in which the transfer of stock shall be registered, and the books containing the names of the stockholders, shall be open to the examination of every stockholder, in business hours, for thirty days previous to any election of directors. (8) Full, true, and particular statements should be periodically required, after a form to be determined on, and which will exhibit to the country the actual condition of the bank to be chartered."

He moved an address for detailed accounts of the different branches of the public revenue; introduced a bill—which passed unanimously at its final stage—providing that the publication of truth, unless with malicious intent, should not be a libel; and that the defendant in an action for libel should be entitled to plead truth in justification and to produce his proofs. This bill was rejected by the

## PROPOSED REFORMS OF LIBEL LAW

legislative council in company with more than forty others.<sup>1</sup>

As in the previous session, Mackenzie brought forward resolutions directed against the practice of filling the legislative council with dependent place-men; but they were not pressed on either occasion. If this point had been insisted upon by the House, which showed an inexplicable backwardness in

<sup>1</sup> "There is a fact, known to very few, in the life and labours of an old Canadian journalist which the writer may, perhaps, be excused for mentioning. It should interest all who have sympathized with the early struggles for a free press in Canada. A few years ago, in the course of a newspaper controversy which arose in regard to the story of the Upper Canadian Rebellion, and the personages who figured therein, the writer, in looking through the papers of the late William Lyon Mackenzie, came upon a draft parliamentary bill 'For more effectually securing the Liberty of the Press.' It was in manuscript, in Mackenzie's plain, bold handwriting, and showed marks of careful revision in order, apparently, to render its phraseology acceptable as a piece of parliamentary drafting. From the date which it bore—and subsequent enquiries verified the fact—the bill had been drawn in advance of any agitation for those salutary provisions of Lord Campbell's Act which have been of immense service to journalism wherever they have been adopted. The remarkable feature of the Mackenzie bill was this: that it not only contained proposed amendments of the law the same in effect as those embodied in Lord Campbell's Act, with a number of additional clauses that would have rendered that famous Act more effective, but it also embraced the substance of some other reforms which were afterwards engrafted on the Canadian law of libel. The bill had not been laid before the legislature, by reason, as far as we could discover, of the stirring events which drove its author into exile; but there can be no doubt that, had a good, instead of an evil, star shone upon his path, his libel bill would have been the precursor, in the old Upper Canada House of Assembly, of the great measure which, during his term of expatriation, was placed upon the statute-book and became the law of England." John King, Q. C., *A Decade in the History of Newspaper Libel*," p. 49.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

dealing with it, there is reason to believe that it would have been conceded by the imperial government.<sup>1</sup>

After the close of the session of 1830, the belief seems to have generally prevailed that the executive government would dissolve a House which had been unanimous in asking the governor to dismiss his advisers. The death of the king, George IV, settled all doubts that might have existed on this head. But before the intelligence of this event reached Upper Canada, the battlecry of party had been raised in anticipation of a dissolution of the new House. In the month of July, Mackenzie addressed a series of very long letters to Sir John Colborne, apparently intended to influence the constituencies. Several columns of the first letter were devoted to a complaint founded on the accusations brought by the government press against the loyalty of the assembly, and abuse of its mem-

<sup>1</sup> In a despatch by Sir George Murray, then colonial secretary, September 29th, 1829, "virtually" addressed to Sir John Colborne, as he was officially advised, the following passage occurs:—

"The constitution of the legislative and executive councils is another subject which has undergone considerable discussion, but upon which His Majesty's government must suspend their opinion until I shall have received some authentic information from your Excellency. You will, therefore, have the goodness to report to me, whether it would be expedient to make any alteration in the general constitution of those bodies, and especially how far it would be desirable to introduce a larger proportion of members not holding offices at the pleasure of the Crown; and, if it should be considered desirable, how far it may be practicable to find a sufficient number of persons of respectability of this description."



## DEFENCE OF REFORM ASSEMBLY

bers.<sup>1</sup> These attacks followed closely upon the publication of a despatch from Sir George Murray, colonial secretary, to Sir James Kempt, lieutenant-governor of Lower Canada, in which the imperial minister inculcated "the necessity of cultivating a spirit of conciliation towards the House of Assembly"—plainly showing the feelings of the British government on the subject. After collecting a long list of accusations against the dominant party in the assembly, he met the charge of disloyalty brought against the assembly and the Reform party in direct terms. "The people of this province," he said, "neither desire to break up their ancient connection with Great

<sup>1</sup> The Upper Canada *Courier*, published by Gurnett, described the House and the Speaker as follows :

"———Mouthpiece of a tyrant gang, [the House of Assembly]  
Whose hatred is levelled at all loyal subjects.  
Poor abject creature of a rebel race,  
I scorn thy brief and undeserved authority."

And again :

"A thing like him [the Speaker] will only breed contempt,  
And cause our House to prove a scene of riot,  
Uproar and noise. A theatre for spouting  
Disgusting trash and scurvy billingsgate,  
The scoff and scorn of all who witness it.

"Devoid of dignity, address, and manners,  
He seems a thing unworthy to preside  
O'er doting fools who loiter at camp meetings  
To hear old women prate in mawkish phrases.

"Out upon them [the House of Assembly] ; shouldst thou choose  
Him [Mr. Bidwell] Speaker,  
Thou'lt prove thyself a base and shameless faction,  
Disgraceful both to government and people."

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Britain, nor are they anxious to become members of the North American confederation; all they want is a cheap, frugal, domestic government, to be exercised for their benefit and controlled by their own fixed land-marks; they seek a system by which to insure justice, protect property, establish domestic tranquillity, and afford a reasonable prospect that civil and religious liberty will be perpetuated, and the safety and happiness of society effected."

It was one of Mackenzie's complaints that the members of the executive government were not responsible to the people of Canada through their representatives; and that there was no way of bringing them to account for their conduct. When the election contest approached more nearly, he put forward responsible government as a principle of vital importance. As a needful reform, he placed it on a level with the necessity of purging the legislative council of the sworn dependents of the executive, who comprised the great majority. Of Upper Canada politicians, we are entitled to place Mackenzie among the very earliest advocates of responsible government.<sup>1</sup> It is doubtless true that others afterwards made the attainment of this principle of administration more of a specialty than he did; for where abuses grew up with rank luxuriance, he could not help pausing to cut them down in detail. The independence of the judiciary,

<sup>1</sup> In September, 1830, he put forth the following programme, and afterwards frequently repeated its publication:—

## PROGRAMME OF REFORMS

for which he persistently contended, has been, like responsible government, long since attained.

His letters to Sir John Colborne are not free from remarks to which a general consent would not now be given. In drawing up an indictment containing a hundred counts against the administration, the constitution was not always spared ; but the system of administration then pursued would now find no supporters in this province ; and if we were obliged to believe that it was constitutional to sustain in power a ministry condemned by the unanimous voice of the people's representatives, the necessity for constitutional reform would be universally insisted on. If the British government, and even the British constitution, came in for a share of condemnation, it must be remembered that the oligarchical system, which reduced the

"To insure good government, with the aid of a faithful people, the following five things are essential :

"1. The entire control of the whole provincial revenues is required to be vested in the legislature—the territorial and hereditary revenues excepted.

"2. The independence of the judges ; or their removal to take place only upon a joint address of the two Houses, and their appointment from among men who have not embarked in the political business of the province.

"3. A reform in the legislative council, which is now an assembly chiefly composed of persons wholly or partly dependent upon the executive government for their support.

"4. An administration or executive government responsible to the province for its conduct.

"5. Equal rights to each religious denomination, and an exclusion of every sect from a participation in temporal power."

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

popular branch of the legislature to a nullity, was sustained by the imperial government, and that the Reform Bill of Lord John Russell had not yet been passed.

The letters to the governor were immediately followed by "An Appeal to the people of Upper Canada from the judgments of British and colonial governments." This "Appeal" was one of the mildest productions Mackenzie ever wrote. Free from personalities, it consisted entirely of an appeal to the reason and the better feelings of the people, and can be fairly judged from an extract addressed to the agricultural classes:—

"A kind Providence hath cast your lot in a highly favoured land, where, blessed with luxuriant harvests and a healthful climate, you are enabled to look back without regret upon the opulent nations of Europe, where the unbounded wealth of one class, and the degrading poverty of another, afford melancholy proofs of the tyranny which prevails in their governments. Compare your situation with that of Russia, an empire embracing one-half of the habitable globe, the population of which are slaves attached to the soil, and transferable to any purchaser; or with Germany, Italy, Portugal, and Spain, where human beings are born and die under the same degrading vassalage. Traverse the wide world and what will you find? In one place, a privation of liberty; in another, incapacity to make use of its possession; here, ignorance, vice, and political

## HIS FIRST RE-ELECTION FOR YORK

misrule; there, an immense number of your fellow-men forced from their peaceful homes and occupations 'to fight battles in the issue of which they have no interest, to increase a domain in the possession of which they have no share.' Contrast their situation with yours, and let the peaceful plains, the fertile valleys of Canada, your homes, the homes of your wives and children, be still more dear to you. Agriculture, the most innocent, happy, and important of all human pursuits, is your chief employment; your farms are your own; you have obtained a competence, seek therewith to be content."

Mackenzie's re-election for York was opposed by nearly every newspaper in the country; and the few that did not oppose remained silent. Some carried the virulence of personal abuse to an extent that caused him to complain of injustice; but he would neither condescend to reply nor to meet his assailants with their own weapons. The county of York returned two members. In the Reform interest stood Mackenzie and Jesse Ketchum; opposed to them were Simon Washburn and Thorne. So far did Mackenzie carry his sense of fairness that he publicly announced that he would "abstain from using the press as a medium of injuring, in the public estimation," those who might be opposed to him as candidates. The result was Ketchum, 616; Mackenzie, 570; Washburn, 425; Thorne, 243.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Shortly before the election came on, Mr. Mackenzie had given

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

The new House met on January 7th, 1831. No previous assembly had committed half as many follies as the one that now met for the first time was to perpetrate.

The first trial of party strength showed that the majority had passed to the official side. Archibald McLean became the new Speaker on a vote of twenty-six against fourteen. He was the first native Canadian elected to the chair of the Upper Canada assembly. His father had emigrated from Argyleshire, Scotland; and the son had, in previous local parliaments, allied himself with the official, or Family Compact, party. Personally, he was not obnoxious, even to the opposition; and his pleasing address was much in his favour. But his election indicated a complete change in the politics of the House; and the party now dominant in both branches of the legislature, as well as in the government, was subject to no check whatever. The way in which it abused its power will hereafter be seen.

It is impossible to note the change in the char-

“reasons,” occupying four newspaper columns, “why the farmers and mechanics should keep a sharp look-out upon the Bank [of Upper Canada] and its managers.” These reasons were based upon the refusal of the officers of the bank, in the previous session, to answer the inquiries, on numerous points, of a parliamentary committee; on the statement, in the evidence of Robert Baldwin, that notes had been discounted and refused discount from political reasons; on the palpable defects which then existed in the charter, defects which were such as even then no economist or good business man in Europe would have thought of defending. In order to exclude Mackenzie from the last annual meeting proxies had been refused.

## AN ACTIVE PARLIAMENTARIAN

acter of the House produced by the election of 1830, without inquiring to what possible causes so extraordinary a party revolution was attributable. The enigma seems to be not wholly incapable of solution. The opposition to the executive, in the previous House, had gone far to abolish all party lines. Very few members who served from 1828 to 1830 had any serious political sins to answer for in respect to that period. The purse-strings were held by the executive. Holding the Crown revenues independent of the legislature, it could wield the influence which money gives ; and, in a young colony, poor and struggling, this was necessarily considerable. The state of the representation was, in some respects, worse than that in the unreformed House of Commons. The session was not very old when Mackenzie moved for a committee of inquiry on the subject. On a vote of twenty-eight against eleven the House granted the committee ; and after two attempts on the part of the officials and their friends to break the force of the conclusion arrived at, Mackenzie got a committee of his own nomination.

It had already become evident that, even in the present House, Mackenzie would frequently get his own way, and that he would give no end of trouble to the official party. He brought forward motions which the House, in spite of its adverse composition, did not venture to reject, and they were sometimes accepted without opposition. He carried a motion of inquiry into the fees, sal-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

aries, pensions, and rewards, paid out of that portion of the revenue which was not at the disposal of the legislature, as well as a motion for a return of all sums paid out of the same source to religious denominations. He made strong efforts to effect a reform in the very defective system of banking which then prevailed. The friends of bank mystery had been obliged to give way, and to allow regular returns of the Bank of Upper Canada to be made to the government. On this subject Mackenzie did not carry his motion, but he compelled those who opposed him to yield much of what he contended for.

If a member who gave the official party so much trouble could be got rid of, how smoothly things might be expected to glide along in the House as at present constituted. Could a vote of expulsion not be carried? Previous to the general election, Mackenzie had distributed, at his own expense, several copies of the journals of the House, unaccompanied by comment and precisely in the shape in which they were printed by the House. The declared object of the distribution was to give the voters in different places the means of referring to the official record of the votes and proceedings of the House, in order that they might be able to trace every vote, motion, and resolution of their late representatives, and to ascertain when they were absent and when present; and also whether their votes were acceptable or not. It appears that



## CHARGE OF BREACH OF PRIVILEGE

it had been decided at a private party meeting, at which several of the leading officials are said to have been present, that this should be treated as a breach of privilege, and be made the ground of a motion to expel the member guilty of it. For this purpose the aid of a committee of inquiry was obtained consisting of Attorney-General Boulton, MacNab, Willson, Samson and William Robinson. MacNab was selected as the minister of vengeance; and it may be presumed that he performed his task *con amore*, since he had an old grudge to settle with the member on whose motion he had, in a previous session, been sent to prison for refusing to answer the inquiries of a committee of the House. MacNab based his complaint chiefly upon the fact that the journals had been distributed without the appendix. If the appendix had gone too, he owned "that he should not so readily have made up his mind on the question of privilege." The motion was that, upon a report of a select committee, Mackenzie had abused the trust imposed on him—to print the journals—by publishing portions of them, and distributing the same for political purposes, "thereby committing a breach of the privileges of this House." The solicitor-general (Hagerman) made no hesitation in denouncing the circulation of the journals as "altogether disgraceful, and a high breach of the privileges of the House." He deemed it monstrous to circulate them

“without the consent or approbation of the House,” and for the shameful purpose of letting the constituencies know how their members had voted. Attorney-General Boulton said the question was, whether, for this “bad purpose, any portion of the journals of the House could be published;” and he answered it by unhesitatingly declaring his “opinion, as a lawyer, that such a publication was a breach of parliamentary privileges, whether done with an evil intent or for a praiseworthy purpose.” Mr. Dalton had, in the previous session, published portions of the proceedings of the House in his journal, *The Patriot*; and if Mackenzie was liable to be punished, so was he. Every newspaper publisher was equally guilty.

Mackenzie had a clear appreciation of the effect which such an ill-advised movement would produce on the public mind. “If,” he said, “the object of this resolution is to do me injury, it is but another proof of the incapacity and folly of the advisers of this government, who could not have better displayed their weakness of intellect and unfitness for office, than by bringing me before the public as a guilty person, on an accusation against which the whole country, from one end to the other, will cry out, ‘Shame!’ If I have done wrong, every newspaper editor in London, in Lower Canada, and in this province, is deserving of punishment.”

Nothing could be plainer than that the charge on

## AN IMPORTANT REPORT

which it was sought to justify the motion for expulsion was a mere pretext. These considerations must have flashed upon the House ; and in spite of its subserviency to the administration, and in spite of the desire to get rid of Mackenzie's active opposition by removing his presence from the House, a majority, fearing the effect of the proceeding upon the constituencies, shrank from sustaining MacNab's motion. The vote stood fifteen against twenty ; the names of the attorney-general and the solicitor-general figured in the minority.<sup>1</sup>

Baffled for a time, but resolved not to forego their purpose of getting rid of a troublesome opponent, a new pretext was soon invented. It was pretended that Mackenzie had printed a libel upon the House. Before, however, the time came for the second motion for expulsion, the House had entered on another session ; and in the interval Mackenzie was far from having done anything to conciliate the dominant faction. On March 16th, 1831, the committee on the state of the representation, of which he was chairman, reported. It condemned the practice of crowding the House with placemen ; showed that the legislative council had repeatedly thrown out bills for allowing the same indemnity to members for towns as was paid

to <sup>11</sup> I do not, of course, intend to deny the constitutional right of the House to punish for libellous contempt of itself. But the power is one that requires to be exercised with great caution ; and assuredly it should not be abused by making it a pretext for the expulsion of a member who is found troublesome to the dominant party.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

to those for counties; recommended the modification of that provision of the law which gave a representative to every town having one thousand inhabitants, so as to include a portion of the adjoining country sufficient to give the constituency four thousand inhabitants; an approach to the equalization of constituencies, in other cases, was recommended in detail. It was shown that the executive had exerted undue influence on placemen who held seats in the legislative council; and had compelled them to change their tone and vote in direct opposition to their convictions previously expressed in their places. A few had had spirit enough to protest; but submission had been the rule.

The recess was of less than ordinary length, the parliament, prorogued on March 16th, 1831, having been again convened on November 17th. But the period had been long enough for Mackenzie to arouse an agitation which shook Upper Canada throughout its whole extent. Nothing like it had ever before been witnessed in the Upper Province. In the middle of July, he issued, in temperate language, a call for public meetings to appeal to the king and the imperial parliament against the abuses of power by the local authorities. He did not mistrust the justice or the good intentions of the sovereign. On the contrary, he showed the people that there were substantial reasons for believing in the good intentions of the king towards

## GRIEVANCE PETITIONS

the province. "If," he said, in a public address, "you can agree upon general principles to be maintained by the agents you may appoint in London, I am well satisfied that His Majesty's government will exert its utmost powers to fulfil your just and reasonable requests; your king's noble efforts on behalf of your brethren in England, Ireland, and Scotland, are an earnest that you have in him a firm and powerful friend." In these public meetings, York led off; and was followed by responsive movements throughout the province. Mackenzie was present at many of the meetings, and even in such places as Brockville and Cornwall he carried everything as he wished. Each petition adopted by those meetings was an echo of the other; and many appear to have been exact copies of one another. To produce a certified copy of the proceedings of the York meeting was sure to obtain assent to what it had done. A distinct demand for a responsible government found a place in these petitions. The king was asked "to cause the same constitutional principle which has called your present ministers to office to be fully recognized and uniformly acted upon in Upper Canada; so that we may see only those who possess the confidence of the people composing the executive council of your Majesty's representative." Representative reform, which then occupied so much attention in England was demanded. The control of all the revenue raised in the province was asked to be placed in the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

assembly; the disposal of the public lands to be regulated by law; the secularization of the Clergy Reserves; the establishment of municipal councils which should have the control of local assessments; the abolition of exclusive privileges conferred upon particular religious denominations; law reform; provision for impeaching public servants who betrayed their trust; the exclusion of judges and ministers of the Gospel from the executive council and the legislature; the abolition of the right of primogeniture—these items completed the list of those grievances of which redress was asked.

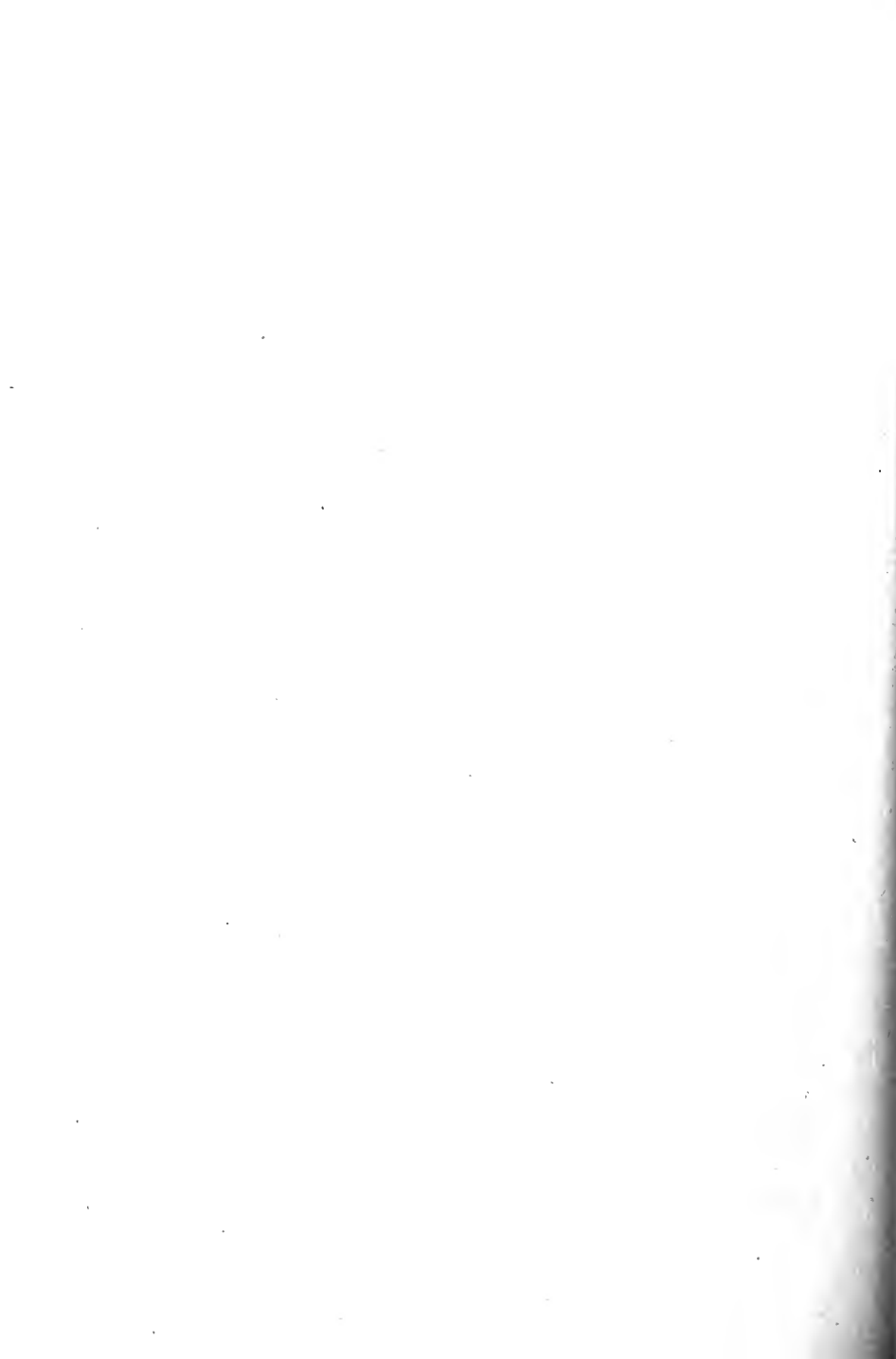
Mackenzie afterwards became the bearer of these petitions to England. The aggregate number of signatures appended to them was over twenty-four thousand five hundred. In spite of counter-petitions numerously signed, his mission, as we shall see, was far from being barren of results.

During the spring of 1831, Mackenzie made a journey to Quebec to pay a visit to some of the leading politicians of Lower Canada. He took passage at Montreal, in the steamer *Waterloo*, for Quebec. While on her way down the vessel was wrecked early on the morning of April 13th, opposite St. Nicholas, and the passengers had a narrow escape across the ice-jam for their lives. The vessel went down in deep water. The accident arose from the supposition that the ice-bridge at Cap Rouge had given way, and left the channel clear.

There is one incident connected with the landing

## A WRECK AND ITS INCIDENTS

of the passengers, which Mackenzie often related. A poor woman whom he overtook, in company with Mr. Lyman, making her way to shore, was unable to jump from one piece of ice to another, or was afraid to venture. Mackenzie threw himself across the breach, and she walked over upon his body.





## CHAPTER VII

### EXPULSIONS FROM THE ASSEMBLY

IN the last session, the attempted expulsion of Mackenzie had failed. The pretext adduced to excuse the proposal was so flimsy and untenable that a majority of the House shrank from committing themselves to it. A new crime had been invented, and a new pretext found. Before, it was a breach of privilege for distributing the journals of the House ; now, it was a libel constituting a breach of privilege. The House met on November 17th, 1831, and on December 6th Mackenzie's expulsion was proposed. The proceedings were initiated by a flourish about the privileges of parliament, the intention being to justify an outrage which it was proposed to perpetrate in their name. The preliminary motion affirmed, "that the privileges of parliament were established for the support and maintenance of the independent and fearless discharge of its high functions, and that it is to the uncompromising assertion and maintenance of these privileges in the earliest periods of English history, that we are chiefly indebted for the free institutions which have been transmitted to us by our ancestors." With a view to showing the animus of the proceedings, Bidwell, seconded by Perry, moved in amendment that so much of the journals as related to the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

previous attempt at expulsion be read ; but in a House of forty members he was beaten by a majority of ten. Bidwell returned to the charge, proposing to amend the resolution so as to give credit to "a free press, in modern and enlightened times, notwithstanding the many different attempts to destroy its liberty," a share in the preservation of the free institutions transmitted to us by our ancestors. This amendment being rejected, on a vote of twenty-four against sixteen, another amendment, embodying two extracts from articles in the *Colonial Advocate*, was moved. The first of these articles was a mere summary of the proceedings of the House on the subject of certain petitions praying for a redress of grievances, and the second, by far the more severe, certainly did not exceed the latitude of political criticism at that time constantly taken by the English press.<sup>1</sup> It would be easy to

<sup>1</sup> Here is the second alleged libel :

"EXCELLENT EXAMPLE OF LOWER CANADA.—The harmony which subsists between the governor-in-chief, the House of Assembly, and the colonial secretary, Lord Viscount Goderich, must be pleasing and gratifying to every true friend of representative government ; for it is evidently the consequence of a just and honourable course of procedure in these high parties towards the people of Lower Canada. We are glad to perceive, by Lord Goderich's despatch in answer to the assembly's petition sent home last spring by Mr. Viger, that all the judges are to be dismissed both from the executive and legislative councils ; that the revenues from the Jesuits' Estates are to be applied by the province to educate the Canadians ; that the power of regulating trade is to be exercised in future with great attention to the interests of the colony ; that provincial bills for giving corporate powers and making local regulations will be sanctioned ; that the right of the colonists to regulate their internal affairs is fully admitted ; that offices

## CHARGE OF LIBELLING THE PRESS

quote from leading London journals numerous examples of greater severity of denunciation. At this distance of time we look back with amazement at the paltry passions and narrow judgment that could construe these articles into libels on the House, constituting a breach of privilege for which nothing less than ignominious expulsion of the author would be a fitting or adequate punishment.

Mackenzie promptly accepted the responsibility of the articles, both as author and publisher. The Speaker, being appealed to, decided that Mackenzie had a right to be heard in his own defence. The latter then proceeded to address the House ; but

of trust and profit are to be more equally distributed in future ; that officers who have lost the confidence of the country are to be dismissed, if the complaints made against them are proved ; that all the proper influence of government is to be given to the satisfaction of the colony, and that any colonial law increasing the responsibility and accountability of public officers will be sanctioned by England. In the assembly we see noble and patriotic efforts made to increase the happiness of the people, enlighten their understandings, and watch diligently over their rights and privileges ; and on the part of the governor-in-chief there does really appear to be a willingness to act with the House of Assembly, and faithfully to assist them in securing for the country the inestimable advantage of good laws and free institutions.

“ The contrast between their executive and ours, between the material of our assembly and theirs, and between the use they make of an invaluable constitution and our abuse of it, is anything but satisfactory to the friends of freedom and social order in Upper Canada. Our representative body has degenerated into a sycophantic office for registering the decrees of as mean and mercenary an executive as ever was given as a punishment for the sins of any part of North America in the nineteenth century. We boast of our superior intelligence, of our love of liberty ; but where are the fruits ? Has not the subservience

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

before he had concluded, an adjournment took place. Next day, Bidwell moved for a committee to inquire whether any libels had been published on the House during the session. The motion was declared to be out of order. The Speaker also announced that he had given an erroneous decision, on the previous day, in giving the accused the right of self-defence. But Mackenzie was allowed to proceed. He was not the only member of the House who published a newspaper; and others had, in speaking of the proceedings of the assembly, used much harsher language than he had. But the truth was, one party was permitted any latitude of language in dealing with their opponents. This had

of our legislature to a worthless executive become a by-word and a reproach throughout the colonies? Are we not now, even during the present week, about to give to the municipal officers of the government, as a banking monopoly, a power over the people, which, added to their already overgrown influence, must render their sway nearly as arbitrary and despotic as the iron rule of the Czar of Muscovy? Last winter, the majority of our assembly, with our Speaker at their head, felt inclined to make contemptuous comparisons between the French inhabitants of a sister colony and the enlightened constituents who had returned them, the said majority. In our estimation, and judging of the tree by its fruits, the Lower Canadians are by far the most deserving population of the constitution they enjoy; for they show themselves aware of its value. While judging the people here by the representatives they return, it might be reasonably inferred that the constituents of the McLeans, Vankoughnets, Jarvises, Robinsons, Burwells, Willsons, Boultons, MacNabs, McMartins, Frasers, Chisholms, Crookes, Elliotts, Browns, Joneses, Masons, Samsons, and Hagermans, had immigrated from Grand Tartary, Russia, or Algiers, the week preceding the last general election; for, although in the turgid veins of their members, there may be British blood, there certainly is not the appearance of much British feeling."

## HIS SPEECH IN HIS DEFENCE

been apparent in the prosecution of Collins, and the menaced proceedings against Mackenzie, while the newspaper organs of the official party were left undisturbed in their carnival of unmeasured abuse of opponents.

The speech of the arraigned member shows so well the unfairness of those who thus charged him, and the partiality of their methods, that the material parts of it are given :—

“The articles complained of,” Mackenzie said, “contain opinions unfavourable to the political character of members who compose the majority of this House, also opinions unfavourable to those persons who compose the executive council of the colony. The former are charged with sycophancy, the latter with being as mean and mercenary as any other colonial administration. It is alleged that to propagate such opinions is criminal and deserves punishment. Undoubtedly, if there is a rule or law, it is wrong to transgress it. But I know no law that is transgressed by propagating these opinions. Let it even be supposed, for the sake of argument, that the opinions complained of are false, though I firmly believe that they are perfectly true; if all false quotations and false opinions are improper, then all discussion, either in this House or through the press, must also be improper, for one set of opinions must be wrong. And if none but true opinions can be given or quoted by either party, then there can be no argument. The newspaper

press of this colony takes different sides on political questions. Four-fifths of the twenty-five journals published in this colony are in raptures with the lieutenant-governor, the councils, and the House of Assembly ; they continually laud and extol them to the skies for the wonderful benefits they are conferring, and (as they say) are about to confer upon the province. The remaining journals, comparatively few in number, but of very extensive circulation, disapprove generally of the manner in which public affairs are conducted. Shall they not possess the power to blame, if they think fit, that which the others praise ? May not they who find fault be in the right, and the others who praise in the wrong ? How are the people to know when to approve or to disapprove of the conduct of their rulers, if the freedom of expressing all opinions concerning public men be checked ? In English law, it is said that though discussion should be free it should be 'decent,' and that all indecency should be punished as libellous. The law of libel leaves the terms 'indecent discussion' undefined, and in old English practice, as Bentham justly remarks, what is 'decent' and 'what the judge likes' have been pretty generally synonymous. Indecency of discussion cannot mean the delivery either of true or false opinions, because discussion implies both ; there is presumed to be two parties, one who denies, and another who affirms, as with us, where twenty journals are in favour of the majority in

## HIS SPEECH IN HIS DEFENCE

this House and only five generally opposed to them. Would you wish all check from the press put a stop to? Assuredly there is no medium between allowing all opinions to be published, and of prohibiting all. Where would you draw the line? Those among us who may wish to conceal the abuses of our defective government will denounce the paragraphs complained of as libellous, because it is a point of great importance with them to keep the people in ignorance, that they may neither know nor think they have any just cause of complaint, but allow the few to riot undisturbed in the pleasures of misrule at their expense. They say West India negro law is admirable. The solicitor-and attorney-general have already gratuitously denounced the paragraphs before the House, as tending to bring the government into contempt and impede its operation. If the government is acting wrongly, it ought to be checked. Censure of a government causes inquiry and produces discontent among the people, and this discontent is the only means known to me of removing the defects of a vicious government and inducing the rulers to remedy abuses. Thus the press, by its power of censure, is the best safeguard of the interests of mankind; and unless the practical freedom of the press were guaranteed by the spirit and determination of the people of Upper Canada, it is doubtful to me whether this House itself, as an elective body, would be an advantage to the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

community. I rather think it would not. It is by no means an improbability that the electors of this House should sometimes make a bad choice. That I think they have done so now is evident from my votes upon most questions. It is by the liberty of the press, and the freedom of expressing opinions, that a remedy can be had for an unfortunate choice; the more the country knows of your acts, the more severely editors on whom it depends animadvert on your public conduct, the more will that conduct become a matter of inquiry and discussion, and the country will look into your actions and weigh your character thereby. If the people support a press and expect independent opinions from the editor, would you have that editor deceive them by praising the most notorious selfishness and sycophancy, and dressing these vices in the garb of virtue?

“If one man in a legislative assembly saw that he might promote misrule for his own advantage, so would another; so would they all; and thus bad government be reared and upheld. Unless there be a check by the people upon governors and legislators, founded on a knowledge of their character, governments will inevitably become vicious. If the legislature shall (as these proceedings indicate in my case) assume the power of judging censures on their own public conduct, and also assume the power to punish, they will be striking a blow at the interests of the people and the wholesome liberty



## HIS SPEECH IN HIS DEFENCE

of the press. Where bad judges, hypocritical governors, wicked magistrates, sycophantic representatives, can, by the doctrine of contempts, exercise at will a censorship over the press and punish the journalist who strives to promote the public interest by a fearless discharge of an unpleasant duty, misrule and injustice will be the inevitable consequence. It is our duty to watch the judges; but were they to assume the power of punishing editors summarily for animadversions on their conduct on the bench, how would the people know what that conduct had been, or learn whether we did or did not do our duty in striving to secure for them a perfect judicature? There is assuredly no security for good government unless both favourable and unfavourable opinions of public men are allowed to be freely circulated. To have the greater benefit in the one case, you must submit to the lesser evil in the other. But it will perhaps be said that the language of these paragraphs is passionate, and that to censure you in passionate language is libellous. Who shall define what is, and what is not, violent and passionate language? Is not strong and powerful emotion excited in one man's mind by expressions which in another man produce no such effect? Will you affirm that opinions ought to be put down if conveyed in strong language, or what you may be pleased to consider strong terms? This doctrine would leave to the judges the power of interpreting the law favourably or unfavourably in all cases.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Libel might thus mean one thing in York, and another thing at Sandwich. The freedom of the press has been for many years practically recognized by all factions, sects, and parties in these colonies; and each, in its turn, has had resort to that powerful lever in attempting to direct public opinion. Opinions both favourable and unfavourable, both true and false, have been safely promulgated, and truth and error advocated by opposite sides, of which I will now refer to some examples. It cannot even be alleged by my judges, the public agents for the Gore *Mercury* [Messrs. Mount, Burwell, Shade, Ingersoll, and Robinson], owned by the learned member opposite [Mr. MacNab], that that newspaper has changed and become more violent than at the onset. Mr. MacNab told us, in his first number, that 'believing decency and good manners to compose some part of virtue, we shall endeavour to exclude from our columns all selections or communications having in the least a contrary tendency. All personal reflections, private scandal, and vituperative attacks upon individual character, we openly declare we wish never to have even sent to us.' And, in the very same number, he gave several delectable verses as his own definition of this 'virtue,' 'decency,' and 'good manners.' I may as well give the House a specimen from his opening number, where he speaks of the majority of the last House of Assembly:—

## HIS SPEECH IN HIS DEFENCE

'Each post of profit in the House  
To greedy sharks assigned,  
And public records of the state  
Clandestinely purloined.

'The attorney from the Senate House  
Endeavoured to expel,  
Whose hall they made look like a room  
Where raving drunkards dwell.

'For months this ribald conclave  
Retailed their vulgar prate,  
And charged two dollars each per day  
For spouting billingsgate.

'Two years their saintships governed us  
With lawless, despot rule,  
At length the sudden change broke up  
The league of knave and fool.'

"After apportioning to your predecessor in that chair a due share of this 'decent' poetry, the learned gentleman opposite informed the people of Wentworth that their late representatives, of whom I was one, were so many 'juggling, illiterate boobies—a tippling band—a mountebank riff-raff—a saintly clan—a saddle-bag divan—hackneyed knaves'; and that they possessed other equally pleasant and agreeable qualities, which it appears his fine sense of virtue, decency, and good manners did not allow him to forget in his future productions, which my judges, his agents [Messrs. Shade, Robinson, & Co.], have taken such unequalled pains to circulate among our worthy constituents. I declare I think it a severe punishment to be obliged to seek for

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

specimens of 'the liberty of the press,' as practised by the majority of this House, in such a vehicle as the *Mercury*, but it nevertheless appears to me the best and most effectual way of exhibiting to the country the gross and shameful partiality of this proceeding. I will now call the attention of the House to Mr. MacNab's *Mercury* of June 9th and September 15th last. Courtiers are seldom slow in perceiving what pleases a government, and are always ready to use the means, however improper. It has been found no difficult road to the favour of His Excellency and his council to cast opprobrium on Mr. Ryerson, the Methodists, Mr. Bidwell, and others whom His Excellency had no friendship for; accordingly we find Mr. MacNab and the agents of his *Mercury* stating that Mr. Ryerson is 'a man of profound hypocrisy and unblushing effrontery, who sits blinking on his perch, like Satan when he perched on the tree of life in the shape of a cormorant to meditate the ruin of our first parents in the garden of Eden,' and that he is the ally of 'shameless reprobates.' My brother members go on and civilly publish in the *Mercury*, that my soul was going with a certain potentate of darkness to his abode; that I, 'the rascal,' had been guilty of 'dark calumnies and falsehoods—false oaths, false acts—with many other sins of blackest hue.' I will not read the production; it is too gross; but those who wish to refer to the proofs of 'good manners', afforded by those of my judges who

## HIS SPEECH IN HIS DEFENCE

circulate the *Mercury*, may have the perusal of the paper itself. In the *Mercury*, printed on the day this session was convened, I find that Mr. MacNab and his agents circulated (through the *Kingston Chronicle*) an opinion that I had been 'wickedly employed in exciting' the people of Upper Canada 'to discord, dissension, and rebellion.' I presume this was published as a fair specimen of the degree of politeness due from one member to another; for the two honourable members for Wentworth used precisely similar language at the great public meeting held last summer at Hamilton. This brings me to notice the meeting of the inhabitants of York last July, and the petitions to the king and this House, of which Messrs. MacNab and Gurnett, and their agents, give an account in their journals as follows:—

“‘The whole proceeding, however, is so superlatively ridiculous, and so palpably fraudulent and deceptive, that we find the utmost difficulty in taking the subject up at all as a serious matter, or in alluding to it with any other language than that of ridicule and contempt. And as these are also the feelings and the sentiments with which every man of common sense, of every sect and party in the province, looks at and laughs at those extravagant proceedings—always excepting the little knot of half a dozen disappointed and revengeful political aspirants who constitute the nucleus of the old central junto party, and of every other disaffected

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

body which has been organized under different appellations in this country within the last seven years; always, we say, excepting this knot of worthies, and those ever-ready tools of their dishonest purposes—the illiterate and mentally enslaved adherents of Ryersonian Episcopal Methodism—with these exceptions, we repeat, every man in Upper Canada thoroughly penetrates the fraudulent proceedings by which the party in question, through the agency of their hired tool, Mr. Mackenzie, are now attempting to attain their selfish and dishonest object.

“But the question naturally presents itself, how, in defiance of these incontrovertible facts, can so large a number of the people of the province be induced to give the sanction of their signatures to the complaints contained in Mr. Mackenzie’s addresses? This is a question, however, to which every intelligent man in the country is prepared to answer: “First, through the influence, direct and insidious, which the crafty Methodist Episcopal priesthood exercise over their illiterate, but well organized and numerous, adherents; and secondly, through the fraud, falsehood, or sheer humbug which is resorted to by Mr. Mackenzie at his pretended Township Meetings.”

“There is language for us, Mr. Speaker, language calculated to please the heads of the government, and intended doubtless as illustrative of the benefits we of the minority might derive from the liberty of

## HIS SPEECH IN HIS DEFENCE

the press. Let us now examine who are the accredited partners, public supporters, or rather, as they are called, agents of the *Courier*—Colonel Ingersoll, M.P., Mr. Mount, M.P., Colonel Burwell, M. P., your honourable colleague, the York bank agent at Dundas, the Hon. Counsellor Crooks, at Flamborough, Mr. Jones at Prescott, Mr. Berczy at Amherstburg, and a long list of officials. Will those gentlemen named, who have places on this floor, and who are all pressing forward this prosecution, be able to persuade the country that they are not parties to one of the most partial and shameful schemes ever hatched against a fellow-mortal? Well and truly does Mr. MacNab tell his readers in one of his numbers, that ‘HATRED can survive all change, all time, all circumstance, all other emotions; nay, it can survive the accomplishment of revenge, and, like the vampire, prey on its dead victim.’ The majority of this House, whatever may be their practice in regard to sycophancy, profess to dread and abhor the very name of sycophants; yet are they willing to use the freedom of the press to bestow remarkable titles on others. The *Mercury* and the *Courier*, and their agents, my brother members here present, in their account of the Hamilton meeting, jointly honour me with the appellations of a ‘politico-religious juggler’—‘mock patriot’—‘contemptible being’—‘grovelling slanderer’—‘wandering impostor,’ whose ‘censure is praise,’ and whose ‘shameless falsehoods,’ ‘foul deeds,’ ‘envious ma-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

lignity,' and 'impotent slanders,' point me out as 'the lowest of the vile.' All this it is expected I should quietly submit to, and so I do. Next, it appears to be expected that I should patiently endure the most insulting abuse on this floor from persons in authority under the government; and that, too, I have been found equal to. Thirdly, I must not call things by their right names in the newspaper called the *Advocate*; but either praise the most undeserving of public men, be silent as death, or go back to the freeholders of the country with the brand of a 'false, atrocious, and malicious libeller' on my forehead. If such shall be your measure of justice, I will not shrink from the appeal to the country. Not one word, not one syllable do I retract; I offer no apology; for what you call libel I believe to be solemn truth, fit to be published from one end of the province to the other. I certainly should not have availed myself of my privilege, or made use of the language complained of on this floor; but since I am called to avow or disavow that language, as an independent public journalist I declare I think it mild and gentle; for, be it remembered, Mr. Speaker, I see for myself how matters are carried on here; your proceedings are not retailed out to me at second hand. When the petitions of the people, numerous beyond all precedent since the days of Chief Justice Robinson, Jonas Jones, and the alien question, were brought into this House, praying for economy and retrench-



## HIS SPEECH IN HIS DEFENCE

ment, for the regulation of wild lands sales by law, for the abolition of Crown and Clergy Reserves, and all reservations except for education, for the means of education, for an abolition of banking monopolies, for a reduction of law fees and a simplification of law practice, for the equal distribution of intestate estates, for the establishment of the mode of trying impeachments, for assuring the control of the whole public revenue, for a revision of the corrupt jury-packing system, for the repeal of the everlasting salary bill, for disqualifying priests and bishops from holding seats in the two councils, for taking the freeholders' votes at convenient places, for allowing the people the control over their local taxes, for inquiring into the trade law of last April, for the abolition of the tea monopoly, and for an equal representation of the people in this House, how was I treated by those who press on this infamous proceeding? Contrary to all parliamentary usage, the petitions were consigned to a select committee chiefly composed of the bitter enemies of the improvements prayed for, and myself and the other members who introduced them excluded by your vote. My motions for referring these petitions to their known friends, in order that through them bills agreeable to the wishes of the country might be brought before you, were negatived at the request of a member who has openly abandoned the principles which procured him a seat on this floor and a silver cup elsewhere, and adopted a course

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

which has elevated him to the rank of a deputy Crown clerk, a justice of the quorum, and a favourite in the circle of officials at the west end of this city ; in more vulgar language, ‘he has turned his coat,’ and, I might add, ‘his waistcoat also.’ [Cries of order.] The honourable member for Frontenac [Mr. Thomson], who has made these several somersaults for his convenience, is a public journalist, and consequently, like me, a dealer in opinions. In his Kingston *Herald* of October 26th last, he calls the petitions of the country, with the consideration of which this House has since entrusted him, a ‘humbug,’ and tells his brother member [Mr. Buell] that he ‘must plead guilty, if it be “illiberal and unjust” to expose the unprincipled conduct of an individual [meaning myself] whom we [meaning himself] conceive to be an enemy to our country, and a promoter of discord and disaffection.’ What a generous, just, unbiased, and impartial judge he will make in his own cause, Mr. Speaker, on the present occasion !

“Again, speaking of the address to His Majesty, which has already been signed by ten thousand freeholders and inhabitants, he uses the following terms in the *Herald* of July last :—

“‘We need not inform our readers that the uncalled for, and, as the *Patriot* justly designates it, “impertinent” address, is the production of Mr. Mackenzie of the *Colonial Advocate*, whose object is to excite discontent in the minds of the farmers

## HIS SPEECH IN HIS DEFENCE

within the sphere of his influence, and at the same time to offer a deliberate insult to the legislature of which he happens to be a member.' The honourable gentleman assumes to himself the right of denouncing at will his brother representative as a traitor to his country, a promoter of rebellion, and for no other reason than that that member (myself) had originated an address to our present most excellent sovereign, King William, which ten thousand of our fellow-subjects have since sanctioned by their signatures! He declares by his votes on this question that he, as one of the majority in this House, may brand me with every infamous epithet which ill-will may see fit to embody in a resolution, but that I, as a public journalist, must be expelled and perhaps disqualified, if I once venture to hint at the glaring political subserviency of public men. Our late colonial minister, Sir George Murray, in a speech addressed to the electors of Perthshire, is reported to have said that 'It would be well if the people would at all times bear in mind that crowds have their courtiers as well as monarchs. Wherever there is power there will be flatterers, and the people do not always sufficiently recollect that they are liable to be flattered and misled as well as princes, and by flatterers not less mean, cringing, and servile, and, above all, not less false or less selfish than the filthiest flatterer who ever frequented a palace to serve his own private ends by betraying the interests of his master.' Mr.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Speaker, I never was so well convinced that crowds have their sycophants in Upper Canada as well as courts, as since I have had the honour of a seat in this assembly." . . .

The governor, whose nod would have been sufficient to quash these proceedings in a House swarming with placemen and dependents on the executive, had received, "with much pleasure," a petition from certain "gentlemen," residing in the county of Durham, in which the previous House was spoken of as "a band of factious demagogues, whose acts perceptibly tend to disorganize society, to subvert legitimate authority, and to alienate men's minds from constitutional government." And in another part of the document thus graciously received, the assembly was described as being composed of "unprincipled and designing men," deluders "under the dark mantle of specious patriotism."

So far as related to the decision of the House, it was to no purpose that Mackenzie exposed the gross partiality of these discreditable proceedings. The majority had marked their victim, and no argument that could be used would induce them to forego the sacrifice. Attorney-General Boulton, who seemed to have feared that Mackenzie would renew his defence, on the House resuming next day, moved to amend Mr. Samson's resolution by striking out the order for hearing the accused in his defence, and it was carried. On the same day, the House, acting as accuser, judge, and jury,

## EXPELLED BY A PARTY VOTE

declared Mackenzie guilty of libel. The vote was precisely the same as on the two previous divisions—twenty-seven against fifteen—a fact which shows, in the strongest light, how incapable was this partisan tribunal of deciding fairly upon a question of libel. By a party vote Mackenzie's guilt had been pronounced; by a party vote he was to be expelled.

On December 12th, the House declared the defence of Mackenzie to be a gross aggravation of the charge brought against him, and that "he was guilty of a high breach of the privileges of this House." They refused to strike a committee to inquire whether any other libels upon them had been published since the commencement of the session. The majority had no idea of exercising their tyranny in an impartial manner. Their object was to sacrifice their opponents, not to deal out the same measure of punishment to their friends. Among those who would have been found guilty, if the inquiry had been pushed, were some of Mackenzie's accusers and judges. The vote for expulsion stood twenty-four against fifteen, and there were four absent members belonging to the official party, all of whom would, if present, have borne true allegiance on this occasion. Attorney-General Boulton, acting as prosecuting counsel on behalf of the majority, described the accused as a "reptile"; and Solicitor-General Hagerman varied the description to "a spaniel dog."

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

The imperial parliament has, times innumerable, punished individuals for libels upon either House. A libel upon an individual member has always been treated as a libel upon the whole body to which he belonged. Admitting the force of English precedent, Mackenzie, if guilty of libel upon the House, was liable to punishment. But the articles complained of as libellous, in his case, can hardly be said to have exceeded the legitimate bounds of discussion; and they were not nearly so bad as many others which the House thought it proper to overlook, and of which, indeed, some of the majority concerned in his condemnation had been guilty. It was this gross partiality, this want of even-handed justice, which rendered the proceedings against him so odious. Some of the libels which, in his defence, he showed had been levelled through the press, at particular members of the House, against other members, reflected upon a previous parliament; but, if English precedent be worth anything, no right is clearer than that of one House to punish for libels upon a previous House. If the assembly could punish for libel at all, it could punish for libels upon a previous assembly. The punishment, in Mackenzie's case, was altogether unusual. Deprivation of his seat was wholly unjustifiable.

The feeling excited in the unbiased reader's mind, as he goes over this recital, will be no safe indication of the degree of public indignation aroused by this mockery of justice. During the

## PUBLIC INDIGNATION AROUSED

week of the sham trial, petitions to the lieutenant-governor were numerously signed, praying him to dismiss a House tainted with the worst vices of judicial partiality ; for the result had been foreseen by the preliminary divisions. On the day of the expulsion, a deputation from the petitioners waited upon the governor's private secretary and informed him that next day, at two o'clock, a number of the petitioners would go to Government House in a body to receive His Excellency's reply. At the appointed hour, nine hundred and thirty persons proceeded to fulfil their mission. They were received in the audience chamber, and, the petition having been presented, they were dismissed with the studiously curt reply: "Gentlemen, I have received the petition of the inhabitants."

But the precautions taken betrayed the fears of the government. Government House was protected with cannon, loaded, served, and ready to be fired on the people ; the regiment in garrison was supplied with a double allowance of ball cartridges, and a telegraph was placed on the viceregal residence to command the services of the soldiers if necessary. There were even then some who urged an appeal to force ; and the strange supposition seems to have been entertained that the Scottish soldiers would not fire upon them. Mackenzie checked the impetuosity of the more ardent spirits who advised violent measures. He had strong confidence in the disposition of the new Reform

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

ministry in England to do justice to the province ; and he inculcated the necessity of patience.

What his enemies intended to make the day of his humiliation and ruin, proved the day of his triumph. The violence exercised towards him by the dominant faction won for him the sympathies of the people. After the return of the petitioners from the Government House, they proceeded to the residence of Mackenzie, largely reinforced. The man rejected by the assembly as a libeller was carried through the streets amidst the acclamations of the populace, who took this emphatic way of testifying their approbation of his conduct, and their determination to uphold the rights of a free press, which they felt had been outraged in his person. Among other places, the procession stopped at the Parliament House and cheered. They were cheers of triumph and defiance, telling how quickly the decision of the assembly had been reversed by that public opinion to which all elective bodies are ultimately accountable. At the office of the *Guardian* newspaper, then edited by the Rev. Egerton Ryerson, who had warmly espoused the cause of Mackenzie, the procession halted to give three cheers. From a window of the Sun Hotel, Mackenzie addressed the people ; and cheers were given for the "Sailor King," and for Earl Grey and the Reform ministry. When Mackenzie had retired, the meeting was reorganized, and resolutions were passed sustaining the course he had taken as a



## A POPULAR HERO

politician and a journalist; complaining of the reply of the governor to the petitioners as unsatisfactory and insulting; asserting the propriety of petitioning the sovereign to send to the province, in future, civil instead of military governors; and pledging the meeting, as a mark of their approbation of his conduct, to present Mackenzie with "a gold medal accompanied by an appropriate inscription and address."

At the same sitting at which the expulsion of Mackenzie had been decreed, the House had ordered the issue of a new writ for the election of a member in his place. The election was held on January 2nd. Over two thousand persons were present. There was a show of opposition made to the re-election of Mackenzie. Mr. Street was nominated. Forty sleighs had come into town in the morning to escort Mackenzie to the polling place. An hour and a half after the poll opened, Mr. Street, having received only one vote, against one hundred and nineteen cast for Mackenzie, abandoned the hopeless contest.

After the close of the poll, came the presentation of the gold medal, which was accounted "a superb piece of workmanship." On one side were the rose, the thistle and the shamrock, encircled by the words, "His Majesty King William IV, the people's friend." On the reverse was the inscription: "Presented to William L. Mackenzie, Esq., by his constituents of the county of York, U. C., as a

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

token of their approbation of his political career. January 2, 1832." The massive cable chain, attached to the medal, contained forty links of about one inch each in length.

When Mackenzie returned to the House with the unanimous approbation of his constituents, the question of re-expulsion was immediately brought up. While he stood at the bar of the House waiting to be sworn in, the question was raised, but the majority of the House seemed disinclined to incur the odium of a second expulsion, an amendment to proceed to the order of the day being carried by a vote of twenty-four against twenty. The motion was met by hisses below the bar, which were only suppressed by a threat to clear the House of strangers. The crowd of voters, who had accompanied their re-elected representative to York, pushed their way into the House. An attempt was made to prevent their entering the lobby; but they forced through the outer door and gained an entrance.

The movers in the business had not put the case very skilfully. No new libel had been charged, and the only offence that concerned the House consisted of an attempt to justify what the majority had previously voted a libel and a breach of privilege. The question raised was rather one of disability than of any new offence. It was probably owing to the fact that the majority saw this ground to be untenable that they refused to sanction the

## MOTION FOR ANOTHER EXPULSION

motion. The House had an undoubted right to expel any member for adequate cause ; but it had no right to create a disability unknown to the law.

Hagerman felt that it was necessary, in bringing up the question of the re-expulsion, to go upon the ground of a new libel upon the House. He therefore moved, January 6th, a resolution declaring certain matter which had appeared in the *Colonial Advocate* of the previous day, and of which Mackenzie admitted himself to be the author, to be a false, scandalous, and malicious libel upon the House, and a high breach of its privileges, and that the author be expelled the House, and declared unworthy to hold a seat therein. Hagerman had the prudence to leave out of view the general censures on the executive council, and the demand for the dismissal of himself and Attorney-General Boulton, which were to be found in the article, part of which he brought forward as a ground for expelling the author from the House. It is not to be supposed, however, that he was insensible to these reflections ; and the imperial government afterwards took the advice of Mackenzie to dismiss both these functionaries. One of the principal grounds of that dismissal was the part they took in the expulsion of a political opponent from the House, upon pretexts that were deemed to be constitutionally untenable.

Only one hour was given to Mackenzie to prepare his defence, during which the House adjourned.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

On its re-assembling, the clerk, at the request of the accused, read the whole of the article,—part of which was complained of as a libel upon the House,—extending to more than five newspaper columns. Such an article would not now arrest the attention of the House, much less cause its author to be punished for libel in any shape. Whether, technically speaking, it was libellous or not, it was far less so than many articles in other newspapers, some of them written by members of the assembly, the writers of which were neither prosecuted in the courts nor expelled from the House.

Solicitor-General Hagerman showed a disposition to carry the abuse of privilege as far as the most despotic sovereign had ever carried the abuse of prerogative. That he had no natural dislike of libels he clearly proved by the profuse use he made of them under cover of that very privilege in the name of which he asked the expulsion of a fellow-member. He described Mackenzie as “the worst of slanderers,” who “would govern by means of the knife, and walk over the bleeding bodies of his victims.” Of the minority of the House, he said, if they continued there, they “would continue as slanderers, or supporters of slanderers;” that “Mr. Mackenzie,” when he closed his defence, had “cast a malignant and wicked glare across the House;” and that “at that moment, he left what was most virtuous within the walls, and took away what was the most vile and debased.” When, in the

## A DESPOTIC ASSEMBLY

course of his defence, Mackenzie read extracts from the speeches of Sir Francis Burdett, Earl Grey, Lord Brougham, Mr. Macaulay, and others, the solicitor-general exclaimed that they were "base and diabolical." Here were libels a hundred times worse than those against which these words were uttered. Mackenzie attempted to convince the House of its error by showing that it was setting itself in opposition to public opinion; and pointed in proof to the approbation of his constituents, as shown both by his re-election and the gold medal that had been presented to him. After two or three attempts on the part of the solicitor-general to stop the defence, on such grounds as that the reading of extracts from the English press to show the degree of liberty allowed there to criticisms upon parliament was improper, the Speaker declared Mackenzie out of order. Having appealed against the decision of the Speaker, whom the House sustained by a large majority, Mackenzie resolved to attempt no more. It was, he said, a farce and a mockery for the House to call on him to make his defence, and then prevent his proceeding. He disdained to attempt any further defence before such a tribunal. He then tied up his papers, and walked out of the House amidst loud cries of "Order" from all sides.

The question was soon settled, the House voting the re-expulsion by nine o'clock, the second day of the discussion, on a division of twenty-seven against

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

nineteen. The resolution, forged in the mint of the solicitor-general, went much beyond a mere expulsion. It declared the expelled member incapable of holding a seat in the House during that parliament; thus assuming that a mere resolution of the House could create a disability to which nothing short of a specific law could give legal force.<sup>1</sup> Supposing this complaint of libel to have been well founded, the proper course would have been for the council to address the governor to order a prosecution, as was done by the House of Commons in the case of Wilkes, who was only expelled after he had absconded to France. But there was a very substantial reason for avoiding this course. No conviction could have been obtained. The appeal which Mackenzie now made to the electors of York was in his most impassioned style, and may be taken as a very fair sample of his powers of agitation.

"Canadians," he said, "you have seen a Gourlay unlawfully banished; a Thorpe persecuted and degraded; a Randal cruelly oppressed; a Matthews hunted down even to the gates of death; a Willis dragged from the bench of justice, slandered, pursued even across the Atlantic by envy and malice, and finally ruined in his fame, fortune, and domestic

<sup>1</sup> "If," says May, in his *Constitutional History of England*, "by a vote of the House, a disability, unknown to the law, could be created, any man who became obnoxious might, on some ground or other, be declared incapable. Incapacity would then be declared, not by the law of the land, but by the arbitrary will of the Commons."

## AN IMPASSIONED APPEAL

happiness ; you have seen a thousand other less noted victims offered upon the altar of political hatred and party revenge ; sacrificed for their adherence to the principles of the constitution, their love of liberty and justice, their ardent desire to promote the happiness of your domestic firesides. How many more sacrifices the shrine of unlawful power may require, none can tell. The destroyer is made bold by your timidity and the base and unprincipled triumph over your truest friends, because they believe you will show a craven spirit, and put up with every possible insult, however aggravated. The hired presses style you the tag-rag and bob-tail who assemble at town meetings, and in the legislature your most faithful members are daily insulted and abused as rebels in heart, and as the factious abettors of the libeller, the disaffected, and the disloyal. . . . Had Charles X profited by experience as did his brother Louis XVIII, the elder branch of the Bourbons had yet reigned in France. Louis was illuminated by his journey to Ghent, and stuck by the charter ever after. But it is said that our great men put their trust and confidence in the troops at Kingston and in this garrison. Do they expect to make butchers of British soldiers, the soldiers of liberty, the friends of freedom, the conquerors of the tyrant of France, the gallant followers of the noble-hearted Colonel Douglas ? Are these the men they expect to protect them should continued misrule bring upon them the indignation of an injured,

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

outraged, and long-suffering community? Do they suppose that men of honour would violate their obligation to their country and their God, and imbrue their hands in the blood of their kind and confiding brothers, to gratify the bitter enemies of their noble king? Surely the champions of British liberty are unfit to perform the drudgery of menial slaves! Surely the men whom our beloved sovereign has sent here to protect us from foreign aggression cannot desire to abridge our privileges! Their rights are ours—their history our history—their earliest recollections ours also. We acknowledge one common origin; our fathers worshipped together in one temple. Does the infatuated junto, who are now acting so foolishly, expect the bravest of Scotland's sons to sabre their countrymen merely because they do not conform to the doctrines of prelacy and follow the example of Archdeacon Strachan to apostacy and worldly wealth? Do they believe there is a soldier in Canada whose youthful heart ever bounded with joy in days of yore, on old Scotland's hills, while he sang the national air of 'Scots wha hae wi' Wallace bled,' and whose manhood has been employed in repelling foreign aggression, who would disgrace his name and the regiment he belongs to by increasing the widows and orphans of Canada? And yet, if such are not the expectations of our rulers, why do they trifle with the feelings of the people? What would a handful of troops be to the natural aristocracy of Canada, the hardy yeo-



## HIS ADVICE TO THE PEOPLE

manly who own the soil, even if the former were of the most ferocious class of human beings, instead of the manly and accomplished defenders of their country, covered with immortal honour and unstained laurels on many a victorious battlefield? I disdain to hold out threats, but it is time to speak with plainness. . . .

“We come, at last, to the leading question: What is to be done? Meet together from all sections of the country, at York, on Thursday next, the nineteenth instant, in this town, on the area in front of the court-house; let the farmer leave his husbandry, the mechanic his tools, and pour forth your gallant population animated by the pure spirit of liberty; be firm and collected—be determined—be united—never trifle with your rights; show by your conduct that you are fit for the management of your domestic affairs, ripe for freedom, the enlightened subjects of a constitutional sovereign, and not the serfs of a Muscovite, or the counterpart of a European mob! Strive to strike corruption at its roots; to encourage a system calculated to promote peace and happiness; to secure as our inheritance the tranquil advantages of civil and religious freedom, general content, and easy independence. Such a connection as this with our parent state would prove long and mutually beneficial; but, if the officials go much further, they will drive the people mad.”

To a certain extent, the majority of the assembly

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

had, by the injustice of which they had been guilty, gained their point. They had goaded their victim into the use of expressions which, in his cooler moments, he had never used. It must not be overlooked, however, that whatever there was of menace in his impassioned language, it was directed against the provincial oligarchy. A marked distinction was made between them and the "noble king," whose "soldiers of freedom" were the "champions of British liberty." If he was indiscreet, we must not forget the galling provocation to which he had been subjected in being not only expelled from the legislature for libels that others might print with impunity, but that, with a view of preventing his re-election, the organs of the official party had represented that he was loaded with a disability unknown to the law, the creation of the arbitrary will of the assembly. We shall see, as we proceed, that some members of the Family Compact shortly afterwards threatened to throw off their allegiance upon infinitely less provocation.

The election of a member to represent the county of York, in the place of the expelled representative, commenced on January 30th, Mackenzie being proposed, for the fourth time, by Joseph Shepherd. Two other candidates, James E. Small and Simon Washburn, presented themselves. Small stated from the hustings that "he did not come before the freeholders as approving of the conduct of the assembly in their repeated expulsions of Mr. Mac-

## ELECTED FOR THE FOURTH TIME

kenzie; he considered their proceedings, in these cases, arbitrary and unconstitutional. But, as they had declared Mr. Mackenzie disqualified, he had come forward presuming that the electors would see the expediency of not electing a member who could not take his seat. He opposed Mr. Washburn, not Mr. Mackenzie, who, he was satisfied, would have a majority of votes." Washburn, on the contrary, expressed his approval of the proceedings of the assembly in the expulsion of Mackenzie, of whom he spoke in terms of harshness similar to those used by the more violent of the majority of the House. Washburn retired on the second day of polling, much disgusted at having received only twenty-three votes. Mackenzie received six hundred and twenty-eight votes; and Small ninety-six. During the parliamentary session following this re-election, Mackenzie was absent in England, and while there, as we shall see, was again expelled from the legislature. In his absence from the assembly, the Bank of Upper Canada had been authorized to increase its stock to a very large extent. The bill was, however, vetoed in England, at the instance of Mackenzie, as based on unsound principles.

Alexander Frazer, a man of coarse manners and violent language, publicly threatened to horsewhip Mackenzie from his place in the assembly during the mock trial; and it was said that, within twenty-four hours, he received from Sir John Colborne a promise of the collectorship of Brockville. The

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

promise was faithfully fulfilled. This official approval of ruffianly conduct, which should have called down the severe censure of the House, was only of a piece with that which happened a few years before, when a number of partisans of the Compact, who wrecked the *Advocate* office in the proprietor's absence and under the eye of Tory justices of the peace, were rewarded with offices under the Crown. Some of these incidents in Mackenzie's life, coupled with the treatment which he constantly received from the official party, and from the despotic assemblies which decreed his expulsions from parliament, would have made many a public man an irreconcilable foe to British institutions. "Considering," said a Conservative journal, "the persecutions to which Mackenzie was subjected, in his long and brave struggle for popular rights and good government, his moderation was marvellous. What popular leader of our day, who could wield the power which he did, would endure half as much as he under conditions as galling? Not one. There is, however, a remedy in human nature against tyranny, that will keep us safe under every form of government."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The *News*, Toronto, December 26th, 1895.

## CHAPTER VIII

### MACKENZIE'S MISSION TO ENGLAND

**A**N interest always attaches to the career of an individual whom the public regards as the victim of injustice, whose crime consists of his having defended a popular right or contended for a principle. The majority of the assembly, in attempting to crush an opponent, had made a martyr. The expelled member had crowds of sympathizers in all parts of the province. Public meetings were held to denounce this arbitrary stretch of privilege. Petitions to the king and the imperial parliament for a redress of grievances, of which the expulsion of Mackenzie was one, were numerous signed. Of these petitions, it was already known, Mackenzie was to be the bearer to the colonial office, where he would personally advocate the reforms for which they prayed.

A counter-movement was set on foot by the official party. With the Reform ministry in England, this party was not very sure of its standing. What might be the result of Mackenzie's visit, armed with numerous petitions, unless some antidote were applied, it would be impossible to tell. The prospect which this state of things held out enraged the official faction ; and, in more than one instance, they resorted to violence, from which

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Mackenzie only escaped with his life by something little short of a miracle.

On March 19th, 1832, one of the public meetings called by the government party was held at Hamilton. Mackenzie attended by special invitation. As too often happens where two political parties attempt to outnumber one another, at a public meeting, great confusion occurred. On a show of hands for the selection of a chairman both parties claimed the victory; but the sheriff took the chair. The other party—represented by a local paper as being much the more numerous—retired to the court-house green, where an address to the king was adopted. After the meeting Mackenzie went to the house of a friend, Matthew Bailey, where he dined. A rumour had been circulated, in whispers, that a plan had been formed during the day to take Mackenzie's life, or at least to do him such bodily injury as would render it impossible for him to make his contemplated journey to England. Several of his friends apprised him of this, and urged him strongly to leave town before dark. About nine o'clock that night, when he was sitting in a parlor upstairs with a friend writing, the door was suddenly opened without any premonition, and in stepped William J. Kerr and George Petit. When asked to take seats, Kerr at first refused, but immediately afterwards sat down. He almost instantly rose again, and, walking up to the table and turning over the

## A MURDEROUS ASSAULT

sheets on which Mackenzie had been writing, remarked with much apparent good humour: "Well, Mr. Mackenzie, have you got all our grievances redressed at last?" Something more was said, when Kerr, asking Mackenzie to speak with him in private, was at once lighted down stairs by the unsuspecting victim, by whom he was followed. Kerr opened the street door; and, while standing on the steps in front, introduced Mackenzie to two or three accomplices, remarking, "This is your man." All at once, one of them seized him by one side of the coat collar, while Kerr seized the other. The candle was dashed to the ground, and they attempted to drag their victim, in the dark, into an open space in front of the house. Mackenzie grasped the door, and, struggling in the hands of the would-be assassins, shrieked, "Murder." One of the party then struck him a terrible blow with a bludgeon, felling him down upon the stone steps, whence he was dragged into the square in front of the house, where he received repeated kicks and blows, and his life was only saved by the opportune arrival of some neighbours with Mr. Bailey's brother. The villains took to their heels, except Kerr, who was upon the ground; and when he rose, he resorted to the stratagem of assuming not only the innocent man but the protector, saying, "Don't be afraid, Mr. Mackenzie; you shan't be hurt, you shan't be hurt." He then scampered off as well as he could after his accomplices; and next morning he was

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

heard boasting at the Burlington Canal—a government work of which he was manager—that he had saved Mackenzie's life from the attempt of a band of ruffians! The victim was found to be bleeding profusely, disfigured in the face, injured in the head, and hurt in the chest.

Kerr was a magistrate and a rich man, and had charge of a public work. For the part he played in the outrage he was brought to trial in August, 1832, at the Gore District Assizes, some person, unknown to Mackenzie, having laid the information. Mr. Justice Macaulay was the presiding judge; and, considering the relations of all the parties, it is proper to say that he showed the greatest impartiality on the trial, though there might be a question about the adequacy of the punishment awarded. A fine of one hundred dollars is not serious to a rich man, nor sufficient punishment for an assault of that aggravated nature which irresistibly carried with it the idea of serious premeditated injury, if not something more. The first blow would probably have proved fatal had not the bludgeon come in contact with the lintel of the door.

The example of Hamilton was followed in York. On July 6th, 1832, at a public meeting called to organize an agricultural society, a disorderly mob, who had left the meeting to cheer the governor, returned, bearing an effigy of Mackenzie, which they burnt, and then made an attack upon the



## HIS ARRIVAL IN ENGLAND

office of the *Colonial Advocate*. They broke the windows and destroyed some of the type, and were only prevented from doing further mischief by the exertions of a few individuals.

In April, 1832, Mackenzie started on his journey to England as the bearer to the imperial government of petitions which had, for the most part, been born of the excitement arising out of his expulsions from the legislative assembly. The organs of the official party affected to be merry at the idea of a man, who had been twice expelled from the legislature and declared incapable of sitting during that parliament, taking a budget of grievances to Downing Street and expecting to obtain a hearing. But they had reckoned without their host, as the event proved.

He arrived in London in time to witness the third reading of the Reform Bill in the House of Lords. Here he made the acquaintance of O'Connell, the great Irish agitator, Cobbett, Joseph Hume, Lord Goderich, Earl Grey and Mr. Stanley, and he has left interesting sketches of most of these men. Of the prime minister he wrote: "Well does Earl Grey merit the high station and distinguished rank to which he has been called; truth and sincerity are stamped on his open, manly, English countenance; intelligence and uprightness are inscribed on all his actions. You may read his speech in the *Times* or *Chronicle*; you may imagine to yourself the noblest, happiest

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

manner in which such sentiments might be delivered by a sincere and highly gifted patriot; still your conception will fall far short of the reality of the admirable address and manner of the prime minister of Britain. His Lordship had need of neither the peerage nor the post he fills to point him out as one of the first among men; he was, he is, one of that aristocracy of nature which in any free country are found among the pillars of its liberties, and in any despotism among the foremost to break the tyrant's yoke, or perish in attempting it."

Mackenzie also made the acquaintance of Mr. Rintoul, editor of the *Spectator*, and of Mr. Black, editor of the *Morning Chronicle*, which then held almost as important a position as the *Times*; and he was enabled to address to the British public, through these journals, any observations he had to make on the subject of Canada.

Of all the members of the House of Commons, Joseph Hume rendered the greatest assistance to Mackenzie. He was on the best terms of friendship with the ministry, though he kept his seat on the opposition benches and pursued that independent course which seemed to be the only one possible to him. When he laid before the House of Commons the petition of which Mackenzie was the bearer, he did so not only with the knowledge and consent of the government, but "he was happy to have the assurance of Viscount Goderich [secretary of state

## AT THE COLONIAL OFFICE

for the colonies], that his Lordship was busy inquiring into the grievances complained of with a view of affording relief." Mackenzie had, by this time, already had an interview with the colonial minister, and, in company with Hume, Viger—who had gone to England on a similar mission on behalf of Lower Canada—and George Ryerson—who had gone to England on behalf of the Methodist Conference—he was to have another interview in a few days.

This interview, at which all the four gentlemen named met Lord Goderich, took place on July 2nd, and lasted nearly three hours. The attempts made to lessen Mackenzie's influence, in the shape of attacks by political opponents in Canada, and the various forms they had taken, appeared to go for nothing with Viscount Goderich. Mackenzie could not trace the effect of such influence. "The conduct of the colonial minister" he found to be "friendly and conciliatory; his language free from asperity; and I left him," adds Mackenzie, "with the impression strongly imprinted on my mind that he sincerely desired our happiness as a colony, and that it was his wish to act an impartial part." The agent of the Upper Canada petitioners explained at length his views of the state of Upper Canada. Viscount Goderich encouraged the deputation to lay the petitions before the House of Commons; and he appears to have recognized, from the first, the substantial nature of many of the grievances

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

which were subjects of complaint. If the ministry had shown a disposition to treat the petitions as of no great importance, Hume would have brought the whole subject of the political condition of Upper Canada before the House of Commons; and as he would have been warmly seconded by O'Connell and others, an effective demonstration would have been made. Although George Ryerson was present at this interview, he took no part in any of the questions discussed except those relating to religion and education, with which he had been specially charged.

On August 3rd, Mackenzie, in company with Hume and Viger, had a second interview with Viscount Goderich at the colonial office, lasting about an hour and a half. These interviews were not obtained through the intercession of Hume, by whom the agent had first been introduced to members of the ministry, but at the request of Mackenzie, who desired that the three other gentlemen might be included with himself. He afterwards had several interviews with Lord Goderich at which no third person was present. The colonial minister listened to Mackenzie's statements with the greatest attention, though he observed a decorous reticence as to his own views; and even when he had come to conclusions, he did not generally announce them till he had put them into an official shape. In one of these interviews, Mackenzie complained that the revenue

## DECLINES A LUCRATIVE OFFICE

of the post-office department, in Upper Canada, was not accounted for, whereupon Lord Goderich proposed to divide the management of the department in Canada, and give Mackenzie control of the western section, with all the accruing emoluments. Mackenzie replied by saying: "So far as I am concerned, the arrangement would be a very beneficial one, as I could not fail to be personally much benefited by it; but your Lordship must see," he added, "that the evil I complain of would be perpetuated instead of being remedied. I must therefore decline the offer." Mackenzie estimated the value of the office, undivided, at fifteen thousand dollars a year, one-half of which he would have obtained if he had accepted Lord Goderich's offer. This was in strict accordance with the whole practice of his life. With every opportunity of acquiring competence, and even wealth, he lived a large portion of his life in poverty, and died under the pressure of pecuniary embarrassment.

Mackenzie was not received at the colonial office in a representative character—he was delegated by the York "Central Committee of the Friends of Civil and Religious Liberty"—but as an individual having an interest in the affairs of the province, and a member of the legislature of Upper Canada. It was agreed that he should address what complaints he had to make to the colonial secretary in writing. He made the fullest use of this privilege, writing long documents on a great number of

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

subjects in which Canadians were then interested. It was in the preparation of these papers that he performed the extraordinary feat, referred to in a previous part of this work, of continuing to write six days and six nights, without ever going to bed, and only falling asleep occasionally, for a few minutes, at his desk. He ventured to predict that, unless the system of government in Upper Canada were ameliorated, the result must be civil war. "Against gloomy prophecies of this nature," Lord Goderich replied, "every man conversant with public business must learn to fortify his mind," adding that he regarded them as the usual resource of those who wished to extort from the fears of governments conclusions in favour of which no adequate reasons could be offered. Mackenzie often referred to this prediction; and, so far from having intended it as a threat, took credit for it as a warning of the inevitable results of the policy pursued, contending that, if it had been heeded, all the disasters which followed would have been averted. He at this time also addressed to the colonial secretary a number of documents, including a lengthy "Memoir" on the state of the province, embracing a variety of topics. To this and some other documents Lord Goderich replied at great length, on November 8th, 1832, and in a tone and temper very different from those in which the local officials were accustomed to indulge.

Lord Goderich at first stated the number of names

## A SUCCESSFUL MISSION

attached to the petitions, of which Mackenzie was the bearer, at twelve thousand and seventy-five. Upon a recount at Mackenzie's request, there were found to be twenty-four thousand five hundred signatures; but it was said there were other petitions signed by twenty-six thousand eight hundred and fifty-four persons, "who concur in expressing their cordial satisfaction in those laws and institutions which the other sort of petitioners have impugned."

While combating a great many of the arguments adduced by Mackenzie, Lord Goderich yielded to his views upon several points. Hitherto no indemnity had been paid to members of the assembly representing town constituences. Lord Goderich directed the governor not to oppose objection to any measure that might be presented to his acceptance "for placing the town and county representatives on the same footing in this respect." He also agreed to place upon the same footing as Quakers other religious bodies who had a like objection to taking an oath. It having been alleged that the local executive distributed the public lands among their favourites without the authority of law, His Majesty, upon the advice of the colonial minister, interdicted the gratuitous disposal of public lands, and requested that they should be made subject to public competition, with a view "to the utter exclusion of any such favouritism as is thus deprecated." He instructed the governor to adopt all constitutional means to procure a repeal of the law

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

which disqualified British subjects from voting at elections after their return from foreign countries; and also that "His Majesty expects and requires of you neither to practise, nor to allow, on the part of those who are officially subordinate to you, any interference with the right of His Majesty's subjects to the free and unbiased choice of their representatives." "His Majesty," it was further stated, "now directs me to instruct you to forward, to the utmost extent of your lawful authority and influence, every scheme for the extension of education amongst the youth of the province, and especially the poorest and most destitute among their number, which may be suggested from any quarter, with a reasonable prospect of promoting that design."

It had been the custom of the governors to excuse themselves from laying a full statement of the revenue and expenditure before the legislature, by pleading the restrictions imposed by their instructions. But Lord Goderich rendered this excuse impossible in future by the averment that "if the royal instructions are supposed to forbid the most unreserved communication with the House of Assembly of the manner in which the public money, from whatever source derived, is expended, such a construction is foreign to His Majesty's design." "Nothing," it was added, "is to be gained by concealment upon questions of this nature, and a degree of suspicion and pre-



## INSTRUCTIONS TO THE GOVERNOR

judice is naturally excited, which, however ill-founded, often appears in the result to be incurable." Coming to the question of ecclesiastics holding seats in the legislative council, Lord Goderich said it was expected of the bishop and the archdeacon, "that they should abstain from interference in any secular matter that may be agitated at that board." But, even under this restriction, Lord Goderich added, "I have no solicitude for retaining either the bishop or the archdeacon on the list of legislative councillors; but, on the contrary, am rather predisposed to the opinion that, by resigning their seats, they would best consult their own personal comfort, and the success of their designs for the spiritual good of the people." But, as their seats were held for life, their resignations must be voluntary; since, it was argued, there would be no justification for degrading them from their positions when no specific violation of duty had been imputed to them. If the expense of elections was so inordinate as represented, the governor was instructed to "signify to the legislative bodies that it is the earnest desire of His Majesty, that every practical method should be taken for correcting what would be so great an evil, by reducing the cost 'within the narrowest possible limit.'" In reference to an independent judiciary, Lord Goderich, anticipating the complaints now addressed to him, had directed the governor to suggest the enactment of a bill for that purpose. Thus, another point urged by

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Mackenzie and those who acted with him, when they conceived that Judge Willis was offered up a sacrifice to the displeasure of the local executive, had been gained.

Such are some of the concessions obtained by Mackenzie, during his visit to England, from the imperial government. The despatch of Lord Goderich was intended for the public eye, and its style was eminently diplomatic. On several points he differed from Mackenzie; and sometimes he succeeded in putting his correspondent in the wrong. Unfortunately there were reasons, as afterwards appeared, for doubting the sincerity of some of Lord Goderich's professions.

The reception which the despatch of Lord Goderich met at the hands of the Family Compact, shows better than almost anything else the lengths to which a faction, spoiled by a long course of unchecked and irresponsible power, would go. The legislative council, instead of placing it on their journals, took the unusual course of returning it to the governor. Mackenzie's correspondence, to which the colonial secretary had taken so much trouble to reply, they assured the governor they viewed "with the most unqualified contempt"; and the despatch of Lord Goderich, so far as it was a reply to that correspondence, they could not "regard as calling for the serious attention of the legislative council."

The legislative assembly discussed, at great length,

## RECEPTION OF THE DESPATCH

the question of sending back this despatch. After a heated debate, the House, by a vote of twenty-one against twelve, resolved not to allow the documents accompanying the despatch, and on which it was founded, to go upon the journals. A subsequent House gave such portions of these documents as Mackenzie selected an enduring record in the famous "Seventh Report of the Committee on Grievances." The newspaper advocates of the official party went a little beyond the officials themselves. The principal of them, the *Courier*, described the despatch of Lord Goderich as "an elegant piece of fiddle-faddle, full of clever stupidity and condescending impertinence."

But the end was not yet. The repeated expulsions of Mackenzie from the legislative assembly, in which Crown officers had borne a conspicuous and discreditable part, had attracted the attention of the imperial government. The objections which the colonial secretary entertained to these expulsions were early communicated to Sir John Colborne; and they were fully explained, in the summer of 1832, to the Crown officers, Hagerman and Boulton, and to others "whose official situation placed them in a confidential relation to the government."<sup>1</sup> The matter was first brought to the attention of the colonial office by Hume; and the authorities sent instructions to Sir John Colborne to desire the officials by whom he was surrounded not to

<sup>1</sup> Letter of General Rowan to Mackenzie, November 30th, 1833.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

be concerned in the repetition of so objectionable a procedure. But, notwithstanding this warning, they remained contumacious. While absent in England Mackenzie had again been expelled from the legislative assembly; and the attorney-general, opposing his constitutional law to that of the imperial government, argued for the legality of the course pursued by the House. Both the Crown officers voted for a motion to return to Lord Goderich the despatch and accompanying documents, and found themselves in a minority.

The dismissal of Attorney-General Boulton and Solicitor-General Hagerman, resolved upon in March, 1833, was the result of the discreditable part they had taken in the repeated expulsions of Mackenzie from the legislature, as well as for having, upon other questions, opposed the policy of the imperial government, and thus cast doubts upon the sincerity of its motives.<sup>1</sup>

On March 7th, Mackenzie had a long interview with Lord Howick, under-secretary of state for the colonies, at the colonial office; and it was at the

<sup>1</sup> Letter from the governor's private secretary to H. J. Boulton, April 29th, 1833:

"SIR:—I have the honour to acquaint you, in reply to your letter of this day, that the lieutenant-governor understands that the part of your political proceedings to which the despatch of the secretary of state particularly adverts, is that you and the solicitor-general promoted the repeated expulsion of a member of the assembly, although the constitutional objections to that course had been conveyed to His Excellency by His Majesty's government, and were, it is concluded, communicated by him to you."

## DISMISSAL OF CROWN OFFICIALS

request of that official that he put his complaint against the Crown officers into writing. Next day they assumed the required form; and two days later he had another interview with Lord Goderich, when, in reference to the Crown officers, the under-secretary remarked, "They are removed." But it appears, by the date of Lord Goderich's letter, that their removal had been determined on four days before.

When the despatch of Lord Goderich, ordering the removal of the Crown law-officers, reached Upper Canada, Hagerman had started for England, where on May 6th, while going into the colonial office, he met Mackenzie coming out. Boulton was at York, but soon followed. It is interesting to see how the official party, which had long claimed a monopoly of loyalty, bore this reverse. An article appeared in the *Upper Canada Courier*, attributed to the pen of the deprived attorney-general, containing direct threats of rebellion. The removal of these two functionaries was described as being "as high-handed and arbitrary a stretch of power as has been enacted before the face of high heaven, in any of the four quarters of this nether world, for many and many a long day." "The united factions of Mackenzie, Goderich, and the Yankee Methodists" were spoken of in the most contemptuous terms. Of the friends of Boulton and Hagerman, it was confessed that "instead of dwelling with delight and confidence

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

upon their connection with the glorious empire of their sires, with a determination to support that connection, as many of them have already supported it, with their fortunes or their blood, their affections are already more than half alienated from the government of that country; and in the apprehension that the same insulting and degrading course of policy towards them is likely to be continued, they already begin to 'cast about' in 'their mind's eye,' for some new state of political existence which shall effectually put the colony beyond the reach of injury and insult from any and every ignoramus whom the political lottery of the day may chance to elevate to the chair of the colonial office." The colonial secretary, it was added, by his course of liberality, had not only "alienated the affections" of the Boulton-Hagerman school of politicians, but had "produced the feelings of resentment, and views with regard to the future," which caused them to look for "some new state of political existence."

Hagerman arrived in England about the time the despatch ordering his removal reached Canada; and Boulton followed immediately on learning of his dismissal. Mr. Stanley, who had succeeded Lord Goderich as secretary for the colonies, restored Hagerman to his official position in the June following, within three months after his dismissal. It was afterwards officially stated that Hagerman's restoration was the consequence of exculpatory

## EFFECTS OF CHANGE OF MINISTER

evidence offered by him. Boulton at the same time obtained the office of chief justice of Newfoundland, where he soon embroiled himself with a large and influential section of the population, whereupon the imperial government relieved him of that charge also.

Mackenzie was discouraged at finding a portion of his success already neutralized. After recently expressing the greatest confidence in the justice of the imperial government, he now bitterly exclaimed: "I am disappointed. The prospect before us is indeed dark and gloomy."

The restoration of Hagerman seems to have been due as much, if not more, to the change that had taken place in the administration of the colonial office as to the exculpatory evidence he had offered. Lord Goderich, so long as he retained the seals, continued to court interviews with Mackenzie, and to solicit information from him on the affairs of Canada. Thus on March 27th, 1833, Lord Howick wrote him: "I am desired by his Lordship to acquaint you that he is disposed to think that much advantage might be derived from a personal communication from yourself and Mr. Viger, either to this place, the postmaster-general, or the secretary of the post-office, on the questions which have been agitated in Upper and Lower Canada respecting the post-office in those provinces." If his known intention to leave London in a few days would prevent a personal interview, Mackenzie was re-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

requested to put any suggestions he might have to make into writing. He thereupon drew up a scheme of post-office reform for the province, supporting his recommendation by a number of documents, including several reports on the subject by committees of the Houses of Assembly in Upper and Lower Canada. The request for an interview, on the part of Lord Goderich, was repeated; but when that gentleman was about resigning the administration of the colonial office, he directed that the whole matter be left over for the determination of Mr. Stanley. The new colonial minister decided to send for Mr. Stayner, deputy postmaster-general at Quebec, to hear his explanation, before arriving at any conclusion; and Mackenzie left London the day on which Stayner arrived there. The result was to bring out information regarding the post-office revenue, which had been persistently refused to the demands of the House of Assembly. A return, which Stayner was requested to make for the information of the House of Commons, showed him to be in possession of perquisites to several times the amount of his salary. In the course of a long interview with Mr. Stanley at the colonial office in the month of May, Mackenzie strongly urged the necessity of giving the Canadians the control of the post-office revenue, as well as every other revenue arising in the province, for the reason that mismanagement must lead to discontent, and estrange the colonists from the mother country.



## REASONS FOR APPEAL TO ENGLAND

As has been already stated, Mackenzie successfully invoked the royal veto against the bill for increasing the capital stock of the Bank of Upper Canada, which was passed in his absence from the House occasioned by his second expulsion. This result was obtained after the objections to the measure had been stated at length to Lord Goderich, and after much correspondence with the Board of Trade. At the same time, and for similar reasons, the Kingston Bank Act was disallowed.

It may strike the reader, at this time of day, as singular that an agent and leader of a colonial party which claimed to be the exponent of a liberal creed and the interpreter of popular opinion, should be so ready to invoke the interference of the imperial government and the royal veto in the local affairs of the province. To a certain extent the seeming anomaly admits of explanation. On many questions, the local executive, acting through the Crown-nominated and dependent legislative council, thwarted the wishes of the people's representatives; and, under an irresponsible local administration, there was no effective appeal possible but to the imperial government. But, in some cases, interference against the decisions of the popular branch of the legislature was invoked. Appeals of this nature, unless some plain and obvious principle were violated, could hardly be justified.

The Rev. Egerton Ryerson, arriving in England while Mackenzie was there, was through him

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

introduced to the colonial office. Ryerson was delegated by the Canadian conference to submit a proposition for a union between the body it represented and the English Methodists. Without entering into the merits of the case, it will be sufficient to say that the course pursued by Ryerson, while in England and after his return to Canada, gave Mackenzie great offence, and he often, to the last years of his life, expressed regret that he had done anything to secure Ryerson admittance to the colonial office, which, in spite of the access which Mackenzie obtained, had for nearly eighteen months shut its doors in the face of Viger, who went as the delegate of the Lower Canada assembly. Baldwin, who afterwards visited London, was never able to obtain an audience of the colonial minister. Viger was in London long before Mackenzie, whom he had vainly solicited to accompany him, offering to bear the charge of his expenses.

Early in 1833, Mackenzie published in London an octavo volume of five hundred pages, under the title of *Sketches of Canada and the United States*. It treated of a great variety of subjects having no necessary connection with one another, and little regard was paid to method in the arrangement. The greater part of the book consisted of notes taken by the author while travelling, at different times, in the United States and Canada.

Before returning to Canada, Mackenzie revisited

## HIS VISIT TO SCOTLAND

Scotland in company with Mrs. Mackenzie, after making a tour of a large part of England. When he arrived in his native city of Dundee, he was struck with the changes that time had wrought. In a letter he says: "After a long absence from a country, one of the most striking changes noticeable is that in the age of the people. I have been introduced to cousins I left in the cradle, who are now grown men and women—some of them married, some studying law, some at college, some clerks in banks, some learning mechanical occupations, and others farming. . . . In the churches the same changes are visible. In the two Sundays spent here and in Strathmore we have regularly gone to the Kirk, sometimes to the Seceders; and sometimes to hear the established clergy. The walls of the Kirks, the seats, the pulpits, many in the congregation, I could remember from infancy, but the ministers were, some of them, new to me. There were enough, however, of old recollections to make these last visits to Scottish places of worship deeply interesting."

While in Dundee, Mackenzie made a settlement with such of his creditors as he had been unable to pay when he left Scotland, with their consent, for Canada in 1820. He sailed from London on June 25th, 1833, and arrived at Quebec on August 18th, after an absence of nearly eighteen months. In Quebec and Montreal he was pressed to accept

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of public dinners, but in both cases he declined, excusing himself on the ground of his long absence from Canada, and his desire to arrive at York as soon as possible.

To the last years of his life, Mackenzie was proud of the reforms which his journey to England was the means of effecting in the government of Upper Canada ; and he ever continued to cherish a grateful remembrance of the aid rendered him by Mr. Ellice, Mr. Hume, and others from whom he received assistance in the execution of his mission. Considering that he went to England in no official capacity ; that he was probably opposed in the private communications of the military governor ; and that attempts had been made by his enemies to disgrace him by thrice expelling him from the legislative assembly, it must be confessed that the success which he achieved was greater than that of any other man who ever went from Canada, in a non-official capacity, on a similar errand.

Of this journey the people's agent was left to bear the greater part of the expense. The actual disbursements were £676, of which he received £150. Payment of the balance was recommended by a committee of the assembly, but was never made on account of the supplies being withheld, and the country which he had served with such disinterested devotion allowed him to go down to the grave in poverty. Many years afterwards, in 1868, on the petition of Mrs. Mackenzie containing a statement

## HIS THIRD EXPULSION

of the facts and asking for the reimbursement of the expenses so incurred by her husband, the legislature of Ontario, on the recommendation of the government, granted her the sum of four thousand dollars in settlement of the claim.<sup>1</sup>

Mackenzie was expelled for the third time from the House of Assembly, while he was absent in England. The session commenced on October 31st, 1832. On November 2nd, MacNab, without waiting till the governor's speech was answered, moved that the entries in the journals relative to the previous expulsion be read. Solicitor-General Hagerman, who was then in possession of the constitutional objections urged by the imperial government against these proceedings, contended that though the county of York could elect whom they pleased, the House had the right, by a simple resolution, to determine the eligibility of whomsoever they might send ; and thus, in fact, to create a disability not sanctioned by law. Very little argument was required to convince the majority that this monstrous stretch of privilege was equally proper and expedient. The resolution having been carried, on a division of fifteen against eight, all that re-

<sup>1</sup> The government, upon whose recommendation the grant was made, was composed of Hon. J. S. Macdonald, attorney-general, Hon. S. B. Richards, commissioner of Crown lands, Hon. John Carling (now Sir John Carling, a member of the senate of Canada), commissioner of public works, Hon. E. B. Wood (afterwards chief justice of Manitoba), provincial treasurer, and Hon. M. C. Cameron (afterwards chief justice C. P. Division High Court of Justice, Ontario), provincial secretary.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

mained to be done was to prove or assert the identity of the William Lyon Mackenzie elected for York with the William Lyon Mackenzie previously expelled by the House, and to declare him ineligible to sit or vote in the House. MacNab thought it sufficient to assert the fact and the disability. He moved a second resolution to that effect. This having been carried, on the same division as the first, the third expulsion was decreed, for no other reason than that there had been two others—a ground which MacNab himself afterwards admitted to be untenable.<sup>1</sup>

This arbitrary and utterly indefensible proceeding was promptly resented, as it had been on the two previous similar occasions, by the constituency of York. In the absence of Mackenzie, his friends brought his claims before the electors. The electors considered their privileges invaded; and so strong was the feeling that no one ventured to come forward and declare himself the candidate of the official party. Mackenzie was therefore unanimously re-elected.

On his return to York and desiring to take the usual oaths, Mr. Fitzgibbon refused to administer them to him as the member elect. This time there

<sup>1</sup> When the question of expunging these proceedings from the journals came before the House on February 16th, 1835, MacNab admitted his error, and voted for the motion. "I am willing to admit," he said, "that the last words, which went on to say that Mr. Mackenzie was expelled by reason of a former resolution, were wrong, and that we had no right to expel him on account of a former expulsion."

## INCAPABLE OF HOLDING A SEAT

was to be no expulsion. The matter had assumed a new shape. It was contended that there had been no election. Bidwell brought the question to a vote. He moved, in substance, that Mackenzie had been duly elected for the county of York; that he was under no legal disability, and was by the law and constitution a member of the House; and that, upon taking the oath, which the law made it the duty of the commissioner to administer, he would have a right to sit and vote in the House. The motion was rejected on a vote of eighteen against seven. MacNab, who admitted Mackenzie's eligibility for election, contended that, though the county of York might elect, the House had the right to refuse to receive the member elected, thereby taking up an impossible position. He had voted that Mackenzie was incapable of holding a seat in the House during that parliament; though he held that the electors had a right to elect him. Perry asked the House to affirm a principle which is now held by the best authorities to embody sound constitutional law: that the House had no right, without the concurrence of the other branches of the government, to disfranchise any elector, or to disqualify any person from being elected, when such elector or person elected is under no legal disability; but he was able to command only thirteen votes in a House of thirty-two members. On a vote of eighteen against fifteen, the House then repeated its resolution that Mackenzie should

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

not be permitted to take a seat or vote as a member during the session; after which, a motion ordering a writ for a new election was carried by a bare majority of one, the minority being of opinion that Mackenzie, having been duly elected, was qualified to serve, and that in reality there was no vacancy.

Mackenzie went back to his constituents on December 16th, 1833, and was once more re-elected without opposition. It deserves to be noticed that, in his address to the electors, he declared "the grand defect in the colonial constitution" to be "the want of responsible government." The election being over, a series of resolutions were put to the meeting and carried unanimously. Among other things, they called for an inquiry into the conduct of Sir John Colborne, whom they charged with interfering with the constitutional rights of the people. The intention of a large body of the electors to accompany Mackenzie to the assembly at York being known, he entreated them to abstain from any acts of violence. They reached the House soon after mid-day. The galleries were soon filled; some were admitted below the bar, and others remained in the lobbies, for want of room inside. The result was awaited with great anxiety by the large body of electors, who were becoming indignant at being defrauded of the franchise by the repeated expulsions of one of their members from the House, or the



## DRAGGED OUT OF THE HOUSE

refusal of the majority to receive him. Perry rose to present a petition against a repetition of the proceedings by which the county of York had been deprived of half its legal representation. MacNab, in opposing its reception, was hissed from the gallery. It was now proposed to clear the gallery of the crowd of strangers with which it was packed; and when the operation had been partially completed, the sergeant-at-arms went up to Mackenzie, who was waiting below the bar to be sworn in, and ordered him to leave. He replied that he had been unanimously elected by the county of York, and that the writ had been returned to the clerk of the Crown in chancery, who was present in the House. If leave were given, he would prove that he had a right there. The sergeant-at-arms—MacNab, father of the member—then seized him by the collar, in a violent manner, saying, while he dragged him towards the door, “You shall go out.” A brawny Highlander, one of the four or five who still remained, interposed either with a blow at the officer or held him back. As soon as the door was opened, the crowd, who had descended from the gallery to the lobby, rushed forward; but before they could get in, the door was bolted and barricaded with benches, members and officers pressing towards the door to prevent it being forced. The galleries, which had only been partially cleared, were the scene of great confusion. The excitement was extreme, and the business of

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

the House was brought to a stand. The question of sending to prison the stalwart Highlander who had interfered with the sergeant-at-arms, was raised ; but a bystander remarked that " he feared it would be no easy matter to find the gaol, on such an errand." That official now returned to Mackenzie, and asked him to give proof of his election. This having been done, the officer of the House informed the Speaker, from whom he received orders to clear the space below the bar of strangers, that Mackenzie claimed to remain as a member. The Speaker urged the commissioners to refuse to administer the oaths, and afterwards decided that Mackenzie was a stranger because he had not taken them. MacNab (the member) said that to allow Mackenzie to remain below the bar would be a proof of pusillanimity in the House, in issuing an order which they had not the courage to enforce. It was not till after a long debate that the Speaker decided that Mackenzie was a stranger and not entitled to remain below the bar, whereupon the sergeant-at-arms removed him.

The hissing that took place in the gallery was unjustifiable. Such a proceeding is almost invariably the precursor of a revolutionary movement. But let us apportion the degree of censure due to the various parties. The electors of York had been defrauded of their elective rights by the proceedings of the House, some of which were clearly unconstitutional. The endurance of the electors was

## AGAIN EXPELLED FROM THE HOUSE

well-nigh exhausted ; and, while their interference with the deliberations of the House cannot be justified, the repeated provocations they had received must be taken into account. The conduct of the majority was revolutionary.

It was indeed a memorable day in Canada. There were among the electors some who argued that, if their member was forcibly ejected from the House, they, too, would be justified in resorting to force in defence of their violated rights. They had, they said to one another, some old rusty muskets which they might furbish up for future use, if this sort of thing were to be continued.

On the following day Mr. Morris moved that Mr. Mackenzie, having libelled the House more than two years before and made no reparation, a previous resolution declaring him unworthy of a seat therein ought to be adhered to ; to which MacNab added, by way of amendment, “and therefore the said William Lyon Mackenzie, again elected and returned to represent the county of York in this present parliament, is hereby expelled.” The resolution, as amended, was carried by a very narrow majority, the vote being twenty-two against eighteen.

In the evening Mackenzie addressed a communication to the governor stating what had occurred, and requesting to be permitted to take the oath before His Excellency, according to a provision of the Constitutional Act, or that some other prompt

and immediate relief might be afforded to him and his constituents. The question was referred to Attorney-General Jameson, who reported that Mackenzie was entitled to take the oath, and that no person commissioned by the governor had a right to refuse, since his office was ministerial and not judicial. The governor therefore directed Mr. Beikie, clerk of the executive council, to administer the oath. Mackenzie did not go before the clerk for this purpose till February 11th, feeling no doubt that, as the House had declared him expelled, he would not be allowed to take his seat. He finally made the trial at the urgent request of his friends. But we must here notice some events, and their consequence, that occurred in the interval.

The majority of the House were more than half afraid of the possible consequence of their act. The governor, completely under the control of his irresponsible advisers, firmly believed that the official party was the sole depository of loyalty in the province. In reply to representations made to him by Mackenzie, Mackintosh, Ketchum, and Shepard, at a personal interview, he recommended "that Mr. Mackenzie may offer to make the reparation which the House, by their late resolution, seem to expect from him"—a piece of advice that was very unlikely to be taken. In their interview with Sir John Colborne, Mackenzie and the three gentlemen who accompanied him had

## DEFIANT PETITIONS

complained of the refusal of S. P. Jarvis and Joseph Fitzgibbon, commissioners appointed to administer the oaths to members of the assembly. These gentlemen subsequently apologized for their conduct, and their apologies were sent to the governor along with the letter of his secretary recommending the offer of reparation.

Petitions breathing defiance began to reach the governor. "Loyal as the inhabitants of this country unquestionably are," said a petition from Whitby, "your petitioners will not disguise from your Excellency that they consider longer endurance, under their present oppressions, neither a virtue nor a duty. For though all mankind admit the claims of good government to the respect and support of the governed, yet very different considerations are due to that which is regardless of public interests, wars with public inclinations and feelings, and only aids or connives at oppression." In other petitions the electors complained that laws were passed without their consent, and a dissolution of the legislature was prayed for. A town meeting, in King, refused to appoint an assessor and collector of taxes, on the ground that they had no right to pay taxes when the assembly robbed them of half their representation.

Hume, removed from the influence of local feelings and prejudices, wrote from London to Mackenzie, giving his opinion that the events of December 16th and 17th—Mackenzie's unanimous

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

re-election and his forcible ejection and re-expulsion—would hasten the crisis that would terminate in the independence of Canada. But he was smarting under a sense of injury in consequence of some attack made upon him by the Rev. Egerton Ryerson; and his letter was at once intemperate and indiscreet. In speaking of the “baneful domination” of the mother country as a thing for Canada to rid itself of as soon as possible, he failed to make the proper distinction between the colonial oligarchy and the imperial government, though the latter, with every desire to do justice, upheld a false system, and was not infrequently misled by the prejudiced and interested statements of the knot of permanent and irresponsible officials by whom the governor was surrounded.

The colonial oligarchs and their supporters in the assembly were just as ready to complain of the domination exercised by Downing Street over the local affairs of the province as Hume himself, when their interests were interfered with. The disallowance of the Bank Charter Acts, to which reference has already been made, almost created a rebellion among the Tories of Upper Canada. In March, 1834, the assembly passed an address to the king protesting, in the most energetic terms, against the exercise of the royal veto in that case, laying down the general principle that, in all local affairs, the provincial legislature ought to be supreme. To have extorted assent to such a declaration, from a

## FORCIBLY TAKEN FROM HIS SEAT

section of the Tories, was no small gain.<sup>1</sup> There seems to be no question that they did not comprehend the full force of a declaration that was to make the legislature supreme in local matters.

On February 11th, 1834, no new writ had been issued for a new election; and Mackenzie went before the clerk of the executive council and took the oath prescribed for members of the legislature. At three o'clock on the same day, he walked into the House of Assembly and took his seat among the members. The House was in committee of the whole. He had not been long there when he received a visit from Mr. MacNab, sergeant-at-arms, who informed him that he was a stranger, and must retire. Mackenzie replied that he was a member of the House, legally elected and duly sworn; and he produced an attested copy of the oath. He was, he said, charged with no offence or irregularity that could disqualify him for sitting and voting. Before going to the House, he had given public notice that he should not leave his seat unless violence were used; and he now told the sergeant-at-arms that if he interfered it would be at his peril. This officer replied that he must use force.

<sup>1</sup> In a House of thirty members, six (of whom five were Tories) voted against part of the address protesting against the exercise of the royal veto. It was moved by Bidwell and seconded by Perry, in the shape of an amendment to another address that had been proposed. Nine Tories voted for the amendment, and thus affirmed principles mainly sound in themselves, but with which the whole practice of their lives was in contradiction.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Mackenzie was three times forcibly taken from his seat; and when he appealed to the Speaker for protection, that functionary replied that it was not possible for the sergeant-at-arms to have mistaken his duty. A resolution in favour of his taking his seat was lost on a vote of twenty-one against fifteen. While these proceedings were going on, there was a dense crowd in the gallery, whose general conduct was orderly and decorous, Mackenzie having previously cautioned them to remain "quiet and passive spectators."

A few days after these arbitrary proceedings on the part of the majority of the House had taken place, Mr. Duncombe made a motion which was intended to bring about a new election for the county of York by a side wind. Mackenzie's friends did not admit that his seat was legally vacant; and therefore they could not vote for the issuing of a writ for a new election. Duncombe's resolution instructed the Speaker to take the necessary steps to have any vacancy in the House forthwith supplied; but it was rejected, as was also a motion proposed by MacNab for issuing a writ for the election of a member for York in the place of Mr. Mackenzie expelled. And so the county of York remained unrepresented during nearly a whole parliament.

A brief review of the whole proceedings will give the best idea of the spirit in which they were conducted. At first, an attempt was made to expel the



## REVIEW OF THE EXPULSIONS

obnoxious member because he had, at his own cost, distributed copies of the journals of the House, without note or comment, unaccompanied by the appendix. Next, a pretended libel, published in a newspaper, was made a ground of expulsion, and acted upon. Neither of the articles complained of was half so severe as articles that are now daily published without exciting attention. Then a new libel was discovered, and made the cause of a second expulsion. This time the House stretched the power of privilege to the extent of creating a disqualification unknown to the law. The third time, the House contented itself with giving force to this declared disability. Next time, a unanimous re-election was declared to be no election at all, though the returning officer had returned Mackenzie as duly elected, and no candidate had appeared to oppose him. The fifth time, he was declared expelled, though not allowed by the House to take the oaths or his seat; and the same majority that now expelled him had declared, a short time before, that he was not, and could not be elected, they having assumed that he was incapable of being elected during that parliament. This last time he was, at first, forcibly ejected from the space below the bar on a motion to clear the House of strangers, because, not having taken the oaths which the Speaker urged the commissioners not to administer, he must be treated as a stranger; and then, after he had taken the oath, he

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

was again forcibly dragged from his seat by the sergeant-at-arms, condemned to silence under the outrage, and threatened with imprisonment. The frequency and the facility with which the majority shifted their ground, showed that all they wanted was a colourable pretext for carrying out a foregone conclusion, to rid themselves of the presence of an opponent who gave them so much trouble.

As in the case of Wilkes, who was expelled from the House of Commons, the whole of the proceedings relating to these expulsions were expunged from the journals of the assembly, being declared subversive of the rights of the whole body of electors of Upper Canada.<sup>1</sup> This was done in the first session of the next parliament, on July 16th, 1835, by a vote of twenty-eight to seven. MacNab voted to expunge his own resolutions, and frankly admitted that the House was wrong in grounding its third expulsion on the fact of the second. From first to last, the proceedings against Mackenzie were conceived in a party spirit, and carried by party votes. No worse description or condemnation of them could be given, seeing that they were in their nature judicial.

<sup>1</sup> Wilkes's expulsion was not pronounced until it was found that he had absconded.

## CHAPTER IX

### MUNICIPAL AND LATER PARLIAMENTARY CAREER

**O**N March 6th, 1834, the town of York had its limits extended, and became an incorporated city under the name of Toronto. On March 15th, a proclamation was issued calling an election of aldermen and common councilmen for the twenty-seventh of that month. The Reformers resolved to profit by the circumstances; and, having carried the elections, they selected Mackenzie for mayor, the first mayor not only of Toronto but in the province. The event was looked upon as possessing some political significance, for Toronto was the seat of government and the headquarters of the Family Compact; and, as the sequel proved, it was prophetic of the result of the next parliamentary election in the city.

Mackenzie gave his time gratuitously to the interests of the city, and discharged the duties of mayor with the same vigour that he carried into everything he undertook. The whole machinery of municipal government had to be constructed and set in motion. The city finances were in a condition that much increased the difficulty of the task. The value of all the ratable property in the city was only £121,519, and there was a debt of £9,240. To meet the demands on the city treasury,

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

it was necessary to levy a rate of three pence currency on the pound. This was regarded as a monstrous piece of fiscal oppression, almost sufficient to justify a small rebellion.<sup>1</sup>

The arms of the city of Toronto, with the motto, "Industry, Intelligence, Integrity," were designed by Mackenzie.

During the term of Mackenzie's mayoralty, cholera revisited the city, and swept away every twentieth inhabitant. Throughout the whole course of the plague, the mayor was at the post of duty and of danger. He sought out the helpless victims of the disease and administered to their wants. He was constant in his attendance at the cholera hospital. In the height of the panic occasioned by this terrible scourge, when nobody else could be induced to take the cholera patients to the hospital, he visited the abodes of the victims, and, placing them in the cholera cart with whatever assistance he could get from the families of the plague-stricken, drove them to the hospital. On some days he made several visits of this kind to the pest-house. Day and night he

<sup>1</sup> "There was," Mackenzie said, "a wonderful outcry raised in Toronto that the inequality of the taxes, and the burthensome extent to which they had been laid upon the citizens, were the acts of the corporation, and still more especially the doings of the mayor. This unfounded statement induced many persons not only to manifest an unwillingness to pay, but also to urge others to withhold payment, and gave the collectors a great deal of trouble; while some of the members of the council were daily met by complainants, to each of whom a long detail of facts had to be gone into, the whole appearing interminable."

## STRICKEN WITH CHOLERA

gave himself no rest. At length, worn out by fatigue, the disease, from which he had done so much to save others, overtook him. The attack was not of an aggravated nature ; and he was fortunate in securing the timely assistance of Dr. Widmer, for medical men were difficult to obtain.

The mayor was also assiduous in his attendance at the police court, where he constantly sat to decide the cases for adjudication. At the mayor's court, too, he presided. Here he had the assistance of juries. His magisterial decisions gave general satisfaction ; but he was much censured for putting into the stocks an abandoned creature who had frequently been sent to gaol without any beneficial effect, and who was, on this occasion, excessively abusive to the court. Before the close of his mayoralty, Mackenzie issued a circular stating his determination to decline to come forward again for the city council ; but when his friends complained that he had no right to desert the Reform cause, he, at the eleventh hour, permitted his name to be used by the parties who had insisted on nominating him for re-election. The Reformers—for the election was made a party question—were defeated, Mackenzie being rejected on a national cry raised by the friends of R. B. Sullivan, afterwards a member of the bench. On January 5th, 1835, Mackenzie received the unanimous thanks of a public meeting, “for the faithful discharge of his arduous duties during the period of his office.”

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

On December 9th, 1834, the "Canadian Alliance Society" was formed at York. James Lesslie was president, and Mackenzie corresponding secretary. In the declaration of objects, based upon resolutions drawn up and submitted by Mackenzie, for the attainment of which the society was formed, there were eighteen subjects of legislation, fourteen of which were subsequently adopted.<sup>1</sup> In most cases these questions were disposed of in the manner recommended by the Alliance, and in others the deviation therefrom was more or less marked. The objects of the society were denounced by the partisans of the government as revolutionary. Their tendency was certainly democratic; and the carrying out of many of the objects of the Alliance proved how steadily public opinion advanced in that direction.

On his return from England, Mackenzie had announced his intention of giving up the publication of a newspaper. His journal had been carried on by Randall Wickson in his absence. He said he would issue one or two irregular papers, and then stop the publication. He had commenced when Reform was less fashionable, and now there were other

<sup>1</sup> These were: responsible government; abolition of the Crown-nominated legislative council; a more equal taxation of property; abolition of the law of primogeniture; disunion of Church and State; secularization of the Clergy Reserves; provision for the gradual liquidation of the public debt; discontinuance of the undue interference of the colonial office in the local affairs of the province; cheap postage; amendment of the libel law; amendment of jury laws; control of all the provincial revenues by the representatives of the people.

## AS A JOURNALIST

Liberal journals, so that his own could be better spared. But the few fugitive sheets counted up to forty-eight after the announcement was made and before November 4th, 1834, when the last number of the *Colonial Advocate* was published.

When he commenced the arduous, and in those days perilous, task of a Reform journalist, Mackenzie had no enemies among the official party. Setting out with Whig principles, he was driven by the course of events into the advocacy of radical reform. "I entered," he says, "the lists of opposition to the executive because I believed the system of government to be wretchedly bad, and was uninfluenced by any private feeling, or ill-will, or anger, towards any human being whatever." He threw away much of the profits of his business by circulating, at his own expense, an immense number of political documents intended to bring about an amelioration of the wretched system of government then in existence. "Gain," he truly says, "was with me a matter of comparatively small moment; nor do I regret my determination to risk all in the cause of Reform; I would do it again." He did afterwards risk all on the issue of revolution, and lost the game. In 1834, he thought he had done with the press forever. The *Advocate* was incorporated with the *Correspondent*, a paper published by Dr. O'Grady, a Roman Catholic priest, under the name of the *Correspondent and Advocate*; and Mackenzie expressed a wish that no one would

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

withhold subscriptions from any other paper in the expectation that he would ever again connect himself with the press.

In making an estimate of Mackenzie as a journalist, it may be said that his writings show an uneven temper; but taking them in the mass, and considering the abuses he had to assail, and the virulence of opposition he met—foul slanders, personal abuse, and even attempted assassination—we have reason to be surprised at the moderation of his tone. In mere personal invective he never dealt. He built all his opposition on hard facts, collected with industry and subject to the usual amount of error in the narration. Latterly, he had entirely abandoned the practice of replying to the abusive tirades of business competitors or political opponents. He generally wrote in the first person; and his productions sometimes took the shape of letters to important political personages. His articles were of every possible length, from the terse, compact paragraph to a full newspaper page. On whatever objects exerted, his industry was untiring; and the unceasing labours of the pen, consuming nights as well as days, prematurely wore out a naturally durable frame. Though possessed of a rich fund of humour, his work was too earnest and too serious to admit of his drawing largely upon it as a journalist. Whatever he did, he did with an honest intention; and, though freedom from errors cannot be claimed for him,



## AGAIN ELECTED FOR YORK

it may truly be said that his very faults were the results of generous impulses acted upon with insufficient reflection.

A general election took place in October, 1834. Mackenzie was elected to the assembly by the second riding of York, this being the first election since the division of the county into four ridings. His opponent, Edward Thomson, obtained one hundred and seventy-eight votes against three hundred and thirty-four, and in addition to the personal success of Mackenzie, the party with whom he acted secured a majority in the new House. Bidwell was elected Speaker for the second time. The new House met on January 15th, 1835. On the first vote, the government was left in a minority on a vote of thirty-one against twenty-seven. The solicitor-general branded Bidwell, the new Speaker, as a disloyal man who "wished to overturn the government and institutions of the country."

The letters of Hume to Mackenzie had been denounced by the official party as rank treason. Referring to this circumstance, the address in reply to the governor's speech expressed satisfaction that "His Majesty has received, through your Excellency, from the people of this province, fresh proofs of their devoted loyalty, and of their sincere and earnest desire to maintain and perpetuate the connection with the great empire of which they form so important a part;" proofs which would

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

“serve to correct any misrepresentations intended to impress His Majesty with the belief that those who desire the reform of many public abuses in the province are not well affected towards His Majesty’s person and government.” It also deprecated the spirit in which honest differences of opinion had been treated by persons in office, who, on that account, had impeached the loyalty, integrity, and patriotism of their opponents, as calculated “to alienate the affections of His Majesty’s loyal people and render them dissatisfied with the administration.” “But,” the address concluded, “should the government be administered agreeably to the intent, meaning, and spirit of our glorious constitution, the just wishes and constitutional rights of the people duly respected, the honours and patronage of His Majesty indiscriminately bestowed on persons of worth and talent, who enjoy the confidence of the people without regard to their political or religious opinions, and your Excellency’s councils filled with moderate, wise, and discreet individuals, who are understood to respect, and to be influenced by, the public voice, we have not the slightest apprehension that the connection between this province and the parent state may long continue to exist, and be a blessing mutually advantageous to both.”

A majority of the House rejected an amendment indirectly censuring Hume’s “baneful domination”

## "BANEFUL DOMINATION" LETTER

letter.<sup>1</sup> That gentleman had, in explanation of his letter, accepted an interpretation put upon it by Dr. Morrison, "That Mr. Hume justly regards such conduct [the repeated expulsions of Mr. Mackenzie from the House] on the part of the legislature, countenanced as it was by the Crown officers and other executive functionaries in the assembly, and unredressed by the royal prerogative, as evidence of baneful and tyrannical domination, in which conduct it is both painful and injurious to find the provincial officials systematically upheld by the minister at home against the people."

In the early part of the session, January 26th, 1835, Mackenzie moved for and obtained the celebrated select committee on grievances, whose report, Lord Glenelg stated, was carefully examined by the king, was replied to at great length by the colonial minister, and was taken by Sir Francis Bond Head—so he said—for his guide, but was certainly not followed by him.

<sup>1</sup> This letter is dated, "Bryston Square, 29th of March, 1834" and contains some very strong language. "Your triumphant election," Mr. Hume says, "on the 16th, and ejection from the assembly on the 17th, must hasten the crisis which is fast approaching in the affairs of Canada, and which will terminate in independence and freedom from the baneful domination of the mother country, and the tyrannical conduct of a small and despicable faction in the colony." . . . "I confidently trust," he added, "that the high-minded people of Canada will not, in these days, be overawed or cheated of their rights and liberties by such men as Mr. Stanley and the colonial compact. Your cause is *their* cause; your defeat would be *their* subjugation. Go on, therefore, I beseech you, and success—glorious success—must crown your joint efforts."

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

As we approach the threshold of an armed insurrection, it is necessary to obtain from those engaged in it their view of the grievances which existed. For this purpose an analysis of the famous "Seventh Report of the Committee on Grievances" will be necessary. Before, doing so, however, let us notice briefly the affairs of the Welland Canal, in which Mackenzie successfully intervened in the public interest.

The canal era preceded that of railroads. In 1824, not a single effort of a practical nature had been made to improve the inland navigation of the province. In 1830, the Rideau had been completed. A vessel of eighty-four tons burthen had, in the previous November, passed through the Welland. The Burlington and the Desjardins Canals were far advanced towards completion. Mackenzie, who had been a warm advocate of internal improvements, obtained a committee, in the session of 1830, to inquire into the management and expenditure of the Welland Canal Company. The whole thing had so much the appearance of a financial juggle—the original estimates of £15,000 to £23,000 having been followed by an expenditure of over £273,000—that curiosity must have been much excited to know by what legerdemain the different steps in the financial scheme had succeeded one another.

On March 6th, 1835, Mackenzie was appointed by the House of Assembly director of the Welland

## THE WELLAND CANAL

Canal Company, in respect of the stock owned by the province. He entered into a searching investigation; and if he showed a somewhat too eager anxiety to discover faults, and made some charges against the officers and managers of the company that might be deemed frivolous, he also made startling disclosures of worse than mismanagement. With the impatience of an enthusiast, he published his discoveries before the time came for making his official report, sending them forth in a newspaper-looking sheet entitled *The Welland Canal*, three numbers of which were printed. A libel suit, in which he was cast in damages to the amount of two shillings, resulted from this publication; and Mr. Merritt, president of the company, in the ensuing session of the legislature, moved for a committee to investigate the charge brought against directors and officers of this company. It was a bold stroke on the part of the president; but, unfortunately for the canal management, the committee attested the discovery of large defalcations on the part of the company's officers. Accounts sworn to by the secretary of the company, and laid before the legislature, were proved to be incorrect.<sup>1</sup> Large sums—one

<sup>1</sup> In a letter to Mackenzie dated Toronto, September 16th, 1836, Mr. Francis Hincks, then engaged as an accountant in the investigation, and than whom there was no better judge of accounts, said: "As to the Welland Canal books, I have already said, and I now publicly repeat and am willing to stake my character on the truth of it, that for several years they are full of false and fictitious entries, so much so that if I was on oath I could hardly say whether I believe there are

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

amount was \$2,500—of the company's money had been borrowed by its own officers without the authority of the board. Improvident contracts were shamefully performed. The president, directors, and agents of the company leased water powers to themselves. The company sold, on a credit of ten years, over fifteen thousand acres of land, together with water privileges, for £25,000, to Alexander McDonnell, in trust for an alien of the name of Yates, and allowed him to keep two hundred acres, forming the town plots of Port Colborne and Allanburg. A quarter acre sold at the latter place for \$100. The company repurchased the remainder, for which the company's bonds for £17,000 were given to Yates, though all they had received from him was eighteen months interest, the greater part of which he had got back in bonuses and alleged damages said to have arisen from the absence of water power. If such a transaction were to occur in private life, the committee averred, it "would not only be deemed ruinous, but the result of insanity." George Keefer, while a director, became connected

more true or false ones. I am persuaded it is impossible for an accountant who desires to arrive at the truth to investigate them with any satisfaction, particularly as the vouchers are of such a character as to be of little or no service. . . . It has been clearly proved that large sums of money have been lost to the company, and, of course, to the province, which, if the present directors do their duty, can, in great part, be recovered; yet you, the person who has discovered these losses, and, what is still better, has exposed the system, have been abused in the most virulent manner from one end of the province to the other, and have not obtained the slightest remuneration for your services."

## CANAL MISMANAGEMENT

with a contract for the locks. A large number of original estimates, receipts, and other important documents were missing; and no satisfactory account of what had become of them could be obtained. The books were kept in the most slovenly and discreditable manner, being blurred with blunders, suspicious alterations, and erasures. The length of the canal was unnecessarily extended; but if the company suffered from this cause, individuals profited by the operation. Improvident expenditures, all the worse in a company cramped for means, were proved to have been made. One Oliver Phelps owed the company a debt of \$30,000 covered by mortgage, which was released by the board without other satisfaction than a deed of some land worth about \$2,000. It was not a case of writing off a bad debt, because the property covered by the mortgage was good for the amount. Over \$5,000 worth of timber, purchased by the company and not used, was parted with without equivalent. Some of it was stolen, some used by Phelps, who was not charged with it, and some purchased by a member of the assembly, Gilbert M'Micking, in such a way that the company derived no advantage from the sale.

The difference between Mackenzie and the committee of the House was this: he suspected the worst in every case of unfavourable appearances; they were willing to make many allowances for irregularities where positive fraud could not be

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

proved. The committee carried their leniency further than they were warranted by the facts. In the same sentence in which they acquitted the directors of any intentional abuse of the powers vested in them, they confessed themselves unable to explain the Phelps transaction.

But to return to the "Seventh Report of the Committee on Grievances." In order to understand what were, at this time, the subjects of complaint by the popular party in Upper Canada, the contents of this report must be examined. And to discover the spirit in which these complaints were met in England, the reply of Lord Glenelg, then secretary of state for the colonies, must be consulted. We are not entitled to pass over, as of no interest, the complaints as to these grievances which proved to be the seeds of insurrection, and the prompt response to which would have prevented the catastrophe that followed in less than three years after.

Sir John Colborne had admitted in a despatch to Sir George Murray, February 16th, 1829, that, "composed as the legislative council is at present, the province had a right to complain of the great influence of the executive government in it." In 1829, it comprised seventeen members, exclusive of the Bishop of Quebec, not more than fifteen of whom ever attended; and, of these, six were members of the executive council, and four more held offices under the government. It was no easy



## COMMITTEE ON GRIEVANCES

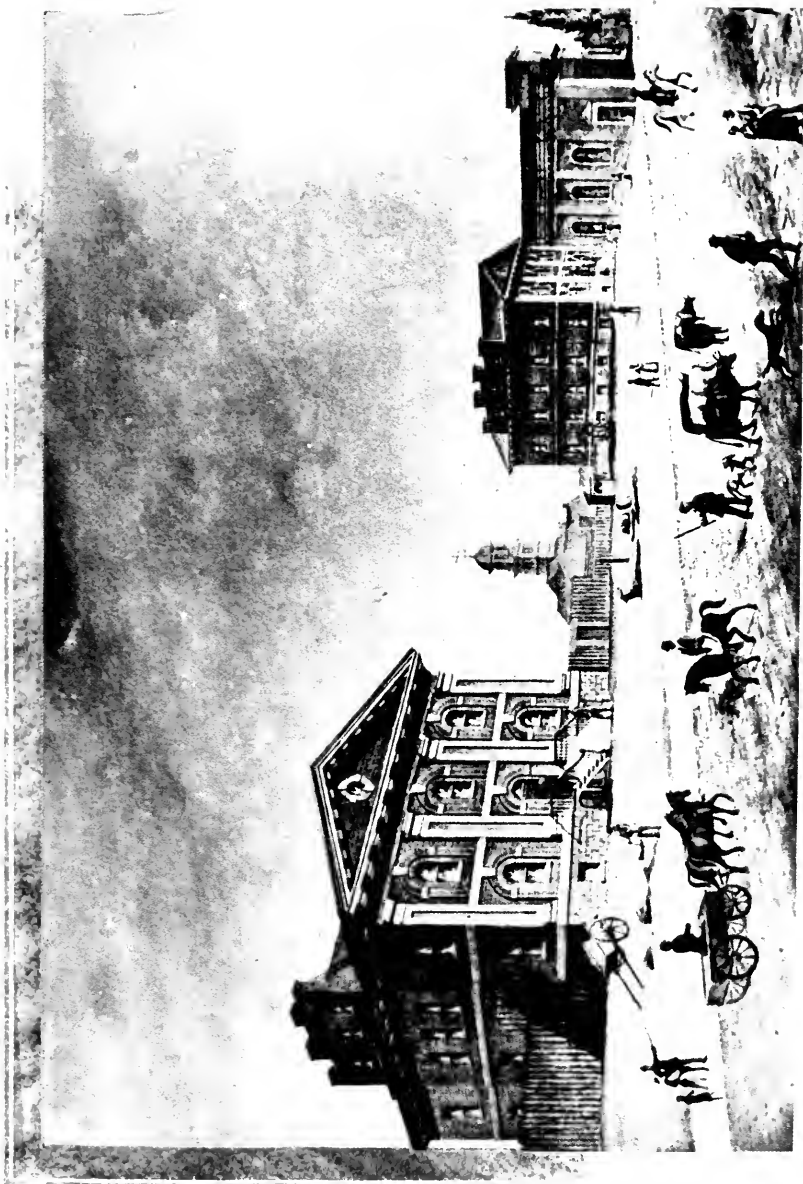
matter, in the then state of the province, to find persons qualified to fill the situation of legislative councillor, and that circumstance had doubtless something to do in determining its character. In 1834 the council contained an additional member, Bishop McDonnell; but he drew an annual salary from the government, and did not therefore, by his presence, tend to increase its independence of the executive. While Sir John Colborne professed to be desirous of seeing the legislative council rendered less dependent upon the Crown, it was in evidence that the executive was in the habit of coercing the members whom it could control. Instances of remarkably sudden changes of opinion, effected by this means, were given. A disseverance of judicial and legislative functions had been frequently asked by the assembly; but the chief justice still continued Speaker of the legislative council.

To the select committee on grievances was referred a number of documents, including the celebrated despatch of Lord Goderich, and the accompanying documents prepared by Mackenzie while in England, the reply of the lieutenant-governor to an address of the assembly for information regarding the dismissal of the Crown officers, the re-appointment of one of them, and the selection of Jameson as attorney-general, together with petitions, viceregal messages, and other documents. The committee examined witnesses as well as

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

documents, and their report, with documents and evidence, makes a thick octavo volume.

"The almost unlimited extent of the patronage of the Crown, or rather of the colonial minister for the time being," the report declared, was the chief source of colonial discontent. "Such," it added, "is the patronage of the colonial office, that the granting or withholding of supplies is of no political importance, unless as an indication of the opinion of the country concerning the character of the government." Mr. Stanley, while in communication with Dr. Baldwin as chairman of a public meeting in York some years before, had pointed to the constitutional remedies of "addressing for the removal of the advisers of the Crown, and refusing supplies." The former remedy had been twice tried, but without producing any good effect, and almost without eliciting a civil reply. The second was hereafter to be resorted to. When the province first came under the dominion of the British Crown, certain taxes were imposed by imperial statute for the support of the local government. In time, as the House of Assembly acquired some importance and had attracted some able men, the control of these revenues became an object of jealousy and desire. Before there had been any serious agitation on the subject in Upper Canada, these revenues were surrendered in exchange for a permanent civil list. An opportune moment was chosen for effecting this change. Neither of the two previous



North side of King Street, Toronto, between  
Toronto and Church Streets, 1834

From the John Ross Robertson collection



## THE PROVINCIAL FINANCES

Houses would have assented to the arrangement, nor would the present legislature so long as there were no other constitutional means of bringing the administration to account than that which might have been obtained by a control of the purse strings. The granting of a permanent civil list had looked to the Reformers like throwing away the only means of control over the administration. Indirectly the executive controlled what was, properly speaking, the municipal expenditure. Magistrates appointed by the Crown met in quarter sessions to dispose of the local taxes. The bench of magistrates in the eastern district had, that very session, refused to render the House an account of their expenditure. The old objections to the post-office being under the control of the imperial government were reiterated. The patronage of the Crown was stated to cover £50,000 a year, in the shape of salaries and other payments, exclusive of the Clergy Reserve revenue, the whole of the money being raised within the province. The £4,472, which had annually come from England for the Church of England, had been withdrawn in 1834. Considering the poverty of the province, the scale of salaries was relatively much higher than at present. Ten persons were in receipt of \$4,000 a year each for their public services.

The mode of treating the salaries received by the public functionaries, pursued in this report, is

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

not free from objection. The bare statement that "the Hon. John H. Dunn has received £11,534 of public money since 1827," proved nothing; yet the aggregate sum was calculated to create the impression that there was something wrong about it. Some salaries and fees were undoubtedly excessive. Mr. Ruttan received in fees, as sheriff of the Newcastle district, in 1834, £1,040, and in the previous year, £1,180. Pensions had been pretty freely dispensed out of the Crown revenue. Under the head of pensions, £30,500 is set down as having been paid to eleven individuals within eight years; but the payment to Bishop McDonnell should hardly have come under that designation. While the Church of England received the proceeds of the Clergy Reserves, annual payments were made by the government to several other denominations. Profuse professions of loyalty sometimes accompanied applications for such payments; and there seemed to be no shame in confessing something like an equivalent in political support. The Church of England managed to get the lion's share; and this naturally brought down on her the envy and jealousy of other denominations. Of twenty-three thousand nine hundred and five acres of public lands set apart as glebes, between 1789 and 1833, the Church of England had obtained twenty-two thousand three hundred and forty-five acres.

It was complained that much of the money

## THE REMEDIES RECOMMENDED

granted for general purposes was very imperfectly accounted for. "The remedy," said the report, "would be a board of audit, the proceedings of which should be regulated by a well-considered statute, under a responsible government." In due time, both these things came, Mackenzie having been in these, as in numberless other instances, in advance of the times. Justices of the peace, it was complained, had been selected almost entirely from one political party. The necessity of a responsible administration, for any effectual reform of abuse, had been frequently insisted on by Mackenzie. "One great excellence of the English constitution," says this report, "consists in the limits it imposes on the will of a king, by requiring responsible men to give effect to it. In Upper Canada no such responsibility can exist. The lieutenant-governor and the British ministry hold in their hands the whole patronage of the province; they hold the sole dominion of the country, and leave the representative branch of the legislature powerless and dependent." English statesmen were far from realizing the necessity of making the colonial government responsible; and, for some years after, the official idea continued to be that such a system was incompatible with colonial dependence. Mr. Stanley had been one of the few who thought that "something might be done, with great advantage, to give a really responsible character to the executive council, which at present is a perfectly anomalous body, hardly

recognized by the constitution, and chiefly effective as a source of patronage." Only a few years before, Attorney-General Robinson had denied the existence of a ministry in Upper Canada, and claimed the right to act solely upon his own individual responsibility in the House, and without reference to any supposed necessity for agreement with his colleagues. And Lord Goderich held that the colonial governors were alone responsible. He complained that the legislative councils had been used "as instruments for relieving governors from the responsibility they ought to have borne for the rejection of measures which have been proposed by the other branch of the legislature, and have not seldom involved them in dissensions which it would have been more prudent to decline. The effect of the constitution, therefore," he added, "is too often to induce a collision between the different branches of the legislature, to exempt the governor from a due sense of responsibility, and to deprive the representative body of some of its most useful members." The executive council had scarcely any recognized duties beyond those which were merely ministerial. The governor did not feel bound to ask the advice of his councillors, or to act upon it when given. In appointments to office, they were, as a rule, not consulted. The giving or withholding of the royal assent to bills passed by the legislature was a matter entirely in the hands of the governor. Yet the executive council was recognized by the



## A RESPONSIBLE EXECUTIVE

Constitutional Act; and cases were specially mentioned in which the governor was required to act upon their advice. The governor, coming a stranger to the province, could not act without advice; and he was lucky if he escaped the toils of some designing favourite who had access to his presence and could determine his general course. The habit of sending out military governors, who were wholly unsuited for civil administration, was in vogue. The only excuse for pursuing this course was that a lieutenant-governorship was not a sufficient prize to attract men of first-rate abilities. There was great diversity of opinion as to the possible success of responsible government. It had never been tried in any of the old colonies. Mackenzie, while in England, had endeavoured to convince Lord Goderich that, with some modifications, it might be made the means of improving the colonial government. The sum of the whole matter was that the existing system made the governor responsible, in the absence of responsible advisers by whom he might have been personally relieved; and he, in turn, was only too glad to make the legislative council perform the functions which, on questions of legislation, naturally belonged to a responsible administration. He had them under his control.

The grievance committee insisted on the necessity of entire confidence between the executive and the House of Assembly. "This confidence," it was

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

truly added, "cannot exist while those who have long and deservedly lost the esteem of the country are continued in the public offices and councils. Under such a state of things," it said, "distrust is unavoidable, however much it is to be deplored as incompatible with the satisfactory discharge of the public business." The demand for entire confidence between the executive and the House of Assembly was based upon "the growing condition of this part of the Empire in population, wealth and commerce." The committee perhaps meant the inference to be drawn that the necessity for responsible government had not been perceived in the earlier stages of colonial existence. From the facts before them, the committee concluded that the second branch of the legislature had failed to answer the purpose of its institution, and could "never be made to answer the end for which it was created," and that "the restoration of legislative harmony and good government requires its reconstruction on the elective principle."

Although many may think this an erroneous opinion, it cannot be matter of surprise that it should have found expression. The legislative council, owing its creation to the Crown, and its members being appointed for life, found itself in constant collision with the representative chamber. This collision created irritation; and the people naturally took the part of their representatives in the contest. If there had been an executive council to bear the re-

## AN ELECTIVE COUNCIL

sponsibility that was thrown on this branch of the legislature, a change of ministry would have obviated the desire for a change of system. The legislative council would have been modified by having additions made to its numbers, as was done after the inauguration of responsible government; and the second chamber, being kept in harmony with the popular will, would not have been attacked in its constitution. The opinion that the council ought to be made elective was not confined to Canada; it had been shared by several English statesmen, including Sir James Mackintosh, Mr. Stanley, and Mr. Labouchere. Instances were also adverted to by the committee, in which the members of the local executive had prevented the good intentions of the imperial government being carried into effect. Such, in brief, was the famous report of the committee of grievances.<sup>1</sup>

It elicited from the secretary of state for the colonies a reply which we must now proceed to

<sup>1</sup> Whether from oversight or whatever cause, the grievance report had not been adopted by the House, though two thousand copies had been ordered to be printed in an unusual form, and had been distributed. On February 6th, 1836, however, the assembly resolved, by a vote of twenty-four against fifteen, "that the facts and opinions embodied in that report continue to receive the full and deliberate sanction and confirmation of the House and the people whom it represents; and that it is our earnest desire that the many important measures of reform recommended in that report may be speedily carried into effect by an administration deservedly possessing the public confidence." A copy of this resolution was ordered to be sent to the secretary of state for the colonies. It was passed a week after Lord Glenelg's despatch had been laid before the legislature.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

consider. But before the reply came, Lord Glenelg, on October 20th, 1835, conveyed to Canada the assurance that the king, having had the report before him, "has been pleased to devote as much of his time and attention as has been compatible with the shortness of the period which has elapsed since the arrival in this country" of the despatch enclosing the document.

In the ordinary course of events, the Upper Canada legislature would have met in November; but so important was it deemed that the report should be responded to, that Major-General Colborne was directed to delay the calling of the House till the ensuing January—a delay of three months. At the same time, an assurance was conveyed that the House would find, in the promised communications, "conclusive proof of the desire and fixed purpose of the king to redress every real grievance, affecting any class of His Majesty's subjects in Upper Canada, which has been brought to His Majesty's notice by their representatives in provincial parliament assembled." A belief was at the same time expressed, that the assembly "would not propose any measure incompatible with the great fundamental principles of the constitution," which, in point of fact, had been systematically violated by the ruling party.

Soon after, in addressing the assembly, Mackenzie said: "I would impress upon the House the importance of two things: the necessity of

## THE EXECUTIVE COUNCIL

getting control of the revenue raised in this country, and control over the men sent out here to govern us, by placing them under the direction of responsible advisers." The House, about the same time, addressed the governor for information "in respect to the powers, duties, and responsibilities of the executive council; how far that body is responsible for the acts of the executive government; and how far the lieutenant-governor is authorized by His Majesty to act with or against their advice." The governor replied that the executive council had no powers but such as were conferred on it by "the express provisions of British or colonial statutes," about which the House knew as much as he. However, he condescended to proceed to particulars. "It was necessary," he said, "that they should concur with the lieutenant-governor in deciding upon applications for lands, and making regulations relative to the Crown Lands Department." He admitted that these duties were additional to those imposed by statute. "It was also," His Excellency proceeded to state, "the duty of the executive council to afford their advice to the lieutenant-governor upon all public matters referred to them for their consideration." He himself, as well as his council, was responsible to the imperial government and removable at the pleasure of the king. Where, by statute, the concurrence of the executive council was required to any Act of the government, it could not be dispensed with, and in such case the executive council

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

must share the responsibility of the particular Act. But the lieutenant-governor claimed the right to exercise "his judgment in regard to demanding the assistance and advice of the executive council, except he is confined to a certain course by the instructions of His Majesty." The governor thus fairly expressed the official view of ministerial responsibility, as was afterwards shown by Sir Francis Bond Head's instructions on his appointment to the lieutenant-governorship of Upper Canada.

The promised reply of Lord Glenelg was dated December 15th, 1835. It took the shape of instructions to Sir Francis Bond Head on his appointment to the lieutenant-governorship of Upper Canada.<sup>1</sup> The patronage at the disposal of the Crown, which had been so much complained of, had been swelled by the practice of confiding to the government or its officers the prosecution of all offences. But this circumstance was declared by Lord Glenelg to be no proof of any peculiar avidity on the part of the executive for the exercise of such power. The transfer of the patronage to

<sup>1</sup> Head, who had been instructed to communicate the substance of these instructions to the legislature, laid the entire despatch before the two Houses, a proceeding for which he incurred the disapprobation of the colonial office, and of the British public. He admitted that he was aware the proceedings would embarrass Lord Glenelg; but he excused himself by alleging that the original draft of the despatch authorized him to communicate a copy of it; as if the original intention of the colonial minister ought to supersede the final decision of the minister and the sovereign. The king had made the alteration with his own hand.

## LORD GLENELG'S REPLY

any popular body was objected to as tending to make public officers virtually irresponsible, and to the destruction of the "discipline and subordination which connect together, in one unbroken chain, the king and his representative in the province, down to the lowest functionary to whom any portion of the powers of the State may be confided." The selection of public officers, it was laid down, must for the most part be entrusted to the head of the local government; but there were cases in which the analogy of English practice would permit a transference of patronage from the governor to others. Whatever was necessary to ensure subordination to the head of the government was to be retained; everything beyond this was at once to be abandoned. Subordinate public functionaries were to continue to hold their offices at the pleasure of the Crown. They incurred no danger of dismissal except for misconduct; and great evils would result from making them independent of their superior. The new governor was instructed to enter upon a review of the offices in the gift of the Crown, with a view of ascertaining to what extent it would be possible to reduce them without impairing the efficiency of the public service, and to report the result of his investigation to the colonial secretary. He might make a reduction of offices either by abolition or consolidation; but any appointment made, under those circumstances, would be provisional and subject to the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

final decision of the imperial government. In case of abolition, the deprived official was to receive a reasonable compensation. What share of the patronage of the Crown, or of the local government could be transferred to other hands, was to be reported. A comparison of claims or personal qualifications was to be the sole rule for appointments to office. As a general rule, no person, not a native or settled resident, was to be selected for public employment. In case of any peculiar art or science, of which no local candidate had a competent knowledge, an exception was to be made. In selecting the officers attached to his own person, the governor was to be under no restriction. Appointments to all offices of the value of over £200 a year were to be only provisionally made by the governor, with a distinct intimation to the persons accepting them that their confirmation must depend upon the approbation of the imperial government, which required to be furnished with the grounds and motives on which each appointment had been made. The hope was expressed that, unless in an extreme emergency, the House would not carry out the menaced refusal of supplies.

If these instructions from the colonial office showed a disposition to treat the colonists with consideration, it was the sort of consideration which we bestow upon persons wholly incapable of managing their own affairs.



## LORD GLENELG'S REPLY

To any measure of retrenchment, compatible with the just claims of the public officers and the efficient performance of the public duties, the king would cheerfully assent. The assembly might appoint a commission to fix a scale of public salaries. The pensions already granted and made payable out of the Crown revenues were held to constitute a debt, to the payment of which the honour of the king was pledged; and on no consideration would His Majesty "assent to the violation of any engagement lawfully and advisedly entered into by himself or any of his royal predecessors." At the same time, the law might fix, at a reasonable limit, the amount of future pensions; and to any such measure the governor was instructed to give the assent of the Crown.

The assembly was anxious to dispose of the Clergy Reserves, and place the proceeds under the control of the legislature. The other chamber objected; and Lord Glenelg urged strong constitutional reasons against the imperial parliament exercising the interference which the assembly had invoked. And it must be confessed that, in this respect, the assembly's demand was not consistent with its general principles or with those contended for by the popular party. It was easy in this case to put the assembly in the wrong; and Lord Glenelg made the most of the opportunity. But, with strange inconsistency, the imperial government in 1840 assumed, at the dictation of

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

the bishops, a trust which five years before they had refused to accept at the solicitation of the Canadian assembly, on the ground of its unconstitutionality. Lord Glenelg admitted that the time might arrive, if the two branches of the Canadian legislature continued to disagree on the subject, when the interposition of the imperial parliament might become necessary ; but the time selected for interference was when the two branches of the local legislature had, for the first time, come to an agreement and sent to England a bill for the settlement of the question.

On the question of King's College and the principles on which it should be conducted, the two Houses displayed an obstinate difference of opinion, and the governor was instructed, on behalf of the king, to mediate between them. The basis of the mediation included a study of theology ; and it was impossible satisfactorily, in a mixed community, to do this with a hope of giving general satisfaction. This college question having once been placed under the control of the local legislature, Lord Glenelg could not recommend its withdrawal at the instance of one of the two Houses.

The suggestion for establishing a board of audit was concurred in. As a fear had been expressed that the legislative council would oppose a bill for such a purpose, the governor was authorized to establish a board of audit provisionally, till the two Houses could agree upon a law for the

## LORD GLENELG'S REPLY

regulation of the board. Lord Glenelg objected to the enactment of a statute requiring that the accounts of the public revenue should be laid before the legislature at a particular time and by persons to be named, since this would confer on them the right to "exercise a control over all the functions of the executive government," and give them a right to inspect the records of all public offices to such an extent as would leave "His Majesty's representative and all other public functionaries little more than a dependent and subordinate authority." Besides, it was assumed they would be virtually irresponsible and independent. At the same time, the governor was to be prepared at all times to give such information as the House might require respecting the public revenue, except in some extreme case where a great public interest would be endangered by compliance.

Rules were even laid down for the regulation of the personal intercourse of the governor with the House. He was to receive their addresses with the most studious courtesy and attention, and frankly and cheerfully to concede to their wishes as far as his duty to the king would permit. Should he ever find it necessary to differ from them, he was to explain the reasons for his conduct in the most conciliatory terms. Magistrates who might be appointed were to be selected from persons of undoubted loyalty, without reference to political considerations. The

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

celebrated despatch of Lord Goderich, written in consequence of the representations made by Mackenzie while in England, was to be a rule for the guidance of the conduct of Sir Francis Bond Head.

On the great question of executive responsibility Lord Glenelg totally failed to meet the expectations expressed in the grievance report to which he was replying. He did more ; he assumed that "the administration of public affairs, in Canada, is by no means exempt from the control of a sufficient practical responsibility. To His Majesty and to parliament," it was added, "the governor of Upper Canada is at all times most fully responsible for his official acts." Under this system the lieutenant-governor might wield all the powers of the government, and was even bound to do so, since he was the only one who could be called to account. The assembly, if they had any grounds of complaint against the executive, were told that they must seek redress, not by demanding a removal of the executive council, but by addressing the sovereign against the acts of his representative. Every executive councillor was to depend for the tenure of his office, not on the will of the assembly, but on the pleasure of the Crown. And in this way responsibility to the central authority in Downing Street, of all the public affairs in the province, was to be enforced. The members of the local government might or might not have seats in the legislature. Any member holding a seat in the legislature was

## AN UNCONSTITUTIONAL SYSTEM

required blindly to obey the behests of the governor on pain of instant dismissal. By this means it was hoped to preserve the head of the government from the imputation of insincerity, and to conduct the administration with firmness and decision.

These instructions embody principles which might have been successfully worked out by a governor and council; but they were inapplicable in the presence of a legislature. There was no pretence that the system was constitutional, and the elective chamber must be a nullity when the Crown-nominated legislative council can at any time be successfully played off against it. As for responsibility to the Canadian people through their representatives, there was none. All the powers of the government were centralized in Downing Street, and all the colonial officers, from the highest to the lowest, were puppets in the hands of the secretary of state for the colonies. At the same time, the outward trappings of a constitutional system, intended to amuse the colonists, served no other end than to irritate and exasperate men who had penetration enough to detect the mockery, and whose self-respect made them abhor the sham.

In November, 1835, Mackenzie visited Quebec in company with Dr. O'Grady. They went, as a deputation from leading and influential Reformers in Upper Canada, to bring about a closer alliance between the Reformers in the two provinces. In the Lower Province affairs were approaching a crisis

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

more rapidly than in the west. The difficulties arising out of the control of the revenue had led to the refusal of the supplies by the Lower Canada assembly; and, in 1834, £31,000 sterling had been taken out of the military chest, by the orders of the imperial government, to pay the salaries and contingencies of the judges and the other public officers of the Crown, under the hope that, when the difficulties were accommodated, the assembly would reimburse the amount. But the difficulties, instead of finding a solution, continued to increase. As the grievances of which the majority in the two provinces complained had much in common, the respective leaders began to make common cause. The provinces had had their causes of difference arising out of the distribution of the revenue collected at Quebec. But the political sympathies of the popular party in each province were becoming stronger than the prejudices engendered by the fiscal difficulties which had acted as a mutual repulsion. Mackenzie and his co-delegate met a cordial and affectionate welcome. This expression of sympathy, extending to all classes of Reformers, was expected to prove to the authorities, both in Canada and England, "that the tide is setting in with such irresistible force against bad government, that, if they do not yield to it before long, it will shortly overwhelm them in its rapid and onward progress." Mackenzie was on good terms with Papineau, whose word was law in the assembly of

## LETTER TO HUME

Lower Canada, of which he was Speaker, but who, in committee of the whole, used the greatest freedom of debate. This visit resulted in establishing a better understanding between the Reformers of the two provinces.

In December, 1835, Mackenzie addressed a long letter to Joseph Hume, in which he explained that the Reformers of both provinces directed their exertions mainly to the accomplishment of four objects : an elective legislative council, an executive council responsible to public opinion, the control of the whole provincial revenues, and a cessation of interference on the part of the colonial office—"not one of which," he said, "I believe will be conceded till it is too late."<sup>1</sup> The prediction proved to be correct ; but all these changes were effected after the insurrection of 1837. He tendered his thanks to Mr. Hume for his exertions on behalf of Canada in these words :—

"On behalf of thousands whom you have benefited, on behalf of the country so far as it has had confidence in me, I do most sincerely thank you for the kind and considerate interest you have

<sup>1</sup> Though all these objects were afterwards carried into effect, Sir Francis Bond Head regarded their advocacy as proof of treasonable designs. In a despatch to Lord Glenelg, dated June 22nd, 1836, after quoting the above passage, he says : "As the Republicans in the Canadas generally mask their designs by professions of attachment to the mother country, I think it important to record this admission on the part of Mackenzie of the traitorous object which the Reformers in this province have in view."

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

taken in the welfare of a distant people. To your generous exertions it is owing that tens of thousands of our citizens are not at this day branded as rebels and aliens; and to you alone it is owing that our petitions have sometimes been treated with ordinary courtesy at the colonial office.

“We have wearied you with our complaints, and occupied many of those valuable hours which you would have otherwise given to the people of England. But the time may come when Canada, relieved from her shackles, will be in a situation to prove that her children are not ungrateful to those who are now, in time of need, their disinterested benefactors.”

A shadowy idea of independence appears already to have been floating in men's minds; and it found expression in such terms as are employed in his letter about Canada being relieved of her shackles.



## CHAPTER X

### SIR FRANCIS BOND HEAD'S ARBITRARY METHODS

ON January 14th, 1836, Sir Francis Bond Head, who had just arrived in the province as lieutenant-governor, opened the session of the Upper Canada legislature.<sup>1</sup> The royal speech, in referring to the dissensions that had taken place in Lower Canada, and to the labours of the imperial commissioners, Lord Gosford, Sir Charles Grey and Sir George Gipps, appointed to inquire into the grievances complained of, assured the House that, whatever recommendations might be made as the result of this inquiry, the constitution of the provinces would be firmly maintained. As the constitution of the legislative council was one of the subjects of inquiry, this information could not be very consolatory to the Reformers.

<sup>1</sup> Sir Francis afterwards admitted, with admirable candour, that he "was really grossly ignorant of everything that in any way related to the government of our colonies." He was somehow connected with paupers and poor laws in England when he was appointed; and was totally unfitted by experience and temperament to be lieutenant-governor of any important dependency of the British Crown. How Lord Glenelg could have stumbled upon so much incapacity, is as great a mystery to the Canadians, at this day, as it was to Sir Francis when, at his lodgings at Romney, in the county of Kent, his servant, with a tallow candle in one hand and a letter brought by a king's officer in the other, enabled him to make the discovery that he had been offered the lieutenant-governorship of Upper Canada.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

During the session, Mackenzie carried an address to the king on the subject of the restraints imposed upon the province by the commercial legislation of the mother country. British goods could not pass through the United States, on their way to Canada, without being subjected to the American duty; and the address prayed that the sovereign would negotiate with the Washington government for the free passage of such goods. The facility of transport thus asked for was fully secured by the United States Bonding Act passed ten years after. For the purpose of upholding the monopoly of the East India Company, not an ounce of tea could be imported into Canada by way of the United States. The abolition of this monopoly was demanded. Canadian lumber and wheat were heavily taxed—twenty-five cents a bushel on the latter—on their admission into the United States; the same articles coming thence into the province were free of duty. Mackenzie anticipated by eighteen years the Reciprocity Treaty of 1854. The address prayed “that His Majesty would cause such representations to be made to the government of the United States as might have a tendency to place this interesting branch of Canadian commerce on a footing of reciprocity between the two countries.” Nor did he stop here. He thought it right that this principle of reciprocity should be extended to all articles admitted by Canada free of duty from the United States.

## BOND HEAD'S EARLIER ATTITUDE

Sir Francis Bond Head, unused to government, had been instructed by the colonial secretary in the rules of official etiquette and courtesy which he was to observe; and, in answering this address, he did not assume that objectionable tone which shortly afterwards marked his utter unfitness for the position to which he had been appointed. In regard to the removal of the Crown officers, there was a despatch marked "confidential," and which for that reason he did not produce. He had no means of explaining the continuance in office of Hagerman, further than that his reinstatement was the result of exculpatory evidence offered by that person while in England. The governor could require, and, if necessary, insist on the resignation of officials who might openly or covertly oppose the measures of his government; but he would not take a retrospective view of their conduct, or question the wisdom of what had been done by his predecessors, in this respect. He applied the same rule to appointments made to the legislative council; he could not undertake to judge of the principles that guided his predecessor. Lord Ripon, he considered, in giving his opinion of the presence of the Roman Catholic bishop and the Anglican archdeacon in the legislative council, had expressed no intention in reference to them. Sir Francis confessed, with maladroitness, to the existence of despatches which he did not feel at liberty to communicate; besides the one already mentioned, he had received another dated Sep-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

tember 12th, 1835, and containing observations on the grievance report. He asked from the House the consideration due to a stranger to the province, unconnected with the differences of party, entrusted by his sovereign with instructions "to correct, cautiously, yet effectually, all real grievances," while maintaining the constitution inviolate.

During this session an event occurred which, though Mackenzie was not directly connected with it, had an important bearing on the general course of affairs that eventually lead to the armed insurrection in which he was a prominent actor. It is necessary to a clear comprehension of all the circumstances which produced this crisis, that the event should be briefly related.

On February 20th, 1836, Sir Francis called three new members to the executive council, John Henry Dunn, Robert Baldwin, and John Rolph. The two latter were prominent members of the Reform party, and Dunn had long held the office of receiver-general. Their appointment was hailed as the dawn of a new and better order of things, and the governor professed, with what sincerity will hereafter appear, a desire to reform all real abuses. On March 4th these gentlemen, with the other three members of the executive council,<sup>1</sup> resigned. They complained that they had incurred the odium of being held accountable for measures which they had never advised, and for a policy to which they

<sup>1</sup> Peter Robinson, George H. Markland, and Joseph Wells.

## RESIGNATION OF COUNCIL

were strangers. That the three Tory members of the council should have joined in the resignation shows the irresistible force which the popular demand, put forward by Mackenzie and others for a responsible administration, carried with it. The current was too strong to leave a reasonable hope of their being able to make way against it. But what they shrank from undertaking, Sir Francis was to try, by the aid of more supple instruments, to accomplish. The six councillors, on tendering their resignations, insisted on the constitutional right of being consulted on the affairs of the province generally, and resorted to some elaboration of argument to prove that their claim had an immovable foundation in the provincial charter.

The governor, on the other hand, contended that he alone was responsible, being liable to removal and impeachment for misconduct, and that he was at liberty to have recourse to their advice only when he required it; but that to consult them on all the questions that he was called upon to decide would be "utterly impossible." His political theory was very simple. "The lieutenant-governor maintains," he said, "that responsibility to the people, who are already represented in the House of Assembly, is unconstitutional; that it is the duty of the council to serve him, not them"—a doctrine that was soon to meet a practical rebuke from his official superiors in England.

The answer of His Excellency was sent to a

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

select committee of the House, who made an elaborate report in which the governor's treatment of his council was censured in no measured terms. The increasing dissatisfaction which had been produced by the maladministration of Governors Gore, Maitland, and Colborne, was said to have become general. The new appointments to the executive council of liberal men, made by Sir Francis, were stigmatized as "a deceitful manoeuvre to gain credit with the country for liberal feelings and intentions when none existed;" and it was declared to be matter of notoriety that His Excellency had "given his confidence to, and was acting under, the influence of secret and unsworn advisers." "If," they said, "all the odium which has been poured upon the old executive council had been charged, as His Excellency proposes, upon the lieutenant-governors, their residence [in the province] would not have been very tolerable, and their authority would have become weakened or destroyed." The authority of Governor Simcoe, whose appointment followed close after the passing of the Constitutional Act of 1791, was adduced to show that "the very image and transcript" of the British constitution had been given to Canada. The governor was charged with having "assumed the government with most unhappy prejudices against the country," and with acting "with the temerity of a stranger and the assurance of an old inhabitant." Much warmth of feeling was shown

## REFUSAL OF SUPPLIES

throughout the entire report, and the committee gave it as their opinion that the House had no alternative left "but to abandon their privileges and honour, and to betray their duties and the rights of the people, or to withhold the supplies."<sup>1</sup> "All we have done," it was added, "will otherwise be deemed idle bravado, contemptible in itself, and disgraceful to the House."

The House adopted the report of the committee on a vote of thirty-two against twenty-one; and thus committed itself to the extreme measure of a refusal of the supplies. To the resolution adopting the report, a declaration was added that a responsible government was constitutionally established in the province.

In the debate on the question of adopting the report, the Tories took the ground that responsible government meant separation from England. "The moment," said Mr. McLean, "we establish the doctrine in practice, we are free from the mother country." Assuming that the imperial government would take this view of the matter, Solicitor-

<sup>1</sup> The object of the assembly in stopping, or rather restricting, the supplies, was to embarrass the government. They did not go to the extent of refusing all money votes, but granted different sums for roads, war losses, the post-office, schools, and the improvement of navigation. Twelve of these bills Sir Francis reserved, in the hope that he would be enabled to embarrass the machinery of the legislature if they were vetoed in England. But, much to his disgust, they were assented to by his sovereign. When he received the despatch containing the assent to these bills, he at first thought of suppressing it, but on sober second thought he transmitted it to the legislature.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

General Hagerman covertly threatened the majority of the House with the vengeance of "more than one hundred and fifty thousand men, loyal and true." The temper of both parties was violent, for already were generating those turbulent passions of which civil war was to be the final expression.

Sir Francis, having received an address adopted at a public meeting of the citizens of Toronto, assured the members of the deputation who presented it, that he should feel it his duty to reply with as much attention as if it had proceeded from either branch of the legislature; but that he should express himself "in plainer and more homely language." This was regarded as a slight to the inferior capacity of the "many-headed monster," and was resented with a bitterness which twenty years were too short to eradicate.

The deputation left the viceregal residence inspired by a common feeling of indignation at what they conceived to be intentional slights put upon them. It was soon resolved to repay the official insolence with a rejoinder. Dr. Rolph and Mr. O'Grady prepared the document. "We thank your Excellency," said the opening sentence, "for replying to our address, 'principally from the industrial classes of the city,' with as much attention as if it had proceeded from either branch of the legislature; and we are duly sensible, in receiving your Excellency's reply, of your great condescension in endeavouring to express yourself



## MURMURS OF INSURRECTION

in plainer and more homely language, presumed by your Excellency to be thereby brought down to the lower level of our plainer and more homely understandings." They then pretended to explain the deplorable neglect of their education by the maladministration of former governments. "It is," they added, "because we have been thus maltreated, neglected, and despised in our education and interests, under the system of government that has hitherto prevailed, that we are now driven to insist upon a change that cannot be for the worse." The change they desired to bring about was "cheap, honest, and responsible government."

After referring to the cases of Gourlay, Collins, Randal, Justice Willis and Captain Matthews, they proceeded: "And even your Excellency has disclosed a secret despatch to the minister in Downing Street (the very alleged tribunal of justice), containing most libellous matter against William Lyon Mackenzie, Esq., M.P.P., a gentleman known chiefly for his untiring services for his adopted and grateful country. We will not wait," they plainly told the governor, "for the immolation of any other of our public men, sacrificed to a nominal responsibility which we blush we have so long endured to the ruin of so many of His Majesty's dutiful and loyal subjects." After an elaborate argument to prove the necessity of a responsible administration, the rejoinder concluded by what Mackenzie, in a manuscript note he has

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

left, calls "the first low murmur of insurrection." "If your Excellency," the menace ran, "will not govern us upon these principles, you will exercise arbitrary sway, you will violate our charter, virtually abrogate our law, and justly forfeit our submission to your authority."

It was arranged that Lesslie and Ketchum should drive to Government House, deliver the document, and retire before there was time for any questions to be asked. They did so, simply saying they came from the deputation of citizens. Sir Francis did not even know who were the bearers of the unwelcome missile. He sent it, in a passion, to George Ridout, on the supposition that he had been concerned in the delivery. Ridout sent it back. It was in type before being despatched, and, scarcely had it reached the governor, when a printed copy of it was in the hands of every member of the House.

On March 14th, four new executive councillors were appointed, namely, Robert Baldwin Sullivan, William Allan, Augustus Baldwin, and John Elmsley. The last had resigned his seat in the executive council some years before, on the ground that he could not continue to hold it and act independently as a legislative councillor, though the principle of dependence had never before been pushed to the same extent as now. Three days after these appointments were announced, the House declared its "entire want of confidence" in

## VOTE OF NON-CONFIDENCE

the men whom Sir Francis had called to his council. The vote was thirty-two against eighteen. An address to the governor embodying this declaration of non-confidence, and expressing regret that His Excellency should have caused the previous council to tender their resignation while he declared his continued esteem for their talents and integrity, was subsequently passed on a division of thirty-two against nineteen.

The popular party had unintentionally given an incidental sanction to the assumptions of the governor, founded on the despatch of Lord Goderich on the dismissal of the Crown officers in 1833. Their removal was the result of their opposition in the legislature to the expressed wishes of the imperial government. In procuring the annulment of the bank charters, Mackenzie was not sustained by the party with whom he acted, and by whom the dismissal of the Crown officers was gratefully accepted. It was the misfortune of Sir Francis to be required to carry out the principle of complete subordination of all the officers of the local government to the Downing Street authorities, at a time when the disposition of the colonists to repudiate that system, and to insist on the responsibility of the executive council to the assembly, had become irresistible. But he showed the greatest reluctance to deviate from this course after he received a confidential despatch from Lord Glenelg, dated September 30th, 1836, laying it down as a principle that,

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

in the British American provinces, the executive councils should be composed of individuals possessing the confidence of the people. Every Canadian who had advocated this principle had been set down by Sir Francis as a republican and a traitor, and the principle itself he had denounced as unconstitutional. Sir Francis conceived his mission to be to fight and conquer what he called the "low-bred antagonist democracy." He thought the battle was to be won by steadily opposing "the fatal policy of concession," keeping the Tories in office, and putting down the party which he indifferently designated Reformers, Radicals, and Republicans. He thought himself entitled to claim credit for having, by his reply to "the industrial classes of Toronto," caused a scene of violence at a public meeting, at which, he relates to Lord Glenelg with much satisfaction, "Mr. Mackenzie totally failed in gaining attention," and Dr. Morrison, who was then mayor of Toronto, "was collared and severely shaken." "The whole affair," he adds, "was so completely stifled by the indignation of the people, that the meeting was dissolved without the passing of a single resolution."

The governor, who had completely thrown himself into the hands of the Family Compact, had other schemes for influencing the constituencies in favour of one party and against another; for he was not long in resolving to dissolve a House that

## HOSTILE ASSEMBLY DISSOLVED

voted only such supplies as would subserve the purposes of the majority, while it withheld others of which the want tended to embarrass the machinery of the government. This dissolution of the assembly, which took place on May 28th, 1836, was in effect a declaration of war.

Amongst the bills passed by the legislature were twelve money bills, which were reserved by His Excellency. The avowed object of reserving the bills was to deprive the majority of the House of what might be so distributed as to conduce to their re-election. On motion of Mr. Perry, the House had adopted the vicious principle of making the members of the legislature a committee for expending the £50,000 road money granted; and there was some point in the observation of Sir Francis that this member's name appeared too often in connection with such expenditures. But, although the reservation of these money bills did not lead to their being vetoed, the effect on the constituencies was the same. The elections were over before it was known that the royal assent had been given in opposition to the recommendation of the governor, who took care to make it understood that on this question he had the concurrence of his council.

Before the elections were announced, steps were taken, of which Sir Francis appears to have been cognizant, for procuring petitions in favour of a dissolution of the House. Perhaps they were suggested by himself or his council. Certain it is that

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

he had timely warning of petitions in process of being signed, some time before they were presented. The Tory press divided the country into two parties, one of whom was represented to be in favour of maintaining the supremacy of the British Crown in the province, and the other as being composed of traitors and republicans. This representation was transferred from partisan newspapers to official despatches and replies to admiring addresses. Timid persons were awed into inactivity, not thinking it prudent to appear at the polls, where their presence would have caused them to be branded as revolutionists. The Tories subscribed largely for election purposes ; votes were manufactured and violence resorted to.

By such means was Sir Francis afterwards enabled to boast of the perilous success he had achieved. Having dissolved the assembly because it proved unbending, he determined that he would personally see to it that the new House was one willing to submit to his dictation. It is not often that a governor has so mixed himself up in election contests. He had in fact done everything upon his own responsibility, having never consulted the imperial government, to whose directions he professed to feel it his duty to pay implicit obedience. He had written to Lord Glenelg informing him that it was his intention to dissolve the House, and instructing him—as if he were the superior—to send him no orders on the subject. Nor was this the only occa-

## BOND HEAD'S VAGARIES

sion on which he undertook to transmit his orders to Downing Street. When, in the spring of 1836, Robert Baldwin, one of his late councillors, started for England, he described him to Lord Glenelg as an agent of the revolutionary party, and expressed a wish that he might not be received at the colonial office, adding a suggestion that, if he should make any application, he should be effectually snubbed in a letter in reply, which should be transmitted to Canada for publication. He also denounced to the colonial minister the project of surrendering to the control of the Canadian legislature the casual and territorial revenues; being desirous of keeping the executive, as far as possible, financially independent of the popular branch of the legislature. He quarrelled with the commission of inquiry, which had been sent to Canada headed by Lord Gosford, for recommending that the executive council should be made accountable to public opinion, and assured the imperial government that the project was pregnant with every species of danger. When he received a confidential despatch from Lord Glenelg, acquainting him that this course had been determined on, he became half frantic; and on the publication of a despatch from Sir Archibald Campbell, lieutenant-governor of New Brunswick, directing him to increase the number of his councillors, and to select them from persons possessing the confidence of the people, he vented his disappointment by declaring that "the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

triumph which the loyal inhabitants of our North American colonies had gained over the demands of the Republicans was not only proved to be temporary, but was completely destroyed." He carried his indiscretion to an inconceivable extent. The province, he openly declared, was threatened with invasion from a foreign enemy; and he proceeded to throw out a defiant challenge to this imaginary foe. "In the name of every regiment of militia in Upper Canada," he said, "I publicly promulgate, let them come if they dare." This piece of audacious folly made him the subject of a remarkable practical joke. A deputation, headed by Hincks, waited on him to inquire from what point the attack was expected, the inference being that they desired to know in order that they might be prepared to repel the invaders.

The fate of British dominion in America, he assured the colonial minister, depended upon his advice being taken, and his acts sustained. Several times it was necessary to curb him; and once he made an inferential, rather than a direct, tender of his resignation. He dismissed George Ridout from the offices of colonel of the militia, judge of the District Court of Niagara and justice of the peace, on the pretence that he was an active member of the Alliance Society, which had issued an address, on the subject of the resignation of the late executive council, containing words personally offensive to the governor; and when this charge was dis-



## A PROMOTER OF REBELLION

proved to the satisfaction of Lord Glenelg, he refused to obey the order of the colonial minister to restore Ridout to office. He also refused to obey the instructions of the colonial secretary to appoint Marshall Spring Bidwell to a judgeship in the Court of Queen's Bench; and, when he had done his best to drive men into rebellion, he claimed credit for his foresight in having pointed out their traitorous intentions.

"After all," says Mr. Rattray, "the burden of reponsibility for that futile outbreak must rest upon the shoulders of the lieutenant-governor. 'He sowed the wind by exciting the passions of the masses, and reaped the whirlwind in the petty rebellion of which he must forever stand convicted as the chief promoter. Had he taken time to acquire a just knowledge of the condition of the country—had he acted with calm and impartial wisdom, presuming that knowledge to have been acquired, Upper Canada would not have known the stigma of even partial rebellion.'<sup>1</sup> His extravagant language, his arbitrary acts, his undisguised interference with the freedom of election, his sublime self-confidence, taken together, stamp him as at once the rashest, most violent, and yet the feeblest and most incompetent representative the Crown ever had in British North America."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> McMullen, *History*, p. 439.

<sup>2</sup> *The Scot in British North America*, Vol. ii, pp. 473, 474.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Mackenzie, Bidwell and Perry were among the members of the popular party who failed to secure a re-election. It was the first election at which the county of York had been divided into ridings. Mackenzie stood for the second riding, having for his opponent, Edward Thompson, a man without decision enough to make him a very decided partisan. He passed for a modified Reformer at the election, which was a great advantage to him, and acted with the Family Compact when he got into the House. As he had not energy enough to be bitter, many timid voters, alarmed by the cries of revolution raised by the governor and the Family Compact, thought that if they voted at all, it would be safest, if not best, to vote for him. He obtained four hundred and eighty-nine votes ; Mackenzie, three hundred and eighty-nine. Just before the election there had been a sale of lots, by the government, at the mouth of the River Credit. They were mostly divided into quarter acres, and were sold for thirty-two dollars each. Some of the patents were issued during the election, others only a few days before. But this did not turn the scale of the election ; for, in the list of voters, I find only four who voted for Thompson on lots at Port Credit. About an equal number of votes, offered for Mackenzie, were turned away on what appear to be frivolous grounds. If such great pains had not been taken by Thompson's friends to prevent a scrutiny, there might,

## SUFFERS DEFEAT IN YORK

looking at the disparity in the number of votes received by the two candidates, have been some reason for concluding that Mackenzie was beaten by a majority of legal votes. Nothing but a scrutiny could have settled the point in dispute. There was said to have been a suspiciously large increase in the number of voters. The unscrupulous influence of the government in the election, attested by Lord Durham's Report, is beyond question.<sup>1</sup>

It was said that Mackenzie was opposed by bank as well as government influence; and this seems not improbable, since he had procured the disallowance of two bank charter bills when he was in England. Complaints of bribery were also made; and if they were well founded, it is reasonable to suppose that the money formed part of the official election fund subscribed in Toronto. After the desperate policy resorted to for the purpose of ejecting Mackenzie from a previous legislature, it is not to be supposed that any effort would be spared to prevent his return. There can

<sup>1</sup> "The circumstances under which they [the members of the House] were elected, were such as to render them peculiarly objects of suspicion and reproach to a large number of their countrymen. They are accused of having violated their pledges at the election. In a number of instances, too, the elections were carried by the unscrupulous exercise of the influence of the government, and by a display of violence on the part of the Tories, who were emboldened by the countenance afforded to them by the government; such facts and such impressions produced in the country an exasperation and a despair of good government, which extended far beyond those who had actually been defeated at the poll."—Earl Durham's *Report on the Affairs of British North America*, June, 1839.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

be no doubt that the improper use of official influence was the main cause of the election resulting as it did. Sir Francis himself rode out to the polling place during the election. Mackenzie's mortification at a result which he believed to have been brought about by improper means, was extreme.

About the time of the commencement of the first legislative session, which took place on November 8th, 1836, Mackenzie was taken dangerously ill of inflammatory fever, followed by inflammation of the lungs and pleura, brought on by his taking cold. On November 23rd, he was pronounced convalescent ; but his ultimate recovery was slow.

Petitions against the return of any member whose seat it was intended to contest, were required to be presented within fourteen days of the commencement of the session. On December 13th—one month and five days after the session had opened—Dr. Morrison, on producing medical certificates of Mackenzie's illness, obtained an extension of the time for presenting a petition against Thompson's return. Seven days were allowed. The regulation set aside was not one of law, but was simply a rule of the House. When the allegations in the petition had become known to the House, the majority evinced extreme anxiety to avoid inquiry. Mackenzie, continuing to collect evidence and to increase his list of witnesses, refrained from completing his recognizances, as se-

## ELECTION PETITION KILLED

curity for costs, till nearly the expiration of the time required, namely, fourteen days after the presentation of the petition. New facts continued to come in; and, before handing in his list of witnesses, he wished to make it as complete as possible. But, by an entirely new construction of the law, he was held to have exceeded the time. Dr. Rolph showed the untenableness of the position which a partisan majority was ready to assume; but without avail. The petition was introduced on December 20th. It then, as required by law, lay on the table two days before being read; which last act, it was contended, completed the series which made up the presentation. The House had always acted on this construction; and it could not have one rule for itself and another for petitioners. The petition must therefore be considered as having been presented on the twenty-second; and the fourteen days for completing the recognizances would not end till January 5th. The order had been discharged on the fourth, which was an illegal abridgment of the time. The Speaker was required, on the twenty-second, to give notice to the petitioner of the day fixed for taking the petition into consideration; but he failed to give it till the thirtieth, and for his default, the House, not the petitioner, was responsible. This argument was conclusive; but the vote to discharge the order carried.

It may seem strange that the presentation of a

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

petition should include its reading, fixed by law at two days after its introduction ; but the House must be judged by its practice, and this was stated to have been uniformly different, on all previous occasions, from the course now taken. Jonas Jones, by whom the Act relating to contested elections was brought in, did Mackenzie full justice on this occasion. "He considered that Mr. Mackenzie had a right to count fourteen days from the time his memorial was read, and that he had neglected no requirement of the law ;" and, on this ground, Jones voted against an amendment declaring that the order relating to the petition had been legally discharged, and that therefore it ought not to be restored. Ogle R. Gowan, another political opponent of the petitioner, showed that, in the previous parliament, he had been placed in precisely the same position as Mackenzie with respect to time ; and that not a single member of the House, a large majority of whom were opposed to him in politics, raised an objection. One thing is very clear, the government party was seriously anxious to avoid an inquiry. If they had nothing to fear from a scrutiny, it is difficult to conceive what motive they could have had for departing from the uniform practice in order to prevent an investigation.

Mackenzie had the authority of the senior clerk of the House for believing his was the uniform practice, and on December 22nd, the day on which it

## REASONS FOR AN INQUIRY

was contended the presentation of the petition was completed, MacNab obtained fourteen days for the sitting member to prepare his list of witnesses—an implied confession that the fourteen days, after which the petition would be acted upon, commenced on that day. An amendment was added to this motion giving Mackenzie the same time to prepare the list of his witnesses, and yet the majority afterwards refused to give the time they had thus agreed upon for completing his recognizances.

There was the more reason for the inquiry, because the allegations in the petition included even the head of the government in charges of undue interference by making inflammatory replies to addresses, with a view to influencing the election;<sup>1</sup> by the issuing of land patents to persons known to be hostile to the petitioner, without exacting a com-

<sup>1</sup> A few of the replies given by Sir Francis to addresses, and published with a view to influencing the elections generally, illustrate his attitude. In his reply to the electors of Toronto he said :—

“GENTLEMEN :—No one can be more sensible than I am, that the stoppage of the supplies has caused a general stagnation of business which will probably end in the ruin of many of the inhabitants of this city; and in proportion as the metropolis of the province is impoverished, the farmers’ market must be lowered; for how can he possibly receive money, when those who should consume his produce are seen flying in all directions from a land from which industry has been publicly repelled?”

Denouncing the Reformers as agitators, he said :—

“My plans and projects are all contained and published in the instructions which I received from the king. They desire me to correct, without partiality, the grievances of this country; and it is because the agitators see I am determined to do so, that they are endeavour-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

pliance with the conditions of purchase ; besides gross partiality on the part of the returning officer and bribery on the part of the sitting member. It would have been far better that these grave charges had been subjected to the test of a rigid scrutiny ; because, if they were not well-founded, their refutation could most easily and most effectually have been made in this way.

The decision of the House can scarcely excite surprise ; for in a case of that peculiar nature, where either side of the case could be sustained by plausible arguments, a partisan majority, so violently opposed as it was to the petitioner, was not likely to be very scrupulous in its decision. Rightly or wrongly the petitioner was firmly convinced that he had been

ing to obstruct me by every artifice in their power. They declare me to be their enemy, and the truth is, I really am."

But his address to the electors of Newcastle district transcends, if possible, the rest :—

"As your district," he said, "has now the important duty to perform of electing representatives for a new parliament, I think it may practically assist, if I clearly lay before you what is the conduct I intend inflexibly to pursue, in order that by the choice of your new members, you may resolve either to support me or oppose me, as you may think proper. I consider that my character and your interests are embarked in one and the same boat. If by my administration I increase your wealth, I shall claim for myself credit, which it will be totally out of your power to withhold from me ; if I diminish your wealth, I feel it would be hopeless for any one to shield me from blame.

"As we have, therefore, one common object in view, the plain question for us to consider is, which of us has the greatest power to do good to Upper Canada ? Or, in other words, can you do as much good for yourselves as I can for you ? It is my opinion that you cannot ! It is



## HEAD PLACED ON HIS DEFENCE

defrauded of his seat, and unfairly and illegally denied the liberty of proving how it had been done, and of recovering what had been unwarrantably taken from him. He had a keen sense of personal injury, and when wrong done to him was also done to the public, he was slow to forget, and not too ready to forgive.

Dr. Duncombe, a member of the Reform party in Upper Canada, who had held a seat in the legislative assembly, brought to the notice of the colonial secretary, Lord Glenelg, the complaints made against the lieutenant-governor in connection with this election, as well as against his general policy, and Sir Francis was required to put in his defence. The report, as everybody had foreseen, was a

my opinion that if you choose to dispute with me, and live on bad terms with the mother country, you will, to use a homely phrase, only 'quarrel with your own bread and butter.' If you like to try the experiment by electing members who will again stop the supplies, do so, for I can have no objection whatever; on the other hand, if you choose fearlessly to embark your interests with my character, depend upon it I will take paternal care of them both.

"If I am allowed I will, by reason and mild conduct, begin first of all by tranquillizing the country, and as soon as that object shall be gained, I will use all my influence with His Majesty's government to make such alterations in the land-granting department as shall attract into Upper Canada the redundant wealth and population of the mother country. Men, women, and money are what you want, and if you will send to parliament members of moderate politics, who will cordially and devoid of self-interest assist me, depend upon it you will gain more than you possibly can do by hopelessly trying to insult me; for let your conduct be what it may, I am quite determined, so long as I may occupy the station I now do, neither to give offence, nor to take it."

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

verdict of acquittal, and a special verdict, it must be remarked, since it declared that the country owed the viceregal defendant a debt of gratitude for his patriotism and other inestimable qualities. But the public was not thereby convinced, and the discontents were not allayed.

A considerable portion of Dr. Duncombe's letter, containing the charge against the lieutenant-governor on which the committee had pronounced, related to the election for the second riding of York in which a committee had been illegally refused to Mackenzie. Nor was he allowed to produce before the committee, that pretended to inquire into these charges, the evidence which he was prepared to produce in support of them.

The case of Mackenzie, though perhaps not exactly like any other, cannot be regarded as having stood alone. The improper means taken by the executive to influence the elections did not affect him alone. Sir Francis openly proclaimed himself the enemy of the Reformers; and he brought all the weight of his position to bear against them as a party.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "On the 15th of February, 1837," Mackenzie related, "Samuel Lount, the late upright and patriotic member for Simcoe, called at my house accompanied by Thrift Meldrum, merchant and innkeeper in Barrie, and I mentioned to them that I was collecting evidence for a pamphlet to expose the government, as the executive influence had cheated me out of my right to do so through an election contest for the second riding. Lount took out his pocket memorandum book, and stated that Meldrum had been requested to open his tavern for Robinson and Wickens, at the time of the late election, and that he did

## INJUSTICE AND CALUMNY

The sense of injustice engendered by these means rankled in men's minds, and tended to beget a fatal resolution to seek redress by a resort to physical force. This resolution, which did not assume a positive shape for sometime afterwards, was a capital error, and one which some were to expiate with their lives, others with sufferings and privations and contumely scarcely preferable to death.

It was not sufficient for Sir Francis and his friends to pursue with injustice one of the two parties into which the country was divided; they were not less ready to assail them with personal calumny. The Tory press asked: "Who is William Lyon Mackenzie?" And then proceeded to give its own answer. With the Celtic blood boiling in his veins at the personal insults offered, Mackenzie replied in terms

so; that since the election he (Meldrum) had informed him (Lount), that on one occasion he (Meldrum, accompanied Wellesley Ritchie, the government agent, from Toronto to the Upper Settlement; that Ritchie called him (Meldrum) to one side at Crew's tavern, where the stage stopped, and told him that Sir Francis had employed him (Ritchie) to give the deeds to the settlers in Simcoe, and that he (Ritchie) wanted him (Meldrum) to assist him in turning Lount out. Meldrum agreed to do his best, opened his house, and says that Wickens paid him faithfully for his liquor, etc. When Lount had read the above from his memorandum, I asked Meldrum if he could swear to these facts. He said he could, for they were perfectly correct. I then asked Lount, who gave me a number of important facts, why he did not contest the election, and he told me it would have been throwing £100 away, and losing time, for that no one, who knew who the members were, could for a moment expect justice from them."

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

that cannot be characterized as either temperate or discreet.<sup>1</sup> The fiery words which he used under the excitement can hardly be held to express more than the exasperation of the moment; and if they did not fall harmless, it was because the government of Sir Francis had inclined the people to listen to desperate counsels.

In the session of 1836-7, which closed on March 4th, Sir Francis's "bread and butter" assembly was very far from realizing his election promises of reform. But it is not probable that any section of the public was disappointed, for they were not promises that any one expected to see fulfilled. The fear of a legal and inevitable dissolution, which seemed to be impending, weighed heavily upon parliament. King William IV would probably not live four years; and, on the demise of the sovereign, the

<sup>1</sup> "Small cause, indeed," he said, "have Highlanders and the descendants of Highlanders to feel a friendship for the Guelphic family. If the Stuarts had their faults, they never enforced loyalty in the glens and valleys of the north by banishing and extirpating the people; it was reserved for the Brunswickers to give, as a sequel to the massacre of Glencoe, the cruel order for depopulation. I am proud of my descent from a rebel race who held borrowed chieftains, a scrip nobility, rag money, and national debt in abomination. And, notwithstanding the doctor's late operations with the lancet, this rebel blood of mine will always be uppermost. Words cannot express my contempt at witnessing the servile, crouching attitude of the country of my choice. If the people felt as I feel, there is never a Grant or Glenelg who crossed the Tay and Tweed to exchange high-born Highland poverty for substantial Lowland wealth, who would dare to insult Upper Canada with the official presence, as its ruler, of such an equivocal character as this Mr. what do they call him——Francis Bond Head."

## THE PRELUDES OF REVOLUTION

assembly would legally cease to exist. Sir Francis was not likely to fare so well in a second election as he had in the first. A bill was therefore passed, which enacted that a dissolution of the House should not necessarily follow a demise of the Crown. The money bills, passed this session, showed an extraordinary degree of recklessness, on the part of the House, in incurring debt. The entire amount voted must have been about five millions of dollars, at that time a very large sum compared to the amount of revenue. The establishment of fifty-seven rectories by Sir John Colborne, before he left the government, which had given great offence to a large majority of the population, received the approval of the assembly.

The session closed in one of those hurricanes of passion which often precedes a violent revolutionary movement. The question of a union of Upper and Lower Canada had been before the House during the session, and resolutions had been passed condemning the project. At twelve o'clock on the last day of the session—the prorogation was to take place at three—the concurrence of the House was asked in an address to the Crown founded on the resolutions. Dr. Rolph moved an amendment, the object of which was to prevent a decision on the question in the absence of many members who had already gone home. Having been stopped by the Speaker he later obtained the right to enter on a wider range of discussion, and went on amid

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

much confusion, but when he was uttering the words, "The evil of our inland situation is admitted; what is the remedy?"—the Speaker announced, "The time has arrived—half-past one—to wait on the lieutenant-governor with some joint address." And the scene was abruptly brought to a close.

Thus ended the last regular session of the Upper Canada legislature preceding the outbreak of 1837, though an extraordinary session was to intervene. Several such scenes had occurred during the first session of the "bread and butter" parliament.<sup>1</sup>

In the spring of this year (1837) Mackenzie went to New York, arriving there about the end of March. At the trade sales, then going on, he purchased several thousand volumes of books, and made large additions to his printing establishment. About two years before, he had added a large bookstore to his other business, and his present purchases furnished decisive proof that, at this time, the idea of risking everything upon an armed insurrection had not entered into his calculations.

On July 4th, he published the first number of the *Constitution* newspaper, the last issue of which appeared on November 29th, 1837. The first and fourth pages of the number for De-

<sup>1</sup> The *Montreal Gazette*, a Tory paper, was greatly scandalized at the "scenes of an unseemly character that have lately been enacted in the Commons House of Assembly of our sister province of Upper Canada. We particularly allude," it said, "to the disorderly, and, we must add, disgraceful manner in which important questions were discussed during the late session."

## REVOLUTIONARY IDEAS

ember 6th were printed, when it was brought to a violent close by the breaking out of the insurrection. The forms of type were broken up by the Loyalist mob. When he brought the *Colonial Advocate* to a close, he was anxious to bid adieu to the harassing cares of Canadian journalism forever ; but his political friends had, by their urgent entreaties, succeeded in inducing him to re-enter a field to which he had previously bid a final farewell. The *Constitution* became the organ of increasing discontent, and might easily be mistaken for the promoter of it. But, as always happens, the press reflected public opinion with more or less accuracy, and already the Liberal portion of it had begun to speak in no muffled or ambiguous accents. The country was in fact entering upon the period of revolutionary ideas, expressed in speeches and rhymes, and in newspapers and more solemn documents. Sir Francis may be said to have produced the first specimens in inflammatory replies to addresses. What nearly always happens, on such occasions, happened on this. People found themselves committed to revolutionary ideas without the least suspicion of the extent to which they had gone, much less of what was to follow. The new House met for the first time on November 8th, 1836. Dr. Duncombe's letter to Lord Glenelg, charging the head of the provincial government with crimes which deserved impeachment, was referred to a committee of the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

House of Assembly which sat on November 25th. Every one knew in advance what the decision would be; but the proceeding was in the nature of an impeachment of Sir Francis. For, if he were found guilty, what was to be done? A colonial governor who misconducts himself can only be tried in England; and unless there was a foregone determination to exculpate him from the charges made against him, there could be no object in referring them to a committee. Dr. Rolph, assuming a serio-comic air, ridiculed the proceeding in a speech that will ever be memorable in Canadian history.



## CHAPTER XI

### PRECURSORS OF CIVIL WAR

**T**HE crisis was now rapidly approaching. It was to come first in Lower Canada, with which the fortunes of the western province were to become involved. Lord Gosford, Sir Charles Grey and Sir George Gipps, the royal commissioners appointed to inquire into the grievances complained of in Lower Canada, had reported; and, about the middle of April, their reports—five in number—were made public. The surrender of the casual and territorial revenue to the assembly, whose claim to control it had led to repeated and angry disputes, was recommended on condition that the arrearages of salaries, amounting to £31,000, should be paid, and a civil list, amounting to about £20,000, should be granted during the life of the king. The legislative council, it was recommended, should be erected into a court of impeachment for offending public servants. The demands for an elective legislative council and a responsible executive were reported against. The decision of the commissioners on the subject of the legislative council was in accordance with instructions they had received. In a despatch dated July 17th, 1835, Lord Glenelg informed the commissioners

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

that all discussion of one of the vital principles of the provincial government—a Crown-nominated legislative council was alluded to—was precluded by the strong predilections of the king, the solemn pledges repeatedly given for the maintenance of the existing system, and the prepossessions derived from constitutional analogy and usage. The decision thus communicated by way of instructions to the commissioners was merely echoed by them. It affected Upper equally with Lower Canada; for Lord Glenelg, in his instructions to Sir Francis Bond Head, had stated as his reason for not answering the part of the grievance report which referred to the constitution of the legislative council, that the instructions to the commissioners contained views on this point which had received the deliberate sanction of the king.

The imperial government went beyond the recommendation of the commissioners. Lord John Russell, on March 8th, obtained the assent of the House of Commons to resolutions which, among other things, authorized the seizing of the funds in the hands of the receiver-general of Lower Canada, and applying them to purposes for which the assembly would only grant them on condition that certain reforms should be effected. On October 3rd, 1836, the House had come to the resolution to adjourn their proceedings till His Majesty's government should have commenced "the great work of justice and reform, especially by bringing the legis-

## LORD RUSSELL'S CONTENTION

lative assembly into harmony with the wishes and wants of the people." Lord John Russell contended that the demand for an executive council, similar to the cabinet which existed in Great Britain, set up a claim for what was incompatible with the relations which ought to exist between the colony and the mother country. "These relations," he said, repeating the stereotyped official idea of those times, "required that His Majesty should be represented in the colony not by ministers, but by a governor sent out by the king, and responsible to the parliament of Great Britain." A colonial ministry, he contended, would impose on England all the inconveniences and none of the advantages of colonies. This simply meant that there was no hope from England of responsible government for either province.

As to the authority of the imperial legislature to remedy a defect in the cessation of supply on the part of a colonial assembly, he apprehended that there could be no doubt. The same thing had been done only the year before with respect to Jamaica ; and that was precedent sufficient. When a similar question was raised with regard to the legislature of the colony of New York, Dr. Franklin had admitted that the power, now contended for, resided in the imperial House of Commons. With two such precedents, Lord John Russell deemed himself justified in resorting to a measure of confiscation which led to rebellion.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Mr. Hume had a better appreciation of the crisis. He looked upon the proceedings as involving a question of civil war. If the Canadians did not resist, they would deserve the slavish bonds which the resolutions of Lord John Russell would prepare for them ; and he hoped that, if justice were denied to Canada, those who were oppressed would achieve the same victory that had crowned the efforts of the men who had established that American republic which had given a check to those monarchical principles which would otherwise have overwhelmed the liberties of Europe.

How little the House of Commons was conscious of the results that hung upon its decision, may be gathered from the fact that, while Mr. Hume was speaking, the House was counted to see if there was a quorum. Not over one-tenth of the members who usually attended the Lords came to listen to or take part in the debate ; and except Lord Brougham, who entered on the journals his protest against such proceedings, not a single member opposed the passage of the resolutions.

The resolutions were carried, and the result, which Mr. Hume had predicted, followed. They were received with a storm of indignation by the French-Canadians.<sup>1</sup> The local officials and their

<sup>1</sup> As these resolutions were the great factors in provoking civil war, in both provinces, the one most affecting Upper Canada is here given : " 5. That while it is expedient to improve the composition of the executive council in Lower Canada, it is unadvisable to subject it to the responsibility demanded by the House of Assembly of that province."

## THE FEELING IN LOWER CANADA

friends were jubilant at the imaginary success which had been achieved for them. The journals of the opposition were defiant. The seizure of the revenue was denounced as robbery. "Henceforth," said an English organ of the opposition, "there must be no peace in the province—no quarter for the plunderers. Agitate! agitate!! agitate!!! Destroy the revenue; denounce the oppressors. Everything is lawful when the fundamental liberties are in danger. 'The guards die—they never surrender.'" At public meetings the imperial resolutions were denounced as a breach of faith and a violation of right. The Toronto Alliance Society, on April 17th, expressed its sympathy with the Lower Canadians, and condemned the coercion resolutions of the imperial government.

Success is the only thing that is generally held to justify insurrection against a government; and though it is impossible to lay down any general rule as to the point at which submission to oppression ceases to be a virtue, it is generally admitted that the initiation of rebellion can only be excused by a reasonable prospect of success. If the question of the Lower Canadian rebellion could be decided upon the merits of the principle at stake, we should be obliged to confess that what the Canadians fought for was just as sacred as that right of self-taxation for which Washington took up arms, and in defence of which the thirteen American colonies threw off the yoke of England.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

On June 15th, Lord Gosford tried the effect of a proclamation on the agitation which was convulsing society. But the proclamation was torn to pieces by the *habitants* amid cries of "*A bas la proclamation.*" Louis Joseph Papineau, the chief agitator, a man of commanding eloquence who was omnipotent with the French-Canadian population, traversed the whole country from Montreal to Rimouski, holding meetings everywhere and exciting the people to the highest pitch of exasperation. While he was on the south shore of the St. Lawrence, LaFontaine and Girouard were performing a similar mission on the other bank of the great river. Dr. Wolfred Nelson, too, bore his share in the work of popular agitation, having been a conspicuous figure at the first of the "anti-coercion" meetings which was held at St. Ours, in the county of Richelieu. Some of the meetings were attended by men with firearms in their hands.

In the beginning of July, Mackenzie discussed, in his newspaper, the question,—“Will the Canadians declare their independence and shoulder their muskets?” “Two or three thousand Canadians, meeting within twenty-five miles of the fortress of Quebec, in defiance of the proclamation, with muskets on their shoulders and the Speaker of the House of Commons at their head, to pass resolutions declaratory of their abhorrence of British colonial tyranny, and their determination to resist

## INDEPENDENCE DECLARATION

and throw it off, is a sign not easily misunderstood." He then proceeded to the question: "Can the Canadians conquer?" and gave several reasons for answering it in the affirmative.

These opinions were deliberately written and published by Mackenzie on July 5th, 1837. The French-Canadians appealed to the other British provinces of America for co-operation, and looked to the United States for support. And this co-operation the leading Reformers of Upper Canada resolved to give.

On August 2nd, a "Declaration of the Reformers of Toronto to their Fellow Reformers in Upper Canada," was published in the *Constitution*. This document was virtually a declaration of independence, and it was afterwards called the "Declaration of the Independence of Upper Canada;" but there is reason to doubt whether its purport was fully understood even by all who signed it. Setting out with the declaration that the time for the assertion of popular rights and the redress of the multiplied wrongs of half a century, patiently borne, had arrived, it entered into a long recital of grievances, and ended with a pledge to make common cause with Lower Canada, and a resolve to call a convention of delegates at Toronto, "to take into consideration the political condition of Upper Canada with authority to its members to appoint commissioners, to meet others to be named on behalf of Lower Canada and any

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

other colonies, armed with suitable powers as a congress to seek an effectual remedy for the grievances of the colonists."

This declaration has a public and a secret history. The public history is, that at a meeting of Reformers held at John Doel's brewery, Toronto, on July 28th, the troubles in Lower Canada were taken into consideration. On motion of Mackenzie, seconded by Dr. Morrison, a resolution was passed tendering the thanks and expressing the admiration of the Reformers of Upper Canada to Papineau and his compatriots for their "devoted, honourable, and patriotic opposition" to the coercive measures of the imperial government. Other resolutions were passed to make common cause with the Lower Canadians, "whose successful coercion would doubtless, in time, be visited upon us, and the redress of whose grievances would be the best guarantee for the redress of our own;" and, among other things, appointing a committee to draft and report to an adjourned meeting a declaration of the objects and principles which the Reformers aimed to carry out.<sup>1</sup>

The secret history is this. The document was a joint production in which O'Grady's and Dr. Rolph's pens were engaged. The draft was taken to a meeting at Elliott's Tavern on the corner of

<sup>1</sup> The committee consisted of James Hervey Price, O'Bierne, John Edward Tims, John Doel, John McIntosh, James Armstrong, T. J. O'Neill, and Mackenzie, with power to add to their number.



## SIGNERS OF THE DECLARATION

Yonge and Queen Streets, previous to its being taken before the adjourned meeting at the brewery for adoption. Dr. Morrison, on producing the draft of the declaration, laid it down as a sound canon that neither he nor any other member of the legislature ought to be called upon to sign it. To this rule James Lesslie took exception. He said that a document of grave import had been read to the meeting. It had been written by men who gave the most of their time to politics, and read to men who gave most of their attention to trade and commerce. The responsibility of signing such a document should not be thrown upon those who had not prepared it, and who knew least about its contents. The professional politicians ought to set the example, and then the others might follow. If the declaration contained only an enumeration of facts, and if it were a proper document to be signed, the members of the legislature, such as Drs. Morrison and Rolph, ought to set the example; and if they did so, he would follow. Dr. Morrison found it necessary to append his name to the declaration, but as Dr. Rolph was not there to pursue the same course, Lesslie refused to sign, and he induced his brother William to erase his signature. Next morning Dr. Rolph sent for Lesslie to inquire what had been done at the meeting, and the latter replied by letter, repeating his objections to being put in the front rank of a movement in which he ought to be a follower. Dr. Morrison was not without rea-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

sons for his hesitation and timidity, though it is too much to expect that men will enter on a course fraught with danger, if their advisers refuse to accompany them.

At the meeting held at the brewery on July 31st, at which the declaration was adopted, a permanent vigilance committee was appointed. It consisted of the members of the committee who had reported the draft of the declaration; and Mackenzie complied with a request that he should become agent and corresponding secretary. The plan of proceeding was similar to that acted upon in Lower Canada, where the public meetings were held under the direction of a central committee; and Mackenzie's duties as agent were to attend meetings in different parts of the country, taking, in Upper Canada, the rôle played by Papineau in the sister province.

The machinery of agitation, of which the motive power was in Toronto, was to have four several centres of action outside the city. At the meeting held in the brewery on July 28th, a plan, submitted by Mackenzie, "for uniting, organizing, and registering the Reformers of Upper Canada as a political union," was adopted. A network of societies was to be spread over the country; and care was to be taken to have them composed of persons known to one another.

When Sir Francis dissolved the assembly and resorted to the most unconstitutional means of influencing the elections of 1836, he carried despair

## REVOLUTION THE SOLE REMEDY

into many a breast where hope had till then continued to abide. The coercion of Lower Canada by the imperial government and legislature caused all such persons, in the Canadas, to look to a revolution as the only means of relief. Mackenzie was among those who came to this conclusion. But he only shared with a large class of the population a sentiment which was the inevitable product of the existing state of things, and which affected masses of men, at the same moment, with a common and irresistible impulse. The Toronto declaration of July 31st was the first step on the road to insurrection. It committed all who accepted it to share the fortunes of Lower Canada. The machinery of organization and agitation, which was created at the same time, became the instrument of revolt.

The public meetings which Mackenzie had undertaken to attend now commenced. At the first held at Newmarket, the agent of the Toronto central committee spoke for an hour and a half. A resolution was passed approving of the Toronto declaration, and appointing delegates to the convention to be held in that city. Their names were Samuel Lount, afterwards executed for high treason; Nelson Gorham, who became involved in the rebellion and was for a long time a political refugee in the United States; Silas Fletcher, who also became a political refugee; Jeremiah Graham, and John McIntosh, M.P.P., who, though a party to the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

insurrection, was never arrested and scarcely suspected. The principal complaint made in the resolutions was that the constitution was "continually violated and trampled upon by the executive, and countenanced by the colonial office and the English parliament." To take these grievances and the general state of the province into consideration was to be the business of the convention. It was also resolved to abstain, as far as possible, from the consumption of duty-paying articles; and to unite with the Lower Canadians, whose cause was declared to be the cause of Upper Canada, "in every practicable measure for the maintenance of civil and religious liberty." A political association and a permanent vigilance committee were formed.

Two days after, the second of the series of public meetings took place at Lloydtown. Mackenzie, Lloyd, Lount, and Gibson, all of whom afterwards bore an active part in the rebellion, addressed the meeting. Mackenzie became head of the proposed provisional government; Gibson was comptroller, and had, besides, a military position; Lloyd was the trusted messenger who carried to Papineau intelligence from his supporters in Upper Canada. No less than seventeen resolutions were passed. A resort to physical force was declared not to be contemplated. Approval of the Toronto declaration was expressed, and delegates to the proposed convention were appointed. They were, Dr. W.

## OMINOUS RESOLUTIONS

W. Baldwin and Messrs. Jesse Lloyd, James Grey, Mark Learmont, John Lawson and Gerard Irwin. Separation from England was advocated on the ground that the connection imposed upon the province the evils of a State Church, an "unnatural aristocracy, party privilege, public debt, and general oppression." To avert much bloodshed on both sides, and loss and dishonour by a war between people of a common origin, the payment of a price for the freedom of the province was suggested. If the question of independence was tested by means of the ballot, it was hinted that there could be no doubt as to the result. Elective institutions, extending even to the judiciary, were declared indispensable.

Mackenzie left Lloydstown accompanied by only a couple of friends. About fifty young farmers mounted their horses and escorted him to the village of Boltontown. As soon as Mr. Coats had been called to the chair, the Orangemen declared their intention of putting down the meeting, and of resorting to force if necessary to accomplish their object. Finding they were not numerous enough to prevent the adoption of the Toronto declaration, they grew vociferous, rendering it impossible to continue the proceedings. They gave Mackenzie's escort five minutes to leave the place, threatening, if their mandate were not complied with, to bring out firearms, which they professed to have all ready loaded in one of the houses. This threat was

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

neither regarded on the one side, nor carried into effect on the other.

After the public meeting had been broken up, part of the business it had on hand was transacted in Mr. Boulton's house. Delegates to the convention were appointed and a vigilance committee named. Some hours after, when several of those who had formed Mackenzie's escort to the place had gone, a collision between the two parties took place. Twenty-six Mackenzie men, mounted, were crossing the bridge over the Humber when one of the opposite party seized the hindmost by the thigh, as if with the intention of forcing him into the river. Two others were attacked at the same time. All the twenty-six dismounted instantly, and fell upon their assailants with whatever was within their reach. Blood flowed freely; and some of the assailing party, as they lay on the ground, were made to confess that they had only got their deserts.

The meetings followed one another in rapid succession. The next was held in the township of Caledon, two days after the one at Boltontown. Some of the resolutions passed at this meeting were drawn up with considerable skill, and one of them undertook to define the case in which an appeal to physical force would become a duty.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A resolution moved by Mr. James Baird, and seconded by Mr. Owen Garrity, read thus: "That it is the duty of the subjects of kings and governors to keep the peace, and submit to the existing laws;

## WHEN FORCE IS JUSTIFIABLE

From Caledon to Chingacousy, the agent of the Toronto central committee was escorted by about twenty horsemen. Here a meeting was held in front of the house of John Campbell, on the morning of August 10th. Trouble had been anticipated; and Francis Campbell, brother of John Campbell, on whose grounds the meeting was held, went with the statutes under his arm ready to read the Riot Act, if necessary; and John Scott, another magistrate, had gone there surrounded by a number of Orangemen. Several of these and some of Mackenzie's supporters had firearms; others carried heavy clubs. The two parties were greatly exasperated against one another, and the Orangemen made use of threatening language. To prevent a collision, Mackenzie's

that it is equally the duty of kings and rulers to administer the government for the well-being and happiness of the community; and that when the existing laws and constitution of society become notoriously oppressive in form or administration, it is then, and at all times, the duty of free subjects, for the benefit, safety, and happiness of all parties to call meetings, and ascertain, as far as can be done, the general opinion and estimate of all the good and evil which government dispenses, as it is also the duty of a just government to protect its subjects in the peaceful exercise of such a precious and obvious right. If the redress of our wrongs can be otherwise obtained, the people of Upper Canada have not a just cause to use force. But the highest obligation of a citizen being to preserve the community, and every other political duty being derived from and subordinate to it, every citizen is bound to defend his country against its enemies, both foreign and domestic. When a government is engaged in systematically oppressing a people, and destroying their securities against future oppression, it commits the same species of wrong to them which warrants an appeal to force against a foreign

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

party gave way. An adjournment took place to John Campbell's house. What had become the usual routine of these meetings was gone through, and one of the resolutions mentioned independence as a state of existence that would have some advantages over that which the province then enjoyed.

On August 12th, Mackenzie was at John Stewart's, in the Scotch Block, Esquimes. Here at first his party were outnumbered, but after the opposition had retired, resolutions were passed declaring that the boasted remedial measures of which the governor had, on his arrival, declared himself the bearer, were a deception. "There is," wrote Mackenzie in reference to this meeting, "discontent, vengeance, and rage in men's minds. No one can have any idea of the public feel-

enemy. The history of England and of this continent is not wanting in examples by which the rulers and the ruled may see that, although the people have been often willing to endure bad government with patience, there are legal and constitutional limits to that endurance. The glorious revolution of 1688, on one continent, and of 1776, on another, may serve to remind those rulers who are obstinately persisting in withholding from their subjects adequate securities for good government, although obviously necessary for the permanence of that blessing, that they are placing themselves in a state of hostility against the governed; and that to prolong a state of irresponsibility and insecurity such as existed in England during the reign of James II, and as now exists in Lower Canada, is a dangerous act of aggression against a people. A magistrate who degenerates into a systematic oppressor, and shuts the gates of justice on the public, thereby restores them to their original right of defending themselves, for he withholds the protection of the law, and so forfeits his claim to enforce their obedience by the authority of law."



## TWO HUNDRED HOSTILE MEETINGS

ing who has not taken the same means that I have to ascertain it."

None of the speeches made by Mackenzie at these meetings were reported, or have been preserved. But the effect of his prodigious power as a speaker, over a popular audience, must have been very great. The Tory organs, after a meeting held at Churchville, openly threatened that if he held any more meetings, he would be assassinated. It was afterwards stated that a deliberate plot had been entered into, by the hostile party who attended this meeting, to take Mackenzie's life; and that one who was a party to it had divulged the secret to a person who, at the proper time, would publicly reveal it.

From the Vaughan meeting he and David Gibson were accompanied by a cavalcade of about a hundred horsemen and some thirty carriages; and it appears to have been understood that, in future, the Orangemen, if they disturbed any more meetings, should be met by their own weapons.

Between the beginning of August and the early part of December, when the outbreak occurred, two hundred meetings are said to have been held in the country, at nearly all of which the Toronto declaration was read and sanctioned. One hundred and fifty vigilance committees, in connection with the central committee at Toronto, were formed. The nature of the movement could hardly have been misunderstood by the most unreflecting spec-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

tator ; but only some of the members of the branch societies were actually trusted with the secret of the intended revolt. Some of the active leaders joined no association ; and although they apparently kept aloof from the movement, they were secretly among its most active promoters.

A commercial crisis aided the public discontent. In May, the New York banks suspended specie payments ; and those of Montreal followed. In Toronto, the Bank of Upper Canada was looked upon as the prop of the government ; and it was probably as much for political as commercial reasons that Mackenzie advised the farmers to go to the counter of the bank and demand specie for their notes. As a political weapon against the government, an attempt to drain the banks of their specie by creating a panic could have no sort of justification, except in times of revolution. When Mackenzie produced a run upon the Bank of Upper Canada, a resort to armed insurrection was a contingency to which many were looking with alternate hope and fear : hope that it might be avoided, fear that it would come.

If the Upper Canada banks had suspended specie payments, their charters would have been liable to forfeiture. Chiefly to prevent this result, Sir Francis called an extraordinary session of the legislature on June 19th. In the course of the session, which lasted about a month, a bill of prospective indemnity for pursuing such a course was passed. In the mean-

## THREATS OF ASSASSINATION

time, the Commercial Bank at Kingston had suspended; and the Farmers' Bank in Toronto stopped soon afterwards. The government loaned £100,000, by the issue of debentures, to the Bank of Upper Canada; £30,000 to the Gore Bank; and £40,000 to the Commercial Bank. But when the rebellion came, the suspension of specie payment followed.

At the close of the session, Mackenzie, in his journal, declaimed on the condition of public affairs with scathing bitterness. The style is characteristic of the man, when his soul was stirred to its inmost depth. He continued to attend political meetings in the country; and the exasperation of his enemies continued to increase. In Westminster, Middlesex, the friends of Mackenzie and the supporters of Papineau turned out in such large numbers that the opposite party shrank from the attempt to carry out their scheme of attack.

Threats, secret and open, were now made by the Tory party to assassinate Mackenzie. An anonymous letter, bearing the Hamilton postmark, was sent to Charles Durand, barrister of that place, informing him that Mackenzie would be assassinated. It was signed "Brutus," as a guarantee of its sincerity. The Tory press, more bold than anonymous letter writers, was scarcely less explicit. Through this channel, he was informed that, "if he dared to show himself in the London district with the evil design of poisoning the happiness of the contented settlers by agitation

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

and strife, they would put it forever out of his power to repeat his crime." And shortly after, credible witnesses swore that the source of the danger lay much higher than the exasperated men who carried bludgeons to public meetings—men who bore the titles of honourable, and were thought to constitute excellent material out of which to make executive councillors, being charged with plotting for Mackenzie's destruction.

Scarcely had the news of the coercion measure of Lord John Russell reached Canada, when the threatening utterances to which reference has been made commenced. The confessions of English statesmen, that the thirteen colonies of America were right in resisting taxation without representation, were turned to a profitable account. Mr. Atwood's apothegm that "the strength of the people is nothing without union, and union nothing without confidence and discipline," became a standing motto of the revolutionary party. And Hume's declaration that if there had been no display of force there would have been no Reform Bill, was not without its effect in changing the vigilance committees into nuclei of military organizations. Shooting matches, first got up by Gibson, in which turkeys were the immediate victims, became fashionable. Drilling was practised with more or less secrecy. An occasional *feu de joie* on Yonge Street in honour of Papineau, with a hundred rifles, would be made the subject

## FORGING PIKES

of boast in the press. Bidwell, who had refused to accept a nomination to the proposed convention, and who kept at a safe distance from all these movements, could not refuse his legal advice that trials of skill among riflemen were perfectly lawful. The people were badly armed, and a brisk business in the manufacture of pikes began to be carried on, but there was hardly a single bayonet in the outbreak north of Toronto.

By the commencement of November, one thousand five hundred names were returned to Mackenzie of persons enrolled and ready to place themselves under arms—if arms could only be procured—at one hour's notice. In the Home District, in which Toronto was situated, attendance on weekly drill was deemed a duty. The Gore District, farther west, was not much behind its metropolitan neighbour. From one end of it to the other, political unions were in the course of formation. They selected their leaders and reported themselves to the agent and secretary of the central vigilance committee. The organizations in the country were now called Branch Reform Unions; and they were numbered according to the order of their formation.

There were two kinds of organization. In addition to the vigilance committees and reform unions, about seventy delegates had been elected to take part in a convention which was to send representatives to a British American congress. The meeting

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of an approaching convention, which had been decided upon in the previous August, continued to be alluded to after the rising had been determined upon, and if the movement had proved successful, the convention would undoubtedly have been held.

In Lower Canada the crisis had arrived. The legislative session, convened in August, had produced no reconciliation between the governor and the assembly. The House told Lord Gosford that they had not been able to derive from "His Excellency's speech, or from any other source, any motive for departing, even momentarily," from their determination to withhold supplies until the grievances of the country were redressed. The governor replied to the address, charging the House with virtually abrogating the constitution by a continued abandonment of their functions; and as soon as the members had left his presence, he issued a proclamation proroguing the legislature. The popular agitation continued; monster meetings were called in different parts of the country.

On November 11th, Morin, Legaré, Lachance, Chasseur, and Trudeau, editors, managers, and publishers of *Le Libéral*, were arrested for sedition at Quebec. This alarmed the popular leaders, who, for a time, made themselves less prominent. On the sixteenth of the same month, some further arrests were made; but this time they proceeded upon the graver charge of high treason.

## MACKENZIE'S BOLD PLAN

M. Dufort, a messenger bearing letters from Papineau, arrived in Toronto.<sup>1</sup> The purport of the message was an appeal to the Upper Canadian Reformers to support their Lower Canadian brethren when a resort to arms should be made. Mackenzie was convinced that the time to act had come. In the garrison at Toronto, there were only three pieces of cannon and one soldier, Sir Francis having sent the troops to Lower Canada for the purpose, as he afterwards boasted, of entrapping Mackenzie and others into rebellion by appearing to be wholly without the means of resistance. Of the fifteen hundred men whose names had been returned on the insurrection rolls, only a very small proportion had firearms of any description. There were lying in the City Hall four thousand muskets, which had been sent up from Kingston, and which were still unpacked. Mackenzie's plan was to seize these arms, together with the archives, the governor, and the executive council; and by this means to effect a revolution *sans coup férir*. Chimerical as such a project would be, under ordinary circumstances, it must be remembered that the folly of Sir Francis had left the government at the mercy of any half hundred men

<sup>1</sup> M. Dufort was on his way to Michigan to get up an expedition to assist the Canadians, where, in connection with Judge Butler, a prominent member of the House of Representatives of that state, he formed a "council of war," embracing prominent and influential members of the House of Representatives, state's officers, and wealthy citizens.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

who might have undertaken to carry such a project into effect.

Having made up his mind as to what ought to be done, Mackenzie, one afternoon early in November, called upon fourteen or fifteen persons with whom he had been acting in the organization of political societies throughout the country, and asked them to meet him that evening at the house of Mr. Doel, on the north-west corner of Bay and Adelaide Streets.<sup>1</sup> They all attended. Dr. Morrison took the chair; and Mackenzie proceeded to give his views of what course it would be proper to pursue in the crisis which had arisen. Fortunately his own account of this meeting has been preserved:—

“I remarked, in substance, that we had, in a declaration adopted in July, and signed approvingly by many thousands, affirmed that our wrongs and those of the old thirteen colonies were substantially

<sup>1</sup> Among the persons who assembled on that night to listen to a project of revolution were: Dr. Morrison, a Lower Canadian by birth, who was practising medicine in Toronto; John McIntosh, a Scotsman, who formerly owned and sailed a vessel on Lake Ontario, and who retired upon a moderate competence; John Doel, an Englishman, who by a brewery and the rise in the value of some real estate of which he was the owner, was well able to live on the interest of his money; Robert Mackay, a Scotsman and grocer, in a good way of business; John Armstrong, a Scotsman and axemaker; Timothy Parsons, an Englishman, who kept a dry goods store; John Mills, a Scotsman by birth, and a hatter by trade; Thomas Armstrong, a Scotsman and carpenter employing several men; John Elliott, an Englishman and an attorney; and William Leslie, a bookseller and druggist, doing a good business.



## MACKENZIE'S BOLD PLAN

the same; that I knew of no complaint made by the heir of the house of Russell, in 1685, against the government of England overturned three years thereafter, that could not be sustained against that of Canada; that not only was redress from Britain hopeless, but that there was imminent danger that leading Reformers would be seized and sent to the dungeon; that the House of Assembly had been packed through fraud—the clergy hired and paid by the State—the endowment of a hierarchy begun in defiance of the royal pledge—the public credit abused and the provincial funds squandered—offices created and distributed to pay partisans—emigration arrested—discontent rendered universal—and government converted into a detestable tyranny; while in Lower Canada chaos reigned, backed by the garrisoned troops; and British resolutions to leave no check in the hands of the people, upon any abuse whatever, had passed the House of Commons. Law was a mere pretext to plunder people systematically with impunity—and education, the great remedy for the future, discouraged in Upper and unknown in Lower Canada—while defaulters, cheats, embezzlers of trust funds and of public revenue were honoured and encouraged, and speculators sheltered from the indignation of the people they had robbed. I stated that when I saw how Ireland, the condition of which was fully understood in London, had been ruled, I had no hope for Canada except in resistance, and affirmed

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

that the time had come for a struggle, either for the rights of Englishmen in connection with England, or for independence. Canada, as governed, was an engine for the oppression of our countrymen at home.

“I spoke with great earnestness, and was only interrupted by some brief casual remarks.

“In adverting to the condition of society, I remarked that Head was abhorred for the conduct of those he had upheld and cringed to ; that in the city all classes desired a change—credit was prostrate, trade languishing—and asked if the proper change could be obtained in any possible way short of revolution.

“Still there was no answer.

“I stated that there were two ways of effecting a revolution : one of them by organizing the farmers, who were quite prepared for resistance, and bringing them into Toronto to unite with the Toronto people ; and the other, by immediate action.

“Dr. Morrison made some deprecatory or dissenting remark, but I continued.

“I said that the troops had left ; that those who had persuaded Head to place four thousand stand-of-arms in the midst of an unarmed people, in the City Hall, seemed evidently not opposed to their being used ; that Fort Henry was open and empty, and a steamer had only to sail down to the wharf and take possession ; that I had sent two trusty persons, separately, to the garrison, that day, and it

## MACKENZIE'S BOLD PLAN

was also 'to let'; that the lieutenant-governor had just come in from his ride and was now at home, guarded by one sentinel; and that my judgment was that we should instantly send for Dutcher's foundry-men and Armstrong's axe-makers, all of whom could be depended on, and, with them, go promptly to the Government House, seize Sir Francis, carry him to the City Hall, a fortress in itself, seize the arms and ammunition there, and the artillery, etc., in the old garrison; rouse our innumerable friends in town and country, proclaim a provisional government, send off the steamer of that evening to secure Fort Henry, and either induce Sir Francis to give the country an executive council responsible to a new and fairly chosen assembly to be forthwith elected, after packing off the usurpers in the 'Bread and Butter Parliament,' such new assembly to be convened immediately; or, if he refused to comply, go at once for Independence, and take the proper steps to obtain and secure it.

"I also communicated, in the course of my remarks, important facts relative to Lower Canada, and the disposition of her leading men.

"Dr. Morrison manifested great astonishment and impatience towards the close of my discourse, and at length hastily rose and exclaimed that this was treason, if I was really serious, and that if I thought I could entrap him into any such mad scheme, I would find that he was not my man.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

I tried to argue with him, but finding that he was resolute and determined, soon desisted.<sup>1</sup>

“That the proposition I made could have been easily and thoroughly carried into effect, I have never for a moment doubted; and I would have gone about it promptly, in preference to the course afterwards agreed upon, but for the indecision or hesitancy of those who longed for a change but disliked risking anything on such issues. I made no request to any one about secrecy, believing that the gentlemen I had addressed were honestly desirous to aid in removing an intolerable burthen, but that much difference might exist as to the best means of doing so; and that the government would be kept inactive, even if it knew all—its pretended friends, headed by a fool, pulling one way, and its enemies another.”

About November 18th another plan of operations was decided upon. There were about a dozen persons present when the decision was come to. The organized bands, distributed over the country, were to collect together and march upon Toronto by Yonge Street, the main northern entrance to the city, on Thursday, December 7th. The manage-

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Morrison, I learn from Charles Baker who lived next door to him, had no real objection to the scheme; but he distrusted some one in the room, and was afraid to commit himself, but who it was that was the object of his suspicion he did not state. The circumstance of his afterwards agreeing to a far more dangerous project for effecting the same object, is sufficient guarantee of the correctness of this information.

## AN APPEAL TO ARMS DECIDED UPON

ment of the enterprise was to be confided to Dr. Rolph, as sole executive; and the details were to be worked out by Mackenzie. The correspondence with Papineau and the other popular leaders in Lower Canada was to be conducted by the executive; and he was to communicate intelligence of their intended movements to his associates. It was understood that the day named for the rising should not be altered by any less authority than that by which it had been fixed. The insurgent forces were to be brought as secretly as possible to Montgomery's Hotel, on Yonge Street, about four miles north of the city of Toronto, between six and ten o'clock at night, when they were to march upon the city. A force of between four and five thousand was expected. The four thousand stand-of-arms in the City Hall were to be seized; the governor and his chief advisers were to be captured and placed in safe custody; the garrison was to be taken possession of. A convention, the members of which had begun to be elected in the previous August, was to be called; and a constitution, which had already assumed shape and form, was to be submitted for adoption. In the meantime, Dr. Rolph was to be administrator of the provisional government. Such was the helpless condition of the government, and so few were its willing supporters supposed to be, that all this was expected to be effected without the effusion of blood.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It is the fate of persons who fail in an enterprise of this kind

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

With the possible exception of the date of the intended outbreak, none of the movements designed to end in armed insurrection and revolution were

to have their motives misrepresented by their contemporaries ; and it is sometimes not till the prejudice of their time has passed away that justice is done to them. Sir F. Head frequently stated, in written documents, that the object of the insurgents was to rob the banks and set fire to the city, forgetting that they were mainly composed of the wealthiest farmers in the county of York, the very class whom he (when it suited him) called "yeomen" and "gentlemen." "There can be no doubt," he wrote on one occasion, "that could Dr. Rolph and Mackenzie have succeeded in robbing the banks, they would immediately have absconded to the United States." "Nothing," wrote Mr. Hincks, afterwards governor of British Guiana, in the *Toronto Examiner*, in 1838, "in Sir F. Head's writings has given more disgust than this assertion." Of Dr. Rolph, Mr. Hincks proceeded to say that "he was the most talented and highly educated man in the province, and that there never was a man less likely to be influenced by pecuniary considerations." "With regard to Mackenzie," Mr. Hincks added, "it has been so much the fashion to accuse him of every crime which has disgraced humanity, that people really forget who and what he is. We can speak impartially of Mr. Mackenzie more particularly, because those who know us well know that we have never approved of his political conduct. Let us not be misunderstood. We agreed with him on certain broad principles, more particularly responsible government, and when those principles were involved, we supported him, and shall never regret it. As a private individual we are bound in justice to state that Mr. Mackenzie was a man of strict integrity in his dealings, and we have frequently heard the same admitted by his violent political opponents. He was not a rich man, because he never sought after wealth. Had he done so his industry and perseverance must have insured it. We do not take up our pen to defend the political character of either Dr. Rolph or Mr. Mackenzie ; but when these false and malignant slanders are uttered, we shall always expose them. Are there ten people in Upper Canada who believe that the object of either Dr. Rolph or Mr. Mackenzie was to rob the banks and abscond to the United States?"

## HEAD ENCOURAGES THE REVOLT

unknown to the government. In the beginning of September, intelligence of the purpose to which the organizations in the county were being turned, was conveyed to the governor. Before the middle of November, a short time prior to the fixing of the day of rising, two ministers called upon Attorney-General Hagerman one night at nine o'clock, and related what was going on in the townships of Gwillimbury, Albion, Vaughan, and other places. One of them was fresh from these scenes of excitement, where he had been travelling in a pastoral capacity. Hagerman was inclined to laugh in the faces of his informants. He did not believe, he said, there were fifty men in the province who would agree to undertake a descent upon Toronto; he would like to see the attempt made. One of the ministers replied by declaring his belief that there were, in the Home District alone, more than five hundred persons who had already determined upon such an attack. The same representations had already been made to the governor, in person; but, as he paid no attention to them, this appeal was made from the governor to the minister. But it was in vain. The one was found to be as deaf and as obstinate as the other. On October 31st, Sir Francis had refused the offer of a volunteer company to guard the Government House, preferring to wait, as he expressed it, till the lives or property of Her Majesty's subjects should require defence.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Nor was this all. Sir Francis made it a matter of boasting that, "in spite of the remonstrances which, from almost every district in the province," he received, he allowed Mackenzie "to make deliberate preparation for revolt;" that he allowed him "to write what he chose, to say what he chose, to do what he chose;" that he offered no opposition to armed assemblages for the purpose of drill. Nor did he rest satisfied with doing nothing to check preparations, the nature of which he understood so well; he encouraged the outbreak. For this purpose he sent all the troops from the province; and boasted that he had laid a trap to entice Mackenzie and others into revolt. Nothing could have been more culpable than this conduct of the governor. To encourage men to the commission of an act, and then to punish its performance with death, as in the case of Samuel Lount and Peter Mathews, approaches, very nearly, deliberate connivance at a crime.

Sir Francis, however, was not responsible for the executions. He had left the province before they took place; and many who were never admirers of his policy believe that he had too much magnanimity of character to have pursued a vindictive course in needlessly causing an effusion of blood. He released several prisoners, with arms in their hands, as soon as they were captured, though some of them, contrary to good faith, were arrested again.



## PEEL'S POSITION

II In his viceregal speech on the opening of the third session of the thirteenth parliament of Upper Canada on December 28th, 1837, Sir Francis said, as he states in his *Narrative* "I considered that, if an attack by the rebels was inevitable, *the more I encouraged them to consider me defenceless the better,*" and in the same work he boastingly reports: "I purposely dismissed from the province the whole of our troops." But when this extraordinary conduct on the part of the lieutenant-governor had been severely censured both in parliament and by the press, he denied that he had sent away the troops. "Many people," he says in the *Emigrant*, "have blamed, and I believe still blame, me for having, as they say, sent the troops out of the province. I, however, did no such thing." He then proceeds to throw on Sir John Colborne the blame of an act for which, before he had discovered that it was improper, he had eagerly claimed all the credit. "It was the duty of the government," said Sir Robert Peel, in a speech in the House of Commons, January 16th, 1838, "to have prepared such a military force in the colony as to have discouraged the excitors of the insurrection from pursuing the course they did." How great then must be the condemnation of the lieutenant-governor.

A draft of a constitution was prepared by Mackenzie, to be submitted to the proposed convention for adoption, after a provisional government

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

should have been established in Upper Canada. It was actually published by Mackenzie in his paper the *Constitution*, on November 15th, 1837, a few days before the 7th of December was fixed upon for a descent upon Toronto. When he left Toronto for the country, thirteen days before the intended outbreak, he took a small press and a printer with him, for the purpose of striking off copies of this document. The constitution of the United States was the model on which this was formed; the variations being chiefly the result of different circumstances.

## CHAPTER XII

### A SPURT OF CIVIL WAR

**B**Y some means a knowledge of the intended rising reached several persons from whom Mackenzie would have desired to keep it a secret. Dr. Morrison was a party to the arrangement finally agreed upon. He is believed to have disclosed the plan of insurrection to several persons. What was going on came to the ears of Dr. Baldwin. The latter, it would seem, never mentioned it to his son, Robert; for that gentleman declared that he had no knowledge of it. Bidwell had refused to become a member of the proposed convention, and he does not appear to have attended the meetings at which insurrection was organized. There seems to be no reason to believe, however, that he is entitled to plead ignorance of the movement. He was asked his opinion on the legality of the shooting matches; he was the bosom friend of Dr. Rolph, with whom he was in the habit of cordially co-operating; and it has been stated that, without working with the dozen persons in Toronto who were actively engaged in the organization of the movement, he was secretly giving all the assistance he could. He accepted expatriation at the hands of Sir Francis when the revolt failed.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The day before the outbreak the governor was sitting in a room in

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Previous to the day fixed for the outbreak in Upper Canada, the clash of arms had been heard in the Lower Province. On December 5th, Lord Gosford proclaimed martial law, and offered rewards for the apprehension of the patriot leaders. Dr. Nelson, who lived at St. Denis, hearing of the movement for the arrest of himself and the other leaders, prepared for resistance. Five companies of troops, with one field-piece and a detachment of Montreal cavalry under the command of Colonel Gore, arrived at St. Denis on the morning of November 23rd. The battle commenced about nine o'clock, and lasted till nearly four in the afternoon, being carried on with great bravery

the Government House, the windows of which were blocked up with rough timber and loopholed. Bidwell sent in his card. When he was admitted to an interview he was apparently so alarmed as to be unable to speak. Sir Francis, holding Bidwell's letters in his hand, pointed with them towards the window, saying: "Well Mr. Bidwell, you see the state to which you have brought us?" "He made no reply," writes the ex-lieutenant-governor, "and as it was impossible to help pitying the abject, fallen position in which he stood, I very calmly pointed out to him the impropriety of the course he had pursued, and then, observing to him, 'what he knew well enough, that if I were to open his letters his life would probably be in my hands, I reminded him of the mercy as well as the power of the British Crown; and I ended by telling him that, as its humble representative, I would restore to him his letters unopened, if he would give me, in writing, a promise that he would leave the Queen's dominions forever. . . . He retired to the waiting-room, wrote out the promise I had dictated, and returning with it, I received it with one hand, and with the other, according to my promise, I delivered to him the whole of his letters unopened. The sentence which Mr. Bidwell passed upon himself he faithfully executed." Sir Francis Bond Head, *The Emigrant*.

## CIVIL WAR IN LOWER CANADA

on both sides. The troops retired, leaving behind one cannon, some muskets, and five wounded. At St. Charles, the insurgents, under T. S. Brown, suffered a reverse. "The slaughter on the side of the rebels," writes Colonel Wetherall, "was great." "I counted," he adds, "fifty-six bodies, and many more were killed in the building and the bodies burnt." He was much censured for what was deemed unnecessary slaughter.

This reverse was destined to have a discouraging effect upon the insurgents in Upper Canada, where the work of final organization had commenced. Military leaders had to be chosen, and each assigned his post of duty. A tour of the neighbouring country had to be made, and this duty fell to Mackenzie. On the evening of November 24th—less than twenty-four hours before the defeat at St. Charles—he left Dr. Rolph's house on this mission. Just before starting, he mentioned to one or two persons who had not been parties to the plan of rising, what was going to take place; but he was very careful not to communicate the intelligence to any one on whose secrecy he felt he could not rely. Except in a single instance, no notices were sent beyond the limits of the metropolitan county of York. He visited Lloydtown, Stouffville, Newmarket, and other places in the north. His business was to make the necessary preparations for carrying out the plans agreed upon. Having no knowledge of military opera-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

tions, he refused to assume a position of command for which he was by experience entirely unfitted. This determination he announced at Lloydtown, several days previous to the intended march upon Toronto. Samuel Lount and Anthony Anderson were then named to commands. Mackenzie deemed it essential to the success of the movement that it should be directed by persons of military skill and experience. He wrote to Van Egmond,<sup>1</sup> to be at Montgomery's Hotel on the evening of the seventh, to lead the forces into the city, and he placed much reliance upon him and other veterans whose services he deemed it of the utmost importance to secure.

On the night of December 3rd, Mackenzie, who had now been nine days in the country organizing the movement, arrived at the house of David Gibson, some three miles from the city. He there learnt with dismay that, in his absence, Dr. Rolph had changed the day for making a descent upon Toronto from Thursday to Monday, December 4th. Various reasons have been assigned for this change. There was a rumour that a warrant was out for the arrest of Mackenzie for high treason—which was true—and that cannon were being mounted in the park surrounding the Government House—which was false. The publication of certain

<sup>1</sup> Van Egmond was a native of Holland, and, as a colonel in Napoleon's army, had seen much service. He also held an English colonelcy. He owned thirteen thousand acres of land in the western part of the province.

## THE GOVERNOR ROUSED AT LAST

militia orders is said to have been regarded as proof that the government was on the alert. It was said that the governor had a letter from the country disclosing all the plans of the patriots; and that the council, concluding at last that there was real danger, had commenced a distribution of arms. The real truth was, as a verbal message sent to Lount stated, Dr. Rolph became alarmed, under the impression that the government was giving out the arms at the City Hall, and arming men to fill the garrison and form companies to arrest the leaders of the revolt expected between then and the next Thursday; and that they had already distributed one hundred stand-of-arms, and had become aware of the day fixed for the rising. These circumstances, the message added, rendered it necessary that Lount and his men should be in town on Monday night. Regarding the change of day as a fatal error, Mackenzie despatched one of Gibson's servants with a message to Lount, who resided near Holland Landing, some thirty-five miles from Toronto, not to come till Thursday, as first agreed upon. But it was too late. The messenger returned on Monday afternoon with Lount's reply that the intended rising was publicly known all through the north; and that the men had been ordered to march, and were already on the road. Rude pikes formed the weapons of the majority; a few had rifles; there were no muskets.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Much annoyed at the unexpected change in the programme, Mackenzie, with the natural intrepidity of his nature, resolved to make the best of it. When Lount arrived in the evening, he brought only about eighty or ninety men, exhausted with a march of between thirty and forty miles through deep mud, and dispirited by the news of the reverse in Lower Canada. Though Dr. Rolph had met Mackenzie that morning at James Hervey Price's house on Yonge Street, a couple of miles or so from Toronto, they had no intelligence of the state of the town after ten o'clock. Rolph had returned, and no messenger came to bring Mackenzie and his friends any news of what was going on in the city. Regarding it as all important that communication with the city should be cut off, for the purpose of preventing any intelligence being sent to the government, Mackenzie advised the placing of a guard upon the road; and that the handful of jaded men who had arrived should summon all their powers of endurance and march on the city that night. No one seconded his proposal. Lount, Lloyd and Gibson all protested against what they regarded as a rash enterprise. They deemed it indispensable to wait till the condition of the city could be ascertained, or till they were sufficiently reinforced to reduce to reasonable limits the hazard of venture in which all concerned carried their lives in their hands.

Thus the golden opportunity was lost. Delay was defeat. At this time the number of men under



## 30 A CITIZEN'S DISHONOUR

Lount, reinforced as they would have been in the city, would have been quite sufficient to effect the intended revolution, since the government was literally asleep and had few true friends.

Failing in this proposal, Mackenzie next offered to make one of four who should go to the city, ascertain the state of matters there, whether an attack would be likely to be attended with success, spur their friends into activity with a view to an attack the next evening, and bring Drs. Rolph and Morrison back with them. Captain Anderson, Shepard, and Smith, volunteered to join him. They started between eight and nine o'clock. Before they had proceeded far they met John Powell with Archibald Macdonald, mounted, acting as a sort of patrol. Mackenzie pulled up, and, with a double-barrelled pistol in his hand, briefly informed them of the rising, and added that, as it was necessary to prevent intelligence of it reaching the government, they must surrender themselves prisoners, and in that character go to Montgomery's Hotel, where they would be well treated. Any arms they might have upon their persons, they must surrender. They replied that they had none; and when he seemed sceptical as to the correctness of the reply, they repeated it. Mackenzie then said, "Well, gentlemen, as you are my townsmen and men of honour, I should be ashamed to show that I question your word by ordering you to be searched."

Placing the two prisoners in charge of Anderson

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

and Shepard, he then continued his course, with his remaining comrade, towards the city. Before they had gone far, Powell, who had returned, rode past them. While he was passing, Mackenzie demanded the object of his return, and told him, at his peril, not to proceed. Regardless of this warning, the government messenger kept on. Mackenzie fired at him over his horse's head, but missed his mark. Powell now pulled up, and, coming alongside Mackenzie, placed the muzzle of a pistol close to his antagonist's breast. A flash in the pan saved the life of the insurgent chief.

Macdonald now also came up on his return. He seemed much frightened ; and, being unable to give any satisfactory explanation, was sent back a second time by Mackenzie. In the meantime, Powell escaped. He dismounted, and finding himself pursued, hid behind a log for a while ; and then by a devious course proceeded to Toronto. He went at once to Government House, and aroused the governor from his slumbers. His Excellency placed his family and that of Chief Justice Robinson on board a steamer lying in the bay, ready to leave the city if the rebels should capture it. Mackenzie, having sent his last remaining companion back with Macdonald to Montgomery's Hotel, now found himself alone. A warrant had for some time been out for his arrest on a charge of high treason, and the government, informed of the presence of the men at Montgomery's, was already astir. It

## POWELL'S TREACHERY

would have been madness for him to proceed companionless to the city, and so he turned his horse's head and set out for Montgomery's. Before he had proceeded far he found, lying upon the road, the dead body of Anderson, who had fallen a victim to Powell's treachery. Life was entirely extinct. Anderson and Shepard, as already stated, were escorting Powell and Macdonald as prisoners to the guard-room of the patriots at Montgomery's Hotel. Powell, who, on being captured, had twice protested that he was unarmed, slackened the pace of his horse sufficiently to get behind his victim, when he shot him with a pistol through the back of the neck. Death was instantaneous. Shepard's horse stumbled at the moment, and Powell was enabled to escape. As there was now only one guard to two prisoners, he could not have hoped to prevent their escape. Macdonald followed his associate.

On which side life had first been taken it would be difficult to determine ; for, when Mackenzie got back to Montgomery's Hotel, he found that Colonel Moodie, inflamed by liquor, had, in trying to force his way past the guard at the hotel, at whom he fired a pistol, been shot by a rifle. The guards who returned the fire missed their aim, when one of the men, Ryan, who was standing on the steps in front of the hotel, levelled his rifle at Colonel Moodie, of whom the light of the moon gave a clear view, and fired the fatal shot.

Lount's men were a good deal dispirited by the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

death of Anderson. And they had no particular reasons for being in good humour. Lingfoot, by whom Montgomery's Hotel was kept, had no provisions to offer them ; and none could be procured that night. The handful of countrymen, exhausted by their long march, with no man of military experience to excite their confidence, had to sup on bad whiskey and recline upon the floor, where many from sheer fatigue fell sound asleep. The rest were still uneasy as to the state of things in the city. The bells had been set a-ringing ; and they were uncertain as to the rumours about the arrival of steamboats laden with Orangemen and other Loyalists. They had expected to learn the exact state and condition of the city from their friends there. Mackenzie with three companions, as we have seen, had failed to reach the city, where the wished-for intelligence might have been obtained. Other messengers were sent, but none returned. They were made prisoners. It is probable that Dr. Morrison attempted to convey to them the information they so much needed ; for it is pretty certain that he passed the toll-gate on his way out. But the sight of Captain Bridgeford, a government sympathizer, in all probability compelled him to go back.

By midnight, the numbers were increased ; and before morning, Mackenzie, with his natural impetuosity of disposition, again proposed to march on the city ; but he was again overruled. And

## THE FIRST FLAG OF TRUCE

indeed, the chance of success was already much diminished, because the government had now had several hours for preparation. To Mackenzie's proposal it was objected that nothing was known of the state of the garrison; the city bells had sounded an ominous alarm; the forces expected from the west had not arrived; and the executive in the city, by whom the premature rising had been ordered, had sent no communication.

Next day, the relative force of the two parties was such that the patriots might, if properly armed, have obtained certain conquest. They had between seven and eight hundred men; but many of them were unarmed. The rest had rifles, fowling-pieces, and pikes. Many of those who were unarmed returned, almost as soon as they discovered there were no weapons for their use. Provisions, including fresh and salt beef from a Loyalist butcher who lived up Yonge Street, about two miles above Montgomery's, were obtained for the men. Sir Francis claims to have had three hundred supporters in the morning, and five hundred in the evening; but the statement has been disputed and is open to doubt. His fears may be judged by his holding parley with armed insurgents. On Tuesday, the fifth, he sent a flag of truce to the rebel camp, with a message asking what it was they wanted. There is no reason to doubt that this was a stratagem to gain time. Mackenzie replied: "Independence and a con-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

vention to arrange details." He added that the lieutenant-governor's message must be sent in writing, and feeling time to be precious, he said it must be forthcoming in one hour.

Whom had Sir Francis selected as the medium of communication between himself and the rebels? This question touches on one of the most painful subjects I have to deal with in this work. Robert Baldwin could hardly have been entirely ignorant of what every one who read the newspapers of the day must have been informed; but he had neither part nor lot in the revolt. But Mackenzie himself was not deeper in the rebellion than Dr. Rolph; and his acceptance of the post of mediator between the men he had encouraged into insurrection and the government against which they had been induced to rebel, is so extraordinary an act that it is almost impossible to account for it. The only possible explanation lies in the difficulty of his position, which arose from his being asked to undertake this office. Sheriff Jarvis went to Price—so the latter says—and appealed to him, in the name of God, to give his assistance "to stop the proceedings of those men who are going to attack us." Price replied, with much reason, that if he should go out it would be said that he went to join the rebels. And he suggested: "Why not go to Baldwin, Dr. Rolph, or Bidwell?" If Rolph had persisted in refusing he would have laid himself open to suspicion—as he did by a

## ROLPH'S EQUIVOCAL POSITION

first refusal; and if he had been arrested, the worst might have happened. The Doctor's returning prudence may have bid him go; and perhaps he thought he could perform this mission without serious injury to his friends in the field.<sup>1</sup> But the

<sup>1</sup> Samuel Lount, being examined before the commission on treason, December 13th, 1837, said: "When the flag of truce came up, Dr. Rolph addressed himself to me; there were two other persons with it besides Dr. Rolph and Mr. Baldwin. Dr. Rolph said he brought a message from His Excellency the lieutenant-governor to prevent the effusion of blood, or to that effect. At the same time, *he gave me a wink to walk on one side*, when he requested me not to heed the message, but to go on with our proceedings. What he meant was not to attend to the message. Mackenzie observed to me that it was a verbal message, and that it had better be submitted in writing. I took the reply to the lieutenant-governor's message to be merely a put off. . . . I heard all that was said by Dr. Rolph to Mr. Mackenzie, which is as above related." Of this statement, Dr. Rolph, in 1852, induced the flag-bearer, Hugh Carmichael, to sign a denial in these terms: "During the going out and staying on the ground, and returning to the city, as above stated (all of which was promptly done), Dr. Rolph, Mr. Baldwin, and myself, being all on horseback, kept in close phalanx, not a yard apart. Neither of the persons mentioned could have got off his horse, nor could he have winked to Mr. Lount and walked aside and communicated with him, nor have said anything irrelevant to the flag of truce, or against its good faith, as is untruly alleged, without my knowledge." There are yet three other witnesses besides Mackenzie; and as it is not my business to accuse or excuse anybody, but to get at the truth, their testimony must be given. Mr. Baldwin made a statement relating to the second visit to the rebels, when the answer of the lieutenant-governor was taken. Carmichael alleges that till the flag of truce was at an end, Dr. Rolph could not have done what was attributed to him by Lount, whose statement was corroborated, in one way or another, by three or four persons. Carmichael's statement, it will be seen, does not go to the extent of saying that, after the lieutenant-governor's reply was delivered and the flag of truce declared at an end, Dr. Rolph did not tell

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

effect of his arrival with a flag of truce, about one o'clock, threw a damper on the zeal of the men. They fancied that when he appeared in the service of the governor, the patriot cause must be desperate. Mackenzie did not venture to tell the real state of the case to more than five or six persons; for if it had been publicly announced, the fact might have reached town and occasioned the Doctor's arrest. The intelligence that Bidwell had been asked to accept the mission undertaken by Rolph, created the false impression that they were both opposed to Mackenzie's movement. Lount, to whom he addressed himself, says Dr. Rolph secretly advised him to pay no attention

Lount to take his men into the city. It leaves that question untouched. Mr. Baldwin's evidence, taken in connection with Carmichael's on this point, is very important. "On the return of the Doctor and myself, the second time," he says, "with the lieutenant-governor's reply that he would not give anything in writing, we found the insurgents at the first toll-gate, and turned aside to the west of Yonge Street, where we delivered this answer; after which Dr. Rolph requested me to wait for him. *I did wait some time, during which he was out of my sight and hearing.* I was then directed to ride westerly; this occupied the time while I was riding at a common walk from Yonge Street to the College Avenue, probably three-eighths of a mile. The direction to ride westerly, as I then supposed, was for the purpose of the flag being carried to the city by way of the College Avenue. Shortly after reaching the avenue, however, I was joined by Dr. Rolph, and we returned together by way of Yonge Street. I have no reason to know what communication took place between Dr. Rolph and the insurgents when he was out of my sight and hearing."—Appendix, *Assembly's Journals*, 1837-8, p. 406. William Alves, who was present, says that, on the second visit, Dr. Rolph advised the rebels to go into the city.



## THE SECOND FLAG OF TRUCE

to the message, but to proceed. Mackenzie told Lount this advice must be acted upon; and the order to proceed was given.

Lount was advised by Mackenzie to march his men into the city without loss of time, and take up a position near Osgoode Hall. Mackenzie then rode westward to the larger body of insurgents, near Colonel Baldwin's residence, and ordered an instant march on the city. When they reached the upper end of College Avenue, a second flag of truce arrived. The answer brought by Baldwin and Dr. Rolph was that the governor refused to comply with the demands of the insurgents. The truce being at an end, Dr. Rolph secretly advised the insurgents to wait till six o'clock, and then

P. C. H. Brotherton, another of the insurgents, made oath to the same effect on December 12th, before Vice-Chancellor Jameson, and stated that Dr. Rolph had told him, on the eighth, that "Mackenzie had acted unaccountably in not coming into the town; and that he expected him in half an hour after he returned with the flag." These statements are sufficiently conclusive as to the general fact; the only question that is not settled is, whether it was on the first or second visit that Dr. Rolph told the insurgents to go into the city. Did he give this advice on the occasion of both visits? Mackenzie and Lount say the order to go into the city was given on the first visit. Against this positive evidence, Dr. Rolph produces his own denial and a statement from the flag-bearer, who attempts to prove a negative from the alleged impossibility of the occurrence taking place. It must be explained that the statement signed by Carmichael was prepared in Quebec, where it was dated and taken thence to Toronto for signature. Besides this, Carmichael was not very consistent in his statements of the affair, having told a very different story at other times. The weight of the evidence is therefore entirely in favour of the correctness of Lount's statement.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

enter the city under cover of night. Reinforcements to the number of six hundred were expected in the city; and they were to be ready to join the forces from the country as soon as the latter arrived. Accordingly, at a quarter to six, the whole of the insurgent forces were at the toll-bar on Yonge Street, about a mile from the principal street of the city, on which the Government House, west of the line of Yonge Street, was situated. Mackenzie addressed the men and endeavoured to inspire them with courage by representing that there would be no difficulty in taking the city. The government, he said, was so friendless that it had only been able to muster a hundred and fifty defenders, including the college boys; and the governor's family had been put on a steamer ready to take flight. The actual force claimed by Sir Francis on Tuesday night was "about five hundred."

The patriot forces were a half-armed mob, without discipline, headed by civilians, and having no confidence in themselves or their military leaders. Lount's men, who were armed with rifles, were in front; the pikemen came next, and in the rear were a number of useless men having no other weapons than sticks and cudgels. Captain Duggan, of the volunteer artillery, another officer, and the sheriff's horse, fell into the hands of the insurgents when they were within about half a mile of the city. At this point they were fired upon by an



March of the Insurgents on Toronto, 1837

From the drawing by C. W. Jefferys



## THE FIRST SKIRMISH

advanced guard of Loyalists concealed behind a fence, and whose numbers—of which the insurgents could have no correct idea—have been variously stated at from fifteen to thirty, and shots were exchanged. After firing once, the Loyalists, under Sheriff Jarvis, started back at full speed towards the city. The front rank of Lount's men, instead of stepping aside after firing to let those behind fire, fell down on their faces. Those in the rear, being without arms and fancying that the front rank had been cut down by the muskets of the small force who had taken a random shot at them, were panic stricken; and in a short time nearly the whole force was on the retreat. Many of the Lloydtown pikemen raised the cry, "We shall all be killed," threw down their rude weapons, and fled in great precipitation. Mackenzie, who had been near the front, and in more danger from the rifles behind than from the musketry of the Loyalists, stepped to the side of the road and ordered the men to cease firing. He was of opinion that one of the insurgents, who had been shot, fell from a rifle bullet of an unskilful comrade. The impetuous and disorderly flight had, in a short time, taken all but about a score beyond the toll-gate. The mortification of Mackenzie may be imagined. Hoping to rally the men, he sent Alves back to explain to them that the danger was imaginary; and putting spurs to his horse he followed at a brisk pace immediately after, for the same purpose. When they came to a

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

halt, he implored them to return. He told them that the steamers had been sent off to bring the Orangemen from the other districts; that whatever defenders the government had in the city were in desperate alarm; that the success, which could now be easily achieved, might on the morrow be out of their reach; that the moment the timidity of the patriots became known, the government would gain new adherents; and that if they did not return, the opportunity for the deliverance of the country would be lost. In this strain he addressed successive groups. He coaxed and threatened. He would go in front with any dozen who would accompany him. Relying upon the succour they would meet in the city, he offered to go on if only forty men would go with him. Two or three volunteers presented themselves; but the general answer was that, though they would go in daylight, they would not advance in the dark.

The majority lost no time in returning to their homes. And although some two hundred additional forces arrived during the night, the whole number, on the Wednesday, had dwindled down to about five hundred and fifty. One cause of the panic on Tuesday night arose from the alarming stories, told by some persons who had joined them from Toronto, of the preparations in the city; how the Tories, protected by feather-beds and mattresses, would fire from the windows of the houses and make terrible slaughter of the patriots.

## STATE OF THE OPPOSING FORCES

ed Dr. Horne's house, close to Yonge Street, the rendezvous of spies, was burnt by the rebels, as those of Montgomery and Gibson were subsequently by the Loyalists. In Horne's house a search was made for papers that might show what information was being asked by the government or sent to it; and the fire was caused by the upsetting of the stove. Nothing whatever was taken out of the house.

o That night Dr. Rolph sent a messenger to Montgomery's to inquire of Mackenzie the cause of the retreat. The answer was sent back in writing, and next morning, despairing, it would seem, of all hope of success, Rolph set out for the United States as a place of refuge. He was soon to be followed by a large number of others.

★ Wednesday opened gloomily upon the prospects of the insurgents. Morrison remained in his house. Mackenzie called the men together and explained to them the reason for the strong censures he had used on the retreat the previous evening. If they had taken his advice and been ready to follow his example, Toronto would have been theirs. The enemy had, in the meantime, been largely reinforced. They were well officered, well armed, and had command of the steamers for bringing up further reinforcements. If the patriots were to succeed it was essential that they should have confidence in themselves. They were greatly in want of arms; the four thousand muskets and bayonets

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

they had intended to seize were now ready to be turned against them.

Mackenzie, Lount, Alves, and several others set off on horseback to collect arms to intercept the western mail, which would convey intelligence which it was desirable should not be communicated to the friends of the government, and to make prisoners of persons who might be carrying information for the government to the disadvantage of the insurgents. The mail-stage, coming into Dundas Street, the principal western entrance into Toronto, was captured, and with the driver, mails, and several prisoners was taken to the rebel camp. Among the letters were some addressed by the president of the executive council to persons in the country, and containing information that the government expected soon to be able to make an attack at Montgomery's. Mackenzie, not knowing that Rolph had fled, wrote to him to send the patriots timely notice of the intended attack; but of course he got no answer. The messenger never returned. A man on horseback told them that the government intended to make the attack on Thursday, and the information proved correct.

Thursday found division in the patriot camp. Gibson objected to Mackenzie's plans, though they were sanctioned by Colonel Van Egmond, who, true to the original understanding, had just arrived. Gibson's objections led to a council of war. Those who objected to Mackenzie's plans proposed no substi-



## PLANS 'TO DELAY HOSTILITIES

tute. A new election of officers took place. This caused great delay. The plan suggested by Van Egmond, and adopted by Mackenzie, was to try to prevent an attack on Montgomery's till night, in the hope that by that time large reinforcements might arrive. And there was some reason in this, for this was the day originally fixed for the general rising, and a notification of the alteration had been sent only to Lount's division. One man had a force of five hundred and fifty ready to bring down, and many others who were on the way, when they found it was all up with the patriots, in order to save themselves, pretended they had come down to assist the government to quell the insurrection. A militia colonel was to contribute a couple of fat oxen to the rebel cause. Another colonel had made the patriots a present of a gun, a sword, and some ammunition. Thousands, whom prudence or fear kept aloof from the movement, wished it success. Under these circumstances, the only hope of the patriots seemed to lie in preventing an attack till night. In order to accomplish this the city must be alarmed. Sixty men, forty of them armed with rifles, were selected to go to the Don Bridge, which formed the eastern connection with the city, and destroy it. By setting this bridge and the adjoining house on fire it was thought the Loyalist force might be drawn off in that direction, and their plan of attack broken up. The party sent eastward was to intercept the Montreal mails. The rest of the men

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

who had arms "were to take the direction of the city, and be ready to move either to the right or the left, or to retreat to a strong position as prudence might dictate."

A party was sent eastward, as agreed upon; the bridge and house were fired and partly burnt, and the mails intercepted. But the delay of two hours occasioned by the council of war proved fatal. Three steamers had, in the meantime, been bringing reinforcements to the alarmed governor.

Toronto contained twelve thousand inhabitants, and if the government had not been odious to the great majority of the people, it ought to have been able to raise a force sufficient to beat back four hundred rebels; for to this number the patriot army had been reduced. But neither Toronto nor the neighbouring country furnished the requisite force, and Sir Francis had awaited in trembling anxiety the arrival of forces from other parts of the province. Having at length determined on an attack, Sir Francis assembled the "overwhelming forces" at his command, under the direction of Colonel Fitzgibbon. The main body was headed by Colonel MacNab, the right wing being commanded by Colonel S. Jarvis, the left by Colonel William Chisholm, assisted by Mr. Justice McLean. Major Cafrae, of the militia artillery, had charge of two guns. The order to march was given about twelve o'clock, and at once the Loyalists and the patriot forces were in sight of one another.

## THE FIGHT AT MONTGOMERY'S FARM

When the sentinels at Montgomery's announced that the Loyalists were within sight, with music and artillery, the patriots were still discussing their plans. Preparation was at once made to give them battle. Mackenzie, at first doubting the intelligence, rode forward till he became convinced by a full view of the enemy. When he returned, he asked the small band of patriots whether they were ready to encounter a force greatly superior in numbers to themselves, well armed, and provided with artillery. They replied in the affirmative, and he ordered the men into a piece of thin woods on the west side of the road, where they found a slight protection from the fire of the enemy they had to encounter. A number of the men took a position in an open field, on the east side of the road. The men in the western copse had to sustain nearly the whole fire of the artillery from Toronto. "And never," says Mackenzie, "did men fight more courageously. In the face of a heavy fire of grape and canister, with broadside following broadside of musketry in steady and rapid succession, they stood their ground firmly, and killed and wounded a large number of the enemy, but were at length compelled to retreat."

Some are of the opinion that the fighting lasted an hour; but there are different opinions on this point. Mackenzie remained on the scene of action till the last moment; in fact until the mounted Loyalists were just closing upon him. "So un-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

willing was Mackenzie to leave the field of battle," says an eye-witness, "and so hot the chase after him, that he distanced the enemy's horsemen only thirty or forty yards, by his superior knowledge of the country, and reached Colonel Lount and our friends on the retreat, just in time to save his neck." Immediately £1,000 reward was offered for his apprehension.

This day was the turning-point in his career. It witnessed the almost total wreck of long cherished hopes. The hope of peaceable reform had for some time been extinguished; that of successful revolution had been next indulged. Instead of finding himself the hero of a revolution, he only preserved his life by going into exile. Foiled in an enterprise in which he risked all, he lost all. Ruined in property, blighted in prospects, exiled and outlawed, with a price upon his head, how complete was the wreck of his fortune and his hopes.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> His ruin resulted from the failure of the insurrection. At the time of the outbreak, his printing establishment was the largest and the best in Upper Canada; and, although not rich, he was in good circumstances. In the previous year his account for public printing was \$4,000. His book-store contained twenty thousand volumes, and he had an extensive bindery. He had town lots in Dundas, a farm lot in Garafraxa, and a claim to a proportion of the immense Randal estate. A large amount was owing to him; and all he owed was only about £750. Such of his movable property as was not destroyed by violence or stolen was never satisfactorily accounted for, though part of it went to pay some of his creditors, who got judgments against him under the fiction of his being an absconding debtor.



# PROCLAMATION.

BY His Excellency SIR FRANCIS BOND HEAD,  
Baronet, Lieutenant Governor of Upper Canada, &c. &c.

To the Queen's Faithful Subjects in Upper Canada.

In a time of profound peace, while every one was quietly following his occupations, feeling secure under the protection of our Laws, a band of Rascals, instigated by a few malignant and disloyal men, has had the wickedness and audacity to assemble with Arms, and to attack and Murder the Queen's Subjects on the Highway—to Burn and Destroy their Property—to Rob the Public Mails—and to threaten to Plunder the Banks—and to Fire the City of Toronto.

Brave and Loyal People of Upper Canada, we have been long suffering from the acts and endeavours of these Treasonable Trainees, but this is the first time that Rebellion has dared so openly to show itself openly in the land, in the absence of Invasion by any Foreign Enemy.

Let every man do his duty now, and it will be the last time that we see our children shall see our lives or properties endangered, or the Authority of our Governors (men) insulted by such treacherous and ungrateful men. MILITIAMEN OF UPPER CANADA, no Country has ever shown a finer example of Loyalty and Spirit than YOU have given upon this or 'on call of Duty. Young and old of all ranks, are flocking to the Standard of their Country. What has taken place will enable our Queen to know Her Friends from Her Enemies—a public enemy is never so dangerous as a concealed Treason—and now my friends let us complete what is begun—let us not return to our most gall Treason and Treasoners are revealed to the light of day, and rendered harmless throughout the land.

Be vigilant, patient and active—leave punishment to the Laws—our first object is, to seek and secure all those who have been guilty of Rebellion, Murder and Robbery—And to aid us in this, a Reward is hereby offered.

## One Thousand Pounds,

to any one who will apprehend, and deliver up to Justice, WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE, and FIVE HUNDRED POUNDS to any one who will apprehend, and deliver up to Justice, DAVID GIBSON—or SAMUEL LOUNT—or JESSE LLOYD—or NILES FLETCHER—and the same reward and the same Pardon shall be given to the accomplices who will render this public notice, except by or they shall have been connected in the two persons, the crime of Murder or Arms.

And all, but the Leaders above-named, who have been seduced to join in this unnatural Rebellion, are hereby called to return to their duty to their Sovereign—to obey the Laws—and to live hereafterward as good and faithful Subjects—and they will find the Government of their Queen as indulgent as it is just.

GOD SAVE THE QUEEN.

Thursday, 3 o'clock, P. M.  
7th Dec.

50 The Party of Rebels, under their Chief Leaders, is wholly dispersed, and flying before the Loyal Militia. The only thing that remains to be done, is to find them, and arrest them.

R. STANTON, Printer to the QUEEN'S Most Excellent Majesty.

Reward Proclamation for the arrest of William Lyon Mackenzie  
and others, 1837



## MACKENZIE'S ESCAPE

The governor thought it necessary, so he has told the world, to "mark and record, by some stern act of vengeance, the important victory" that had been achieved over the insurgent forces. In the presence of the militia, he determined to burn John Montgomery's Hotel and David Gibson's dwelling house, and this was done.

We left Mackenzie at the close of the defeat at Montgomery's; and he must now be allowed to tell the story of his escape in his own words.

"It evidently appearing that success for the insurgents was, at that time, impossible, the colonel and many others gave way, and crossed the field to the parallel line of road west of Yonge Street. I endeavoured to get my cloak, which I had left at the hotel, through which Captain Fitzgibbon's men were just then sending their six-pound shots with good effect, but too late. Strange to tell, that cloak was sent to me years afterwards, while in prison, but by whom I know not.

"Perceiving that we were not yet pursued, I passed on to Yonge Street, beyond Lawyer Price's, and the first farmer I met, being a friend, readily gave me his horse—a trusty, sure-footed creature, which that day did me good service. Before I had ridden a mile the smoke rose in clouds behind me, and the flames of the extensive hotel and outbuildings arrested my attention, as also another cloud of smoke which I then supposed to be from

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

the Don Bridge, in the city, which we had sent a party to destroy or take possession of. Colonel Fletcher, now of Chautauqua county, N.B., handed me an overcoat, and told me he would make for the States, but not by the head of Lake Ontario.

“Although it was known that we had been worsted, no one interrupted us, save in friendship. Dr. —, from above Newmarket, informed me that sixty armed friends were on their way, close by. I assured him it was too late to retrieve our loss in that way, and bade him tell them to disperse. Some, however, went on as volunteers for Sir Francis Bond Head; the rest returned to their homes.

“At the Golden Lion, ten miles above the city, I overtook Colonel Anthony Van Egmond, a Dutch officer of many years’ experience under Napoleon. He agreed with me that we should at once make for the Niagara frontier, but he was taken, almost immediately after, by a party who had set out from Governor Head’s camp to gain the rewards offered then and there.

“Finding myself closely pursued and repeatedly fired at, I left the high road with one friend (Mr. J. R.) and made for Shepard’s Mills. The fleetest horsemen of the official party were so close upon us that I had only time to jump off my horse and ask the miller himself (a Tory) whether a large body of men, then on the heights, were friends or foes,



## MACKENZIE'S ESCAPE

before our pursuers were climbing up the steep ascent almost beside me.

“When I overtook Colonel Lount, he had, I think, about ninety men with him, who were partly armed. We took some refreshment at a friendly farmer's near by. Lount was for dispersing. I proposed that we should keep in a body and make for the United States via the head of Lake Ontario, as our enemies had the steamers ; but only sixteen persons went with me. I had no other arms than a single-barrel pistol, taken from Captain Duggan during our Tuesday's scuffle, and we were all on foot. Some of my companions had no weapons at all.

“We made for Humber Bridge, through Vaughan, but found it strongly guarded ; then went up the river a long way, got some supper at the house of a farmer, crossed the stream on a foot-bridge, and by two next morning, the eighth, reached the hospitable mansion of a worthy settler on Dundas Street, utterly exhausted with cold and fatigue.<sup>1</sup>

“Blankets were hung over the windows to avoid suspicion, food and beds prepared, and, while the Tories were carefully searching for us, we were sleeping soundly. Next morning (Friday) those who had arms buried them, and after sending to inquire whether a friend a mile below had been dangerously wounded, we agreed to separate and

<sup>1</sup> The house of Absalom Wilcox, who had several sons engaged in the revolt, one of whom was afterwards on Navy Island.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

make for the frontier, two and two together. Allan Wilcox, a lad in his nineteenth or twentieth year, accompanied me, and such was my confidence in the honesty and friendship of the country folks, Protestant and Catholic, European and American, that I went undisguised and on foot, my only weapon at the time being Duggan's pistol, and this not loaded. Address was now wanted more than brute force.

"We followed the concession parallel, and next to the Great Western Road saw and talked with numbers of people, but with none who wanted the government reward. About three in the afternoon, we reached Comfort's Mills, near Streetsville; we were there told that Colonel Chisholm and three hundred of the hottest Orangemen, and other most violent partisans, were divided into parties searching for us. Even from some of these there was no real danger. They were at heart friendly.

"Mr. Comfort was an American by birth, but a resident of Canada. I asked his wife for some bread and cheese, while a young Irishman in his employ was harnessing up his wagon for our use. She insisted on our staying to dinner, which we did. Mr. Comfort knew nothing of the intended revolt, and had taken no part in it, but he assured me that no fear of consequences should prevent him from being a friend in the hour of danger. After conversing with a number of people there, not one of whom said an unkind word to us, my companion

## MACKENZIE'S ESCAPE

and I got into the wagon and the young Emeralder drove us down the Streetsville road, through the Credit Village (Springfield) in broad daylight, and along Dundas Street, bills being then duly posted for my apprehension, and I not yet out of the county which I had been seven times chosen by its freeholders to represent. Yet, though known to everybody, we proceeded a long way west before danger approached. At length, however, we were hotly pursued by a party of mounted troops; our driver became alarmed, and with reason, and I took the reins and pushed onward at full speed over a rough, hard-frozen road, without snow. Our pursuers nevertheless gained on us, and when near the Sixteen-Mile Creek, we ascertained that my countryman, Colonel Chalmers, had a party guarding the bridge. The creek swells up at times into a rapid river; it was now swollen by the November rains. What was to be done? Young Wilcox and I jumped from the wagon, made toward the forest, asked a labourer the road to Esquesing to put our pursuers off our track, and were soon in the thickest of the patch of woods near the deep ravine, in which flows the creek named and numbered arithmetically as the Sixteen.

“Trafalgar was a hot-bed of Orangeism, and as I had always set my face against it and British nativism, I could hope for no friendship or favour, if here apprehended. There was but one chance for escape, however, surrounded as we were—for the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

young man had refused to leave me—and that was to stem the stream, and cross the swollen creek. We accordingly stripped ourselves naked, and with the surface ice beating against us, and holding our garments over our heads, in a bitterly cold December night, we buffeted the current, and were soon up to our necks. I hit my foot against a stone, let fall some of my clothes (which my companion caught), and cried aloud with pain. The cold in that stream caused me the most cruel and intense sensation of pain I ever endured, but we got through, though with a better chance for drowning, and the frozen sand on the bank seemed to warm our feet when we once more trod upon it.

“In an hour and a half we were under the hospitable roof of one of the innumerable agricultural friends I could then count in the country. I was given a supply of dry flannels, food, and an hour’s rest, and have often wished since, not to embark again on the tempestuous sea of politics, but that I might have an opportunity to express my grateful feelings to those who proved my faithful friends in the hour when most needed. I had risked much for Canadians, and served them long, and as faithfully as I could, and now, when a fugitive, I found them ready to risk life and property to aid me—far more ready to risk the dungeon, by harbouring me, than to accept Sir Francis Head’s thousand pounds. The sons and daughters of the Nelson

## MACKENZIE'S ESCAPE

farmer kept a silent watch outside in the cold, while I and my companion slept.

“We crossed Dundas Street about 11 o'clock p.m., and the Twelve-Mile Creek I think, on a fallen tree, about midnight. By four, on Saturday morning, the ninth, we had reached Wellington Square by the middle road. The farmers' dogs began to bark loudly, the heavy tramp of a party of horsemen was heard behind us—we retired a little way into the woods—saw that the men were armed—entered the road again—and half an hour before twilight reached the door of an upright magistrate, which an English boy at once opened to us. I sent up my name, was requested to walk upstairs (in the dark) and was told that the house, barns, and every part of the premises had been twice searched for me that morning, and that MacNab's men, from Hamilton, were scouring the country in all directions in hope of taking me. I asked if I had the least chance to pass down by the way of Burlington Beach, but was answered that both roads were guarded, and that Dr. Rolph was, by that time, safe in Lewiston.

“Believing it safest, we went behind our friend's house to a thicket. He dressed himself, followed us, gave a shrill whistle, which was answered, and all three of us were greatly puzzled as to what safe course I could possibly take. As my companion was not known, and felt the chill of the water and the fatigue, he was strongly advised

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

to seek shelter in a certain house not far off. He did so, reached the frontier safely, and continued for four months thereafter very ill.

“ At dawn of day it began to snow, and, leaving foot-marks behind me, I concluded to go to a farm near by. Its owner thought I would be quite safe in his barn, but I thought not. A pease-rick, which the pigs had undermined all round, stood on a high knoll, and this I chose for a hiding-place. For ten or twelve days I had slept, when I could get any sleep, in my clothes, and my limbs had become so swollen that I had to discard my boots and wear a pair of slippers; my feet were wet, I was very weary, and the cold and drift annoyed me greatly. Breakfast I had had none, and in due time Colonel McDonell, the high sheriff, and his posse stood before me. House, barns, cellars, and garret were searched, and I the while quietly looking on. The colonel was afterwards second in command to Sir Allan MacNab, opposite Navy Island; and when I lived in William Street, some years ago,<sup>1</sup> he called on me, and we had a hearty laugh over his ineffectual exertions to catch a rebel in 1837.

“ When the coast seemed clear, my terrified host, a wealthy Canadian, came up the hill as if to feed his pigs, brought me two bottles of hot water for my feet, a bottle of tea, and several slices of bread and butter; told me that the neighbourhood was

<sup>1</sup> In 1844.

## MACKENZIE'S ESCAPE

literally harassed with bodies of armed men in search of me, and advised that I should leave that place at dark, but where to go he could not tell me. He knew, however, my intimate acquaintance with the country for many miles round. Years thereafter he visited me when in Monroe County Prison, and much he wondered to see me there. After I had left his premises he was arrested; but he had powerful friends, gave bail, and the matter ended there.

“When night had set in, I knocked at the next farmer’s door; a small boy who lived, I think, with one of the brothers Chisholm (strong government men, collectors, colonels, etc.), or who was their nephew or other relative, came to me. I sent in a private message by him, but the house had been searched so often for me that the indwellers dreaded consequences, and would not see me. The boy, however, volunteered to go with me, and we proceeded by a by-path to the house of Mr. King, who lived on the next farm to Colonel John Chisholm, which was then the headquarters of the Tory militia. The boy kept my secret; I had supper with Mr. King’s family, rested for an hour, and then walked with him toward my early residence, Dundas village, at the head of Lake Ontario. We saw a small party of armed men on the road, near the mills of an Englishman, but they did not perceive us. Mr. King is now dead, but the kind attention I met with under his hospitable roof I shall never forget. Why should such a people as I tried and proved

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

in those days ever know hardship, or suffer from foreign or domestic misrule?

"We went to the dwelling of an old friend, to whom I stated that I thought I would now make a more speedy, yet equally sure, progress on horseback. He risked at once, and that too most willingly, not only his horse, but also the knowledge it might convey that he had aided me. Mr. King returned home, and I entered the village alone in the night, and was hailed by some person who speedily passed on. I wanted to take a friend with me, but durst not go to wake him up; there was a guard on duty at the hotel, and I had to cross the creek close by a house I had built in the public square. I then made for the mountain country above Hamilton, called at Lewis Horning's, but found a stranger there, passed on to the dwellings of some old Dutch friends, who told me that all the passes were guarded—Terryberry's, Albion Mills, every place.

"I got a fresh horse near Ancaster, from an old comrade<sup>1</sup>—a noble animal which did me excellent service—pursued my journey, on a concession parallel to the Mountain Road above Hamilton, till I came near to a house well lighted up, and where a guard was evidently posted to question wayfarers. As it then seemed the safest course, I

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Jacob Rymal. Mr. Mackenzie awoke him about midnight, explained his situation, and asked if he could not let him have a horse. "The best I have," was the unhesitating reply.



## MACKENZIE'S ESCAPE

pulled down the worm fence, and tried to find my way through the Binbrook and Glanford woods, a hard task in the daylight, but far worse in the night time. For several weary hours did I toil through the primeval forest, leading my horse, and unable to get out or to find a path. The barking of a dog brought me, when near daylight, on the tenth, to a solitary cottage, and its inhabitant, a negro, pointed out to me the Twenty-Mile Creek, where it was fordable. Before I had ridden a mile, I came to a small hamlet, which I had not known before, entered a house, and, to my surprise, was instantly called by name, which, for once, I really hesitated to own, not at all liking the manner of the farmer who had addressed me, though I now know that all was well intended.

“Quite carelessly, to all appearance, I remounted my horse and rode off very leisurely, but turned the first angle and then galloped on, turned again, and galloped still faster. At some ten miles distance perhaps, a farm newly cleared and situated in a by-place seemed a safe haven. I entered the house, called for breakfast, and found in the owner a stout Hibernian farmer, an Orangeman from the north of Ireland, with a wife and five fine curly-headed children. The beam of a balance, marked ‘Charles Waters, Maker,’ had been hung up in a conspicuous place, and I soon ascertained that said Charles resided in Montreal, and that my entertainer was his brother.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

“I took breakfast very much at my leisure, saw my horse watered and fed with oats in the sheaf, and then asked Mr. Waters to be so kind as to put me on the way to the Mountain Road, opposite Stony Creek, which he agreed to do, but evidently with the utmost reluctance. After we had travelled about a quarter of a mile in the woods, he turned round at a right angle, and said that that was the way. ‘Not to the road,’ said I. ‘No, but to Mr. McIntyre, the magistrate,’ said he. Here we came to a full stop. He was stout and burly; I, small and slight made. I soon found that he had not even dreamed of me as a rebel; his leading idea was, that I had a habit of borrowing other men’s horses without their express leave—in other words, that I was a horse-thief. Horses had been stolen; and he thought he only did his duty by carrying a doubtful case before the nearest justice, whom I inferred to be one of MacNab’s cronies, as he was a new man of whom I had never before heard, though a freeholder of that district and long and intimately acquainted with its affairs.

“This was a real puzzle. Should I tell Waters who I was, it was ten to one he would seize me for the heavy reward, or out of mere party zeal or prejudice. If I went before his neighbour, the new made justice, he would doubtless know and detain me on a charge of high treason. I asked Mr. Waters to explain. He said that I had come, in great haste, to his house on a December Sunday

## MACKENZIE'S ESCAPE

morning, though it was on no public road, with my clothes torn, my face badly scratched, and my horse all in a foam; that I had refused to say who I was, or where I came from; had paid him a dollar for a very humble breakfast, been in no haste to leave, and was riding one of the finest horses in Canada, making at the same time for the frontier by the most unfrequented paths, and that many horses had been recently borrowed. My manner, he admitted, did not indicate anything wrong, but why did I studiously conceal my name and business? And if all was right with me, what had I to fear from a visit to the house of the nearest magistrate?

"On the Tuesday night, in the suburbs of Toronto, when a needless panic had seized both parties, Sheriff Jarvis left his horse in his haste—it was one of the best in Canada, a beautiful animal—and I rode him till Thursday, wearing the cap of J. Latimer, one of my young men, my hat having been knocked off in a skirmish in which one or two of our men were shot. This *bonnet rouge*, my torn homespun, sorry slippers, weary gait, and unshaven beard, were assuredly not much in keeping with the charger I was riding, and I had unfortunately given no reply whatever to several of his and his good wife's home questions. My chance to be tried and condemned in the hall where I had often sat in judgment upon others, and taken a share in the shapeless drudgery of

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

colonial legislation, was now seemingly very good—but I did not quite despair.

“To escape from Waters in that dense forest was entirely hopeless; to blow out his brains, and he acting quite conscientiously, with his five pretty children at home awaiting his early return, I could have done with ease, as far as opportunity went, for he evidently had no suspicion of that, and my pistol was now loaded and sure fire. Captain Powell, when my prisoner ten days before, and in no personal danger, had shot the brave Captain Anderson dead, and thus left eight children fatherless. No matter; I could not do it, come what might; so I held a parley with my detainer, talked to him about religion, the civil broils, Mackenzie, party spirit, and Dr. Strachan; and found to my great surprise and real delight that, though averse to the object of the revolt, he spoke of myself in terms of good-will. Mr. McCabe, his next neighbour, had lived near me in 1823, at Queenston, and had spoken so well of myself and family to him as to have interested him, though he had not met me before.

“‘I am an old magistrate,’ said I, ‘but at present in a situation of some difficulty. If I can satisfy you as to who I am, and why I am here, would you desire to gain the price of any man’s blood?’ He seemed to shudder at the very idea of such a thing. I then administered an oath to him, with more solemnity than I had ever done when

## MACKENZIE'S ESCAPE

acting judicially, he holding up his right hand as we Irish and Scottish Presbyterians usually do.

“When he had ascertained my name, which I showed him on my watch and seals, in my pocket-book and on my linen, he expressed real sorrow on account of the dangerous situation in which I stood; pledged himself to keep silence for twenty-four hours, as I requested; directed me how to get into the main road, and feelingly urged me to accept his personal guidance to the frontier. Farmer Waters had none of the Judas blood in his veins. His innate sense of right led him at once to the just conclusion to do to his fellow-creature as he would be done by. I perceived, from his remarks, that he had previously associated with my name the idea of a much larger and stouter man than I am.

“When I was fairly out of danger he told the whole story to his neighbours. It was repeated and spread broadcast, and he was soon seized and taken to Hamilton, and was there thrown into prison, but was afterwards released.

“When I was passing the houses of two men, Kerr and Sidney, who were getting ready, I supposed, to go to church, I asked some question as to the road, again crossed the Twenty-Mile Creek, and at length re-entered the mountain-path a little below where a military guard was then stationed. While in sight of this guard, I moved on very slowly, as if going to meeting,

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

but afterward used the rowels to some advantage in the way of propellers. Some persons whom I passed on the road I knew, and some I did not. Many whom I met evidently knew me, and well was it for me that day that I had a good name. I could have been arrested fifty times before I reached Smithville, had the governor's person and proclamation been generally respected. As it was, however, another unseen danger lurked close behind me.

“A very popular Methodist preacher, once a zealous friend, had taken a course of which I greatly disapproved, and I had blamed him. Unkind words passed between us, through the press, he, like myself, having the control of a journal widely circulated. No doubt many of his readers were affected thereby; and to this, and not the love of lucre, I have ascribed the conduct of the two men whom I had interrogated as to the road. I have since learned that they warned an armed party, who immediately took horses and rode after me. I perceived them when a third of a mile off, after a part of Mr. Eastman's congregation had passed me on their way home. I thought it safer to endeavour to put my huntsmen off the track, and on a false scent, than to keep on ahead of them; so I turned short towards St. Catharines, when I got to Smithville, and seemed to have taken that road down hill at full speed. Instead of doing so, however, I turned

## MACKENZIE'S ESCAPE

a corner, put up my horse very quickly in the stable of a friendly Canadian, whose sire was a United Empire Loyalist, entered his hospitable abode, he being still at church, beheld my pursuers interrogate a woman who had seen me pass and then ride furiously onward by the St. Catharines road, then went quietly to bed and rested for some four hours, had a comfortable supper, with the family, and what clothes I required. A trusty companion (Samuel Chandler) was also ready to mount his horse and accompany me the last forty miles to Buffalo, should that attempt prove practicable.

“Samuel Chandler, a wagon-maker, resides in the western states, but I do not now know where. He was forty-eight years of age when he volunteered, without fee or reward, to see me safe to Buffalo, had a wife and eleven children, and resided in Chippewa. He is a native of Enfield, Conn., had had no connection whatever with the civil broils in the Canadas; but when told, in strict confidence, of the risks I ran, he preferred to hazard transportation, or loss of life, by aiding my escape, to accepting the freehold of eight thousand acres of land which would have been the reward of any of my betrayers. Other circumstances afterwards roused his hostility to the government, and he joined the party taken at the Short Hills. Of those who were there captured Linus W. Miller, John Grant, John Vernon, himself and others, were tried before Judge

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Jones at Niagara, sentenced to suffer death, but banished instead to Van Diemen's Land. Chandler soon escaped in a Yankee whaler, sailed round the world, and when he reached New York, on his return to his family (after I had got out of Rochester prison), I was in no condition to aid him, which I very unavailingly regretted. A more trusty, faithful, brotherly-minded man I have never met; may Heaven reward Lord Durham's family for saving his life!

"It was about eight o'clock on Sunday night, the tenth, when Chandler and I left Smithville. We turned our horses' heads toward Buffalo, crossed the Twenty-Mile Creek, ventured to take a comfortable supper with a friend, whose house was on our way, crossed the Welland Canal and the Chippewa River, steering clear of the officials in arms in those parts, and got safely into Crowland before daylight. We soon awoke Mr. C—— and left our horses in his pasture, and he immediately accompanied us on our way to the Niagara River on foot.

"On inquiry, he found that all the boats on the river (except those at the ferries, which were well guarded), had been seized and taken possession of by the officers of government. There was but one exception. Captain M'Afee, of Bertie, who resided on the banks of the Niagara, opposite the head of Grand Island, was believed to have kept one of his boats locked up besides his carriages. I



## MACKENZIE'S ESCAPE

hesitated not a moment in advising Mr. C—— to state the difficulty I was in to him, in case he had a boat, for, although he had no knowledge of, or belief or participation in, the outbreak, yet he was well known to be a strictly upright man, benevolent, not covetous, a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, very religious, and in all he said or did, very sincere.

“The brothers De Witt are censured for giving up to Charles II (who had been himself a fugitive), and to a cruel death, three of his father’s judges; but the poor and gallant Scotch Highlanders, whom a mammoth bribe of £30,000 could not tempt to betray the heir to the Crown, when a wandering fugitive in the native land of his royal ancestors, are held in honour. The Irish peasants who refused to give up Lord Edward Fitzgerald to his country’s oppressors for gold, the poor sailors who enabled Archibald Hamilton Rowan to escape from Ireland and an untimely fate, with the proclaimed reward on a handbill in their boat, and the three bold Englishmen who saved the life of the doomed Labedoyere, have the merited applause of an admiring world. Are these noble citizens of Upper and Lower Canada, whom wealth could not tempt to give up, nor danger deter from aiding and saving their fellowmen, though many of them were opposed to them in politics, and at a time of the strongest political excitement—are they less deserving of the meed of public approbation?

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

“ Mr. Samuel M‘Afee is now over sixty years of age, and I think he is of the New Hampshire family of that name who played their part like men in 1776. Our movement had proved a failure, and he knew it. He was wealthy—had a large family—and risked everything by assisting me; yet he did not hesitate, no, not even for a moment.

“ As well as I can now remember, it was about nine on Monday morning, the eleventh, when I reached his farm, which was one of the finest on the river; an excellent breakfast was prepared for us, and I was much fatigued and also hungry. But there was a military patrol on the river, and before sitting down to the repast, I thought it safe to step out and see if the coast was clear. Well for me it was that I did so. Old Colonel Kerby, the Custom House officer opposite Black Rock, and his troop of mounted dragoons in their green uniforms and with their carbines ready, were so close upon us, riding up by the bank of the river, that had I not then observed their approach, they would have caught me at breakfast.

“ Nine men out of ten, in such an emergency, would have hesitated to assist me; and to escape by land was, at that time, evidently impossible. Mr. M‘Afee lost not a moment—his boat was hauled across the road and launched in the stream with all possible speed—and he and Chandler and I were scarcely afloat in it, and out a little way below the bank, when the old Tory colonel and

## CONTINUED DISAFFECTION

his green-coated troop of horse, with their waving plumes, were parading in front of Mr. M'Afee's dwelling.

“How we escaped here, is to me almost a miracle. I had resided long in the district, and was known by everybody. A boat was in the river against official orders; it was near the shore; and the carbines of the military, controlled by the collector, would have compelled us to return or have killed us for disobedience.

“The colonel assuredly did not see us, that was evident; he turned round at the moment to talk to Mrs. M'Afee and her daughters, who were standing in the parterre in front of their house, full of anxiety on our account. But of his companions, not a few must have seen the whole movement, and yet we were allowed to steer for the head of Grand Island with all the expedition in our power, without interruption; nor was there a whisper said about the matter for many months thereafter.

“In an hour we were safe on the American shore; and that night I slept under the venerable Colonel Chapin's hospitable roof with a volunteer guard.”

The deep-seated and widespread feeling of discontent and dissatisfaction, engendered throughout the province by the system of government which provoked the rebellion, is remarked upon repeatedly by Lord Durham in his Report. It shows how formidable the movement might have become, how

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

difficult its suppression, and how disastrous the consequences, if even a temporary success had been gained by those who had raised the standard of revolt. "It cannot, however, be doubted," said Durham, "that the events of the past year have greatly increased the difficulty of settling the disorders of Upper Canada. A degree of discontent, approaching, if not amounting to, disaffection, has gained considerable ground. The causes of dissatisfaction continue to act on the minds of the Reformers; and their hope of redress, under the present order of things, has been seriously diminished. The exasperation caused by the conflict itself, the suspicions and terrors of that trying period, and the use made by the triumphant party of the power thrown into their hands, have heightened the passions which existed before. . . . A great number of perfectly innocent individuals were thrown into prison, and subjected to suspicion and to the harassing proceedings instituted by magistrates whose political leanings were notoriously adverse to them. Severe laws were passed, under colour of which individuals, very generally esteemed, were punished without any form of trial."<sup>1</sup> "It cannot be a matter of surprise that, in despair of any sufficient remedies being provided by the imperial government, many of the most enterprising colonists of Upper Canada look to that bordering country, in which no great industrial enterprise

<sup>1</sup> Report, p. 72.

## GENERAL DISCONTENT

ever feels neglect or experiences a check, and that men the most attached to the existing form of government would find some compensation in a change whereby experience might bid them hope that every existing obstacle would be speedily removed, and each man's fortune share in the progressive prosperity of a flourishing state."<sup>1</sup> "A dissatisfaction with the existing order of things, produced by causes such as I have described, necessarily extends to many who desire no change in the political institutions of the province. Those who most admire the form of the existing system, wish to see it administered in a very different mode. Men of all parties feel that the actual circumstances of the colony are such as to demand the adoption of widely different measures from any that have yet been pursued in reference to them."<sup>2</sup>

Referring to the "necessity for adopting some extensive and decisive measure for the pacification of Upper Canada," Lord Durham said: "It cannot be denied, indeed, that the continuance of the many practical grievances, which I have described as subjects of complaints, and, above all, the determined resistance to such a system of responsible government as would give the people a real control over its own destinies, have, together with the irritation caused by the late insurrection, induced a

<sup>1</sup> *Report*, p. 81.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 82.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

large portion of the population to look with envy at the material prosperity of their neighbours in the United States, under a perfectly free and eminently responsible government; and in despair of obtaining such benefits, under their present institutions, to desire the adoption of a republican constitution, or even an incorporation with the American union. . . . I cannot but express my belief that this is the last effort of their exhausted patience, and that the disappointment of their hopes, on the present occasion, will destroy forever their expectation of good resulting from British connection. I do not mean to say that they will renew the rebellion, much less do I imagine that they will array themselves in such force as will be able to tear the government of their country from the hands of the great military power which Great Britain can bring against them. If now frustrated in their expectations and kept in hopeless subjection to rulers irresponsible to the people, they will at best only await, in sullen prudence, the contingencies which may render the preservation of the province dependent on the devoted loyalty of the great mass of its population.”<sup>1</sup>

Lord Durham was followed in the work of pacification by Mr. Charles Poulett Thomson, better known as Lord Sydenham, Sir John Colborne having acted as governor in the interval between Lord Durham's retirement and Mr. Thomson's

<sup>1</sup> *Report*, p. 111.

## SYDENHAM, GOVERNOR-GENERAL

appointment. The bill for the union of the provinces, which was based on Lord Durham's Report, had already been introduced by Lord John Russell, but the imperial government, considering it advisable to obtain the consent of the legislature of Upper Canada, and of the Special Council of Lower Canada, to the passage of the bill, Mr. Thomson was appointed governor-general, and despatched to Canada for the purpose, in the first place, of obtaining such consent, and thereafter of organizing and administering the government under the new system.<sup>1</sup>

Lord Sydenham's task in obtaining the assent of the Upper Canada House of Assembly to the union measure was not as easy as has sometimes been represented. Although a committee of the House of Assembly had, in 1838, declared in favour of the proposed union,<sup>2</sup> it is quite clear, from statements made by Sydenham at the time, that he encountered strong opposition from the

<sup>1</sup> Lord John Russell subsequently introduced his bill a second time in the session of 1840. It was entitled "An Act to Reunite the Provinces of Upper and Lower Canada, and for the Government of Canada." It was assented to on July 23rd, 1840, but did not take effect until February 10th, 1841. Mr. Thomson issued his proclamation on February 5th, 1841, and took the oath on that day as governor-general, under the new Act, before Chief Justice Sir James Stuart at Government House, Montreal. His title was Baron Sydenham, of Sydenham in the county of Kent, and of Toronto, in Canada. Christie, *History*, Vol. v, pp. 357, 358.

<sup>2</sup> *Journals of the House of Assembly* (1838), p. 282.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Tory party in the assembly. These statements, and his opinions as to the state of things in Upper Canada at that juncture and previously, which are found in his private correspondence, possess special weight and value, not only from the position and personality of the man himself, but because, unlike Durham's commentary, they are not expressed in the guarded or diplomatic language of a State paper, but with the frankness and sincerity which mark communications from one friend to another. They touch, as will be noticed, the question of the provocation for the rebellion, the conduct of those concerned in the movement, and other relevant matters.

Writing from Toronto on November 20th, 1839, to a friend in England, Lord Sydenham, after referring to the situation in Lower Canada, said: "But in Upper Canada the case, as it appears to me, is widely different. The state of things here is far worse than I had expected. The country is split into factions animated by the most deadly hatred to each other. The people have got into the habit of talking so much of separation that they begin to believe in it. The constitutional party is as bad or worse than the other, in spite of all their professions of loyalty. The finances are more deranged than we believed even in England; the deficit £75,000 a year, more than equal to the income. All public works suspended. Emigration going on fast *from* the province. Every



## SYDENHAM ON THE SITUATION

man's property worth only half what it was. When I look to the state of government, and to the departmental administration of the province, instead of being surprised at the condition in which I find it, I am only astonished it has endured so long. I know that, much as I dislike Yankee institutions and rule, I would not have fought against them, which thousands of these poor fellows, whom the Compact call 'rebels,' did, if it was only to keep up such a government as they got."<sup>1</sup>

Speaking of obtaining the assent of the Upper Canada House of Assembly to the union, Lord Sydenham, in a letter of December 24th, 1839, said: "It is impossible to describe to you the difficulties I have had to contend with to get this matter settled as it has been in the assembly. I owe my success altogether to the confidence which the Reform party have reposed in me personally, and to the generous manner in which they have acted with me. A dissolution would have been greatly to their advantage, because there is no doubt they would have had a great majority in the next assembly; and it must have been most galling to them to see me, as well as themselves, opposed by a number of the placeholders without my turning them out. But they gave up all these considerations (and in this country where the feeling of hatred to the Family Compact is intense, they are not light),

<sup>1</sup> This letter appears in Scrope's *Life of Lord Sydenham*, page 148.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

and went gallantly through with me to the end." <sup>1</sup>

It was on September 3rd, 1841, in the first session of the first parliament of Canada, under the Union Act of 1840, and during Lord Sydenham's administration, that the principle of responsible government, so long and earnestly contended for by Mackenzie, was formally and distinctly affirmed by the House of Assembly. The Hon. Robert Baldwin, who was a member of Lord Sydenham's executive council as originally constituted, had withdrawn from it, on the day the legislature was convened, owing to a disagreement with His Excellency as to the political composition of the council.<sup>2</sup> On August 5th, he moved for the production of copies of Lord John Russell's despatches and other papers on the subject of responsible government. The return of these documents was made on August 20th, and, on September 3rd, he moved a series of resolutions dealing with that question. A second series of resolutions was moved in amendment by the Hon. S. B. Harrison,<sup>3</sup> the provin-

<sup>1</sup> Scrope's *Life of Lord Sydenham*, p. 154.

<sup>2</sup> Baldwin asked for the dismissal of Messrs. Draper, Sullivan, Day and Ogden, and the substitution of representative Reformers from Lower Canada. Lord Sydenham thought the request was untimely and impolitic, the French-Canadians having been strong opponents of the union. Poulett Scrope, Sydenham's biographer, is severe in his censure of Baldwin for his conduct in this matter.

<sup>3</sup> Mr. Harrison, on his retirement from the legislature, was appointed judge of the County Court of the county of York.

## RESPONSIBLE GOVERNMENT

cial secretary, and these were adopted. The third amendment was as follows: "That in order to preserve between the different branches of the provincial parliament that harmony which is essential to the peace, welfare and good government of the province, the chief advisers of the representative of the sovereign, constituting a provincial administration under him, ought to be men possessed of the confidence of the representatives of the people, thus affording a guarantee that the well-understood wishes and interests of the people, which our gracious sovereign has declared shall be the rule of the provincial government, will, on all occasions, be faithfully represented and advocated."<sup>1</sup>

The resolutions which were adopted are generally admitted to have been drafted by Lord Sydenham himself. Two days afterwards he was fatally injured by a fall from his horse, and died on September 19th. It is to Lord Sydenham's credit, that he "performed the function of capitulation on the part of the Crown with a good grace, and fairly smoothed the transition" to a happier day.

<sup>1</sup> For the full text of the resolutions, see *Journals of the Legislative Assembly*, Vol. i, September 3rd, 1841, pp. 480, 481.



## CHAPTER XIII

### FRONTIER WARFARE

**B**EFORE the plans of the Upper Canadian insurgents were known, an influential meeting of the citizens of Buffalo, a frontier city on Lake Erie in the state of New York, to express sympathy with the Canadian revolution, was held. At this meeting, which took place on December 5th, an executive committee of thirteen, with Dr. E. Johnson at its head, was formed for the purpose of "calling future meetings in relation to the affairs of the Canadas, and to adopt such measures as might be called for by public opinion." On the eighth a similar demonstration took place at Oswego. On December 11th, the day Mackenzie had arrived on the south side of the frontier line, the largest public meeting ever seen in that city was held in the theatre at Buffalo to express sympathy with the Canadians.

On the following night, true to a promise made by Dr. Chapin on his behalf, Mackenzie appeared at the Buffalo theatre, where he addressed a large and enthusiastic audience. He explained the causes of the revolt, and argued that Canada was suffering all those evils which caused the thirteen colonies, now become the United States, to throw off their allegiance to England, a country of

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

which the government at home was good, but uniformly bad abroad.

Before the meeting closed, Thomas Jefferson Sutherland stated his intention of going to Canada as a volunteer to assist the Canadians to obtain their independence; and he asked if any others present were willing to join him. At his request, a person in the meeting asked the people present to contribute arms and munitions of war for the benefit of the people of Canada. In accordance with this suggestion, contributions of arms were made. Sutherland claimed the conception of the plan of occupying Navy Island with a military force; on December 19th, 1839, he made oath that he set about carrying this project into effect without the privity or co-operation of Mackenzie. He added that Mackenzie only joined the Navy Island expedition out of motives of personal safety. Mackenzie had not been long in Buffalo before he was introduced to Rensselaer Van Rensselaer by some of the principal people of the place. They represented him as a cadet of West Point, and as having gained experience under Bolivar, in South America, both of which representations proved incorrect. He was a son of General Van Rensselaer of Albany, and belonged to the influential family of that name in the state of New York. Sutherland soon showed that he was totally wanting in discretion, by publicly recruiting for volunteers for Canada, issuing a public

## VAN RENSELLAER

call for a military meeting, and marching through the streets to the sound of martial music. Mackenzie, seeing the folly of the procedure, begged Sutherland to desist; but it was to no purpose.

At that time, it was thought that Dr. Duncombe was at the head of a large force in the western district of Upper Canada; and Mackenzie wished the friends of the Canadian insurgents to go over to Fort Erie, on the Canadian side, and there organize a force to join that of Duncombe, or act separately, if that should appear to be the best course. But he was overruled; and it was determined that the refugees and their friends should take up a position on Navy Island. This island, awarded to England by the Treaty of Ghent, is situated in the Niagara River, a short distance above the world-renowned cataract. A swift current sweeps past the island on either side, on its way to the great Niagara Falls below; but its navigation at that point is practicable for steamers or row boats. Van Rensselaer had been urged by Sutherland to take command of the patriot forces; Sutherland, being previously unknown to Van Rensselaer, had brought a letter of introduction from Mr. Taylor, a previous Speaker of one branch of the legislature of New York. He was told that he would derive his authority from Dr. Rolph and Mackenzie; and he was to be invested with the entire military command. Van Rensselaer's own account of the

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

reasons that induced him to accept this position, represent him as wishing the success of the cause of republicanism, and desirous of imitating the example of Sam Houston in Texas.

In the meantime, it became known that Governor Head was about to make a requisition upon Governor Marcy, of the state of New York, for the extradition of Mackenzie as a fugitive from justice for alleged crimes growing out of the incidents of the insurrection. Dr. Bethune was selected as the bearer of the despatch in which this demand was made. Governor Marcy declined to comply with the application, on the ground that the offences charged, being incidents of the revolt, were merged in the larger imputed crime of treason, a political offence excepted by the laws of the state of New York from those for which fugitives could be surrendered. Attorney-General Beardsley, at the request of Governor Marcy, drew up an elaborate opinion in which the inadmissibility of the demand was shown.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The following is the copy of a letter sent by Governor Marcy to the Hon. John Forsyth, United States secretary of state, referring to this extraordinary attempt on the part of Sir Francis Bond Head and the official party to get Mackenzie into their power. The letter is dated Albany, December 30th, 1837:

"As I have had some official correspondence with the governor of Upper Canada in relation to the disturbances in that province, and have disposed of some applications which have been made to me for my interference in a manner that may not be satisfactory to him, I have deemed it my duty to put you in possession of the facts, that you may judge of the course I have pursued. Having



## EFFORTS AT EXTRADITION

On December 13th, Van Rensselaer and Mackenzie landed on Navy Island. They called at Whitehaven, on Grand Island, ten miles from the city of Buffalo, on the way. There they expected to find assembled the volunteers by whom they were to be accompanied, and of whose numbers, enthusiasm, and equipment so much had been said. These volunteers had been represented as two hun-

ascertained that considerable excitement existed among a portion of the citizens of this state in relation to the movements in the Canadas, I issued a proclamation apprising them of their duty to the government, and warning them against a course of proceeding incompatible to our neutral and friendly relations with Great Britain. I caused this proclamation to be published, not only in the state paper, but in the counties bordering on the British provinces. His Excellency Lieutenant-Governor Head made a request on me to deliver to the civil authorities of Upper Canada William L. Mackenzie as a fugitive from justice. The crimes imputed to him were murder, robbery and arson. I herewith send you copies of the affidavits which accompanied the governor's request. Besides these affidavits, he transmitted sundry proclamations and other printed documents, but I do not, however, think it necessary to furnish you with copies thereof. It appeared quite evident that the crimes with which Mackenzie was charged resulted from the revolt which had taken place in that province. You will perceive by the laws of this state, referred to in the opinion of the attorney-general, a copy of which is herewith transmitted, that the government is not authorized to deliver up a fugitive fleeing from a foreign country charged with treason. Though Mackenzie was not charged with treason, it is very evident that that was the crime for which he would have been tried if he had been given up. The other offences with which he was charged were the incidents of the imputed treason and were merged in it.

"I also transmit herewith a copy of my letter to His Excellency the Lieutenant-Governor of Upper Canada, announcing my decision on the application which he had made to me for Mackenzie as a fugitive from justice."

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

dred and fifty strong, and as having two pieces of artillery and some four hundred and fifty stand-of-arms, besides provisions and munitions in abundance. The surprise both of Mackenzie and Van Rensselaer must have been great when they found only twenty-four volunteers waiting to accompany them.

A provisional government, of which Mackenzie was president, was organized on the island. A proclamation, dated Navy Island, December 13th, 1837, was issued by Mackenzie stating the objects which the attempted revolution was designed to secure, and promising three hundred acres of public land to every volunteer who joined the patriot standard. A few days after, another proclamation was issued adding to the proffered bounty a hundred dollars in silver, payable by May 1st, 1838. The fulfilment of the promises held out in these proclamations was, however, dependent upon the success of the cause in which the volunteers were to fight.

The provisional government issued promises to pay in sums of one and ten dollars each. They are said to have been freely taken on the American side; but what amount was issued I cannot ascertain. Dr. Rolph was appointed, on December 28th, "to receive all the moneys which may be subscribed within the United States on behalf of the Canadian patriots struggling to obtain the independence of their country;" but he declined to act in that capacity.

## NAVY ISLAND

The handful of men, who first took possession of Navy Island, gradually increased to between five hundred and six hundred. From December 15th to the 31st the majority of those present were British subjects. After that date, the American element was probably in the ascendant. The arms and provisions were chiefly obtained from the States. The rolls of names have been preserved, with a partial diary of occurrences.

Van Rensselaer's conduct, while on the island, has been the subject of much obloquy. While his bravery is admitted, his intemperance ruined the prospects of the patriots. Having the entire military power in his hands, he chose to keep his plans to himself, and his refusal to act or explain his intentions finally exhausted the patience of his men. The latter were anxious to cross to the mainland.

A Loyalist force, at first under Colonel Cameron, and afterwards under Colonel MacNab, appeared on the Chippewa side, and a bombardment commenced. The fire of the Loyalist cannon and mortars, kept up day after day, was almost entirely harmless, only one man on the island being killed by it. The extent of the mischief done by the patriots was greater because they were not baffled by woods on the mainland, where the enemy was encountered. The men became impatient under the ineffectual efforts they were making; and Van Rensselaer was repeatedly urged to lead them to the enemy who neglected to come to them. In reply to these

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

importunities, he would answer that when his plans were complete he would announce them; that in the meantime it was for the men to hold themselves ready to execute his orders.

What gave courage to the patriots was the belief that the moment they crossed over to the mainland, they would be joined by large numbers of the population anxious to revolutionize the government. Chandler was sent over to distribute proclamations and ascertain the feeling of the country. He returned to the island with the report that a large majority of the population was ripe for revolt, and only awaiting assistance to fly to arms. Hastings was far from being one of the most disloyal counties in Upper Canada; and when it furnished nearly five hundred sworn rebels, some idea may be formed of the extent to which the revolutionary feeling had infected the population. With such information as this in his hands, a man of Mackenzie's impetuous temperament was not likely to be at ease under the inaction to which Van Rensselaer, as commander-in-chief, doomed the men under his control.

About this time, Thomas J. Sutherland was starting for the west. A letter to T. Dufort, then at Detroit, was written assigning to Sutherland the command of any force at that point likely to co-operate with those on Navy Island, but it was not sent. It cannot be now stated who signed the letter. The original is in Mackenzie's handwriting, and its

## BURNING OF THE "CAROLINE"

purport is that, "for the purpose of co-operating with the patriots now on this island in their intended descent upon Canada, and of giving great strength and more full effect to their plan of operations for the deliverance of that great country from the horrors of despotism, the bearer proceeds immediately to Detroit to take command of any army which his efforts and those of his friends may raise for the invasion of Canada." But the signature to the original is cut off, and the document is still among Mackenzie's papers.

Up to December 29th, the volunteers on Navy Island had increased slowly, and they did not yet number quite two hundred. About an hour after midnight of that day, an event occurred which, for some time, threatened to produce war between England and the United States. "We observed," says Mackenzie, "about one o'clock, a.m., a fire burning on the American side of the river, in the direction of the small tavern and old storehouse commonly called Schlosser. Its volume gradually enlarged, and many were our conjectures concerning it. At length the mass of flame was distinctly perceived to move upon the waters, and approach the rapids and the middle of the river above the falls. Swiftly and beautifully it glided along, yet more rapid in its onward course as it neared the fathomless gulf into which it vanished in a moment amid the surrounding darkness. This was the ill-fated steamboat *Caroline*."

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Colonel MacNab, in ordering the vessel to be cut out, acted under the misapprehension that she had been purchased by what he called the "pirates" and rebels on Navy Island. He determined to destroy her on the night of the twenty-ninth, it having been reported to him that she had been seen landing a cannon and several armed men that day on Navy Island. Captain Drew, R. N., was instructed to collect a force of volunteers to burn, sink, or destroy the vessel. The expedition comprised seven boats, with an average of about nine men each, armed with pistols, cutlasses, and boarding pikes. When they were opposite Navy Island, Captain Drew ordered the men to rest on their oars, and said to them, "The steamboat is our object; follow me." He soon discovered that she was at the wharf at Schlosser, on the United States side of the Niagara River. The boats went silently towards the fated vessel, and do not appear to have been discovered till within a few yards of her. The hands belonging to the steamer had gone to Niagara Falls that night, and William Wells, the owner, had allowed strangers—two of whom were sailors—to occupy their berths till their return. The hands came back at twelve; but the strangers do not appear to have left before the attacking party arrived. The crew of the steamer, which was only of forty-six tons measurement, consisted of two men and a black boy. They were surprised

## BURNING OF THE "CAROLINE"

while asleep, and having scarcely any other arms on board besides a piece which was discharged by the sentinel on the approach of the boats, hardly any resistance was offered. In a couple of minutes the vessel was in possession of the assailing party ; and, in the fray that took place on deck, five or six persons were killed. By the orders of Captain Drew, Lieutenant Elmsley and some of the men landed on the American shore, and cut the vessel from her moorings previous to setting fire to her, in order to prevent the destruction of other property by the spreading of the flames. A lamp was placed in a large basket used for carrying Indian corn, and the cross-bars of the windows torn off and placed above the lamp, which set them on fire. The vessel was then towed out by the boats from the wharf till she was under the influence of the current, and was then abandoned.

Under all the circumstances, the right of the British authorities to destroy the *Caroline*, even by the invasion of American territory, cannot be successfully disputed. The refugees had been seduced by American citizens into abusing the right of asylum ; and they found among those citizens a large number who had joined their standard and engaged in a war against a nation with whom their own government was at peace. The executive government was not armed with legal powers necessary to restrain its own citizens ; but it had not been entirely inactive. Two days after, the meeting of

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

sympathizers was held at Buffalo, Mr. Benton, district attorney for northern New York, was officially instructed to watch and prosecute all violators of the neutrality laws. At the same time, Mr. Forsyth, secretary of state, by direction of the President, called the attention of Governor Marcy, of the state of New York, to the contest, and asked his prompt interference to arrest the parties concerned, if any enterprise of a hostile nature should be undertaken in the state of New York against a foreign power in amity with the United States. Similar letters were, on the same day, addressed to the governors of Michigan and Vermont, within the borders of which states some of the Lower Canadian insurgents, after the defeat at St. Charles, had taken up their quarters. But the destruction of the *Caroline* added to the sympathy for the cause of revolution in Canada an almost uncontrollable indignation at the invasion of American territory, which all classes of Americans joined in representing as unwarranted by the law of nations, and not justified by the circumstances of the case. The President informed Congress that a demand for reparation would be made; public meetings were held to denounce what was considered a wanton outrage; the press aided in inflaming the public excitement; and it was said that, when General Burt had collected from one thousand five hundred to two thousand militiamen to guard the frontier of New York State, it was with the greatest diffi-



## STRAINED RELATIONS

culty they could be restrained from going over to Navy Island to join the insurgents and sympathizers collected there.

However justifiable the destruction of the *Caroline* may have been in the eye of international law, it was an act of great rashness. A militia colonel, without the least authority from his superiors, had ordered the invasion of the territory of a nation with whom his government was at peace, and when that nation was using efforts, not very successful it must be confessed, to maintain neutrality in a contest in which they were in no way concerned. The British government assumed the responsibility of the act; and, with a degree of haste that was justly censured at the time, conferred the honour of knighthood on Colonel MacNab before the reclamation of the American government had been disposed of. The Upper Canada House of Assembly tendered its thanks to the men engaged in the destruction of the *Caroline*, and presented swords to Colonel MacNab and Captain Drew.

President Van Buren seems to have been sincerely anxious to avoid a war with England; and it required all his address to prevent the *Caroline* massacre from interrupting the friendly relations of the two countries. The demand upon England for "reparation and atonement" was under consideration for two years and a half before it was disposed of. In the meantime, Alexander McLeod was arrested on a charge of having murdered Amos

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Durfee, whose body was left on American territory at Schlosser, the night the *Caroline* was cut out. While the whole question was still open, the British government demanded his "immediate release." The demand was refused; and McLeod was put upon his trial in the Circuit Court of the state of New York, at Utica, in October, 1841. The trial commenced on the fourth, and lasted eight days. Whether McLeod was guilty or innocent—the jury declared him not guilty—it must be admitted that many a man has been hanged upon much weaker evidence than that which was produced against him. The verdict of not guilty probably prevented a war between England and the United States.

Mrs. Mackenzie was the only female who spent any length of time on Navy Island. She arrived there a few hours before the destruction of the *Caroline*, and remained nearly a fortnight with her husband, when ill-health obliged her to leave. Mackenzie accompanied her to the house of Captain Appleby, Buffalo, and while on his way he was arrested, in the railway car, by the United States marshal for a breach of the neutrality laws. He entered into recognizance in five thousand dollars for his appearance, and returned to the island the next morning, where he remained till General Van Rensselaer announced his intention to evacuate it with the force under his command, which he did on January 13th. The Buffalo committee

## DR. DUNCOMBE'S FORCE

of thirteen seems to have had more power than the provisional government, for the question of evacuating the island was decided by them.

When the patriots took possession of Navy Island, they expected soon to be able to cross over to the mainland and join Dr. Duncombe's forces in the west. The doctor, who had been in constant correspondence with the Lower Canadian patriots, had under his command between three and four hundred men; but a large number of them were without arms. They were assembled at Brantford, whither Colonel MacNab, with a detachment of about three hundred and sixty men, repaired. On his approach, Dr. Duncombe retreated to a place called Scotland. Colonel MacNab was reinforced at Brantford by one hundred and fifty volunteers and one hundred Indians, under command of Captain Kerr. When a plan of attacking the insurgents simultaneously at three points had been agreed upon, and was to have been executed next morning, Dr. Duncombe retreated. He told the men that Mackenzie had been defeated near Toronto, and that they had better disperse. In the meantime, Colonel MacNab, learning of the anticipated retreat, despatched messengers to Simcoe, Woodstock, and London, requesting all the volunteers that could be mustered to march down and intercept the rebels. On December 14th, while at Scotland, Duncombe's force was increased by about one thousand additional volunteers. Hundreds more

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

had been expected to join him from the neighbourhood of St. Thomas and other places in the west. Here Colonel MacNab seized all Duncombe's papers, as well as those of Eliakim Malcolm, and took several prisoners, whom he sent under an escort to Hamilton. In spite of the retreat of Duncombe, and the dispersion of his men, Colonel MacNab sent to the governor a strong recommendation to sanction the raising of volunteer companies of one hundred and fifty men each. While at Scotland, deputations of insurgents visited him offering to surrender their arms, take the oath of allegiance, and, if necessary, form part of his force. In other places large numbers of undetected rebels, when they found the tide turning against them, joined the loyal forces; so that the number of volunteers was no proof of the popularity of the government. At a place called Sodom, in the township of Norwich, many of Duncombe's men surrendered themselves to Colonel MacNab, who, with a degree of humanity that reflected credit upon him, after receiving what arms they had, permitted them to return to their homes on condition that they should again surrender themselves should His Excellency not extend the royal clemency to them. Some of the ringleaders were sent to London, under an escort, for trial, and Joshua Guilam Doan, for whose apprehension a reward had been offered, was executed there on February 6th, 1839. On December 19th, 1837, Colonel MacNab received a report that consider-

## ATTACK ON FORT MALDEN

able disaffection prevailed in the western district, particularly in the neighbourhood of Sandwich. But the insurrection was put down in the western part of the province without a shot being fired.

General Sutherland left Navy Island for Detroit, where he found Henry S. Handy, of Illinois, in charge of the "Patriot Army of the North-West" as commander-in-chief. The governor of Michigan does not seem to have been unfriendly to their plans, which were to attack Fort Malden at Amherstburg and to seize the public stores at Sandwich and Windsor. Thomas Dufort had been instrumental in getting a council of war together, at the instance of Bidwell, who, in the previous November, had urged him to proceed to Michigan and secure assistance, and he so far succeeded as to get some of the leading men in that state to form a council of war, which lent all the aid in their power to a scheme of co-operation with the patriots. Men and arms were secured, and also schooners for their transport, but serious dissensions between Handy and Sutherland, treachery, lack of judgment, inexperience and misadventures combined to render the expedition futile. From one of the schooners General Theller fired a shot from a nine-pounder into Amherstburg, instead of at the Fort, without even demanding a surrender of the place, and then retired. General Sutherland, who was in charge of another schooner with sixty volunteers, landed his force on Bois

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Blanc Island opposite Fort Malden, and issued a proclamation to the citizens of Upper Canada. The schooner *Anne* with arms, munitions and troops on board, came to his assistance, but being insufficiently rigged, drifted on the Canadian shore, where she was beached in three feet of water. A brisk fire was opened on her by the Royalist troops, who later boarded and captured the vessel.

Sutherland, on returning to the mainland, was arrested in Detroit, but Handy continued to drill men on Sugar Island until the failure of supplies, and ice starting to come down the river, he was forced to ask and obtain the friendly offices of the governor of Michigan to take his troops back to Detroit. A later attempt to renew the attack on Fort Malden, with arms which the militia of Detroit stacked in the outer porch of the Detroit City Hall, where Handy's men might get them, was put an end to by the United States troops under General Brady.

A few weeks after these events, on a cold night in February, a patriot force under Colonel Vreeland crossed the river to Windsor with only forty-three firelocks, but the expedition was, on the twenty-fifth of the month, put to flight by a force of British regulars.

The refugees from Canada were frequently in danger from secret enemies or private assassins. On January 21st, 1838, Van Rensselaer wrote from Buffalo to Mackenzie, who was in Rochester, to

## HICKORY ISLAND

warn him that there were desperadoes in the former city whose object was to assassinate him.

Soon after they left Navy Island, Mackenzie and Van Rensselaer found it impossible to continue work together. In the month of February, an expedition was planned for the purpose of making a descent upon Kingston. Van Rensselaer claimed to have originated the intended movement. However this may be, he and Mackenzie were playing at cross-purposes, and the latter decided to have nothing to do with the expedition if it was to be directed by Van Rensselaer.

It had been arranged, by correspondence carried on by Mackenzie, that a rising should take place in Canada when the expedition crossed. Near the end of February, Van Rensselaer crossed from French Creek, a village situated on the American side of the St. Lawrence a short distance below Kingston, to Hickory Island, about two miles from Gananoque, with a force that has been variously stated at from fifteen to twenty-five hundred men. Van Rensselaer, while here, kept his bed in such a state of intoxication that he could not give an intelligent answer to any question put to him. The men, disgusted or alarmed, began to move off in squads, and, when all chance of success had been lost, a council of war was held, and it was determined to retreat. Van Rensselaer reported that the morning after the island was evacuated, the Loyalists landed upon it two hundred strong.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

Van Rensselaer by way, it would seem, of accounting for his own failure, published a letter, dated Albany, March 29th, 1838, in which he blamed Mackenzie for having interfered with his plans. That letter contained accusations against Mackenzie which Van Rensselaer himself afterwards admitted to be unjust. In an unpublished letter addressed to a Mr. McMahon, and dated Albany, February 24th, 1840, he says: "Since I have had time for reflection, for arriving at correct information, and for weighing dispassionately circumstances which led me to an unjust conclusion while penning my statement, although I am yet of opinion that he has committed errors—and who has not?—I am bound as a man of honour to admit that all my charges, whether expressed or implied, against his moral integrity or honesty of purpose, are, as far as my present knowledge and information extend, incorrect." After which confession he exclaims, "I am mightily relieved."

Soon after this, General McLeod despatched Colonel Seward with about four hundred men to Point au Pelé Island. Subsequently he received a despatch from Colonel Bradley, informing him that Seward's force had been defeated, with a loss of fifteen or twenty missing, and had retreated to the American shore. "The loss of the enemy," says McLeod, in an unpublished letter, "is fifty or sixty, and a great number wounded." The Loyalist troops were supported by cavalry and artillery, and one of the



## POINT AU PELÉ ISLAND

patriot colonels attributed their retreat principally to want of artillery. Nine prisoners were taken by the British, among whom was General Sutherland. He was not taken on the island, and his trial was afterwards declared illegal by the British government and his release ordered. He was, however, kept in prison for a long time.

From this western frontier a combination of great force, extending over the two Canadas, was soon to be made, and but for the occurrence of an accident, it is impossible to say what the result might have been.



## CHAPTER XIV

### AFTER THE REBELLION

WHILE the abortive expeditions of Bois Blanc and Point au Pelé were in progress, Mackenzie was sounding the public feeling in other places. Soon after leaving Navy Island he visited some of the patriot leaders of Lower Canada at Plattsburg, and went to New York, Philadelphia, and other places.

When the question of evacuating Navy Island was before the Buffalo committee of thirteen,<sup>1</sup> Mackenzie had become impressed with what he conceived to be the necessity of establishing a public journal to express the views of the patriots in Canada and their friends in the United States. The project was finally carried out by himself. On April 17th the prospectus of *Mackenzie's Gazette* was published, and the first number of the paper made its appearance on May 12th, 1838, in New York, and was continued till the close of 1840. During the greater part of this time the paper was published in Rochester, a frontier city on the Genesee River. To establish a newspaper, under the circumstances, appealing chiefly to the public

<sup>1</sup> On this committee were Dr. Johnson, a former mayor of Buffalo, Mr. Seymour, master in chancery, Mr. Macy, Mr. Wilkinson, and other local celebrities.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

interest on a single question, must have been uphill work.

In March, steps were taken to organize the Canadian refugees. At a meeting of some of these persons held at Lockport, state of New York, on March 19th, 1838, a committee was formed to ascertain the numbers, location, and condition of the Canadian refugees in the States, and to draw up articles of association, by "means of which their sufferings might be mitigated, and a redress of their grievances obtained," and "to adopt such other measures as, in their discretion, may best conduce to their welfare." This organization was called the "Canadian Refugee Relief Association." It was resolved to form branch unions and to send agents of the association through the country. Dr. McKenzie, formerly of Hamilton, was president of the association, and all correspondence was ordered to be directed to him at Lockport. Mackenzie was not present at the meeting. This association proceeded to the execution of schemes in which he took no part, and in which he was in no way concerned, either by advising or otherwise. It will hereafter be seen that several of the members of this committee were personally engaged in the ill-advised Short Hills expedition; and at least one of them appears to have been concerned in the destruction of the steamer *Sir Robert Peel*, in which twelve of them are said to have been engaged.

## LOUNT AND MATHEWS

On April 12th, 1838, Samuel Lount and Peter Mathews, the first of the victims of the rebellion, were executed at Toronto for high treason. Lord Glenelg, hearing that there was a disposition on the part of the local officials in Canada to treat with undue severity persons who had been concerned in the revolt, remonstrated against such a course being pursued. But Sir George Arthur, who, like his predecessor in the governorship of Upper Canada, had fallen in with the views of the Family Compact and imbibed some of their political passions, failed to carry out his instructions to use his influence to prevent the adoption of extreme measures. The executive council determined to interpose their harsh decision to prevent the possibility of the royal clemency saving Lount and Mathews from a death upon the gallows. "Petitions," Sir George Arthur admits, "signed by not less than eight thousand persons, have been presented in their favour within the last three or four days." Sir Francis had led them into the trap, had encouraged the rebellion when it was his duty to take measures to suppress it in its incipient stages, and there can be but one name for the execution of men whom the executive had enticed into the commission of the crime for which they were made to suffer death. There is reason to believe that Lount could have purchased his life by putting the government in possession of evidence that might have tended to place others

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

in the position he occupied ; but he resolutely refused to accept it on such terms ; and, instead of blaming others for his fate, continued to the last to express fervent wishes for the success of the cause in which he offered up his life.

Much has been said about the salutary effects of the execution of these men, as an example to others. Instead of striking awe into men's minds, the effect was sometimes to produce a feeling of revenge. I find a remarkable example of this in the case of one of Lount's friends, who, after he had been at the Short Hills expedition, distinctly states : "I have been doing all in my power, ever since, to avenge the blood of Lount and support the cause he died for."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>In 1903 there was erected in the Necropolis, Toronto, by the "Friends and Sympathizers" of William Lount and Peter Mathews, a gray granite monument, surmounted by a broken column, on which is inscribed the following:—

"Samuel Lount was the eldest son of the late Gabriel Lount, an Englishman who emigrated to Pennsylvania in the middle of the eighteenth century, and of Philadelphia Hughes his wife, a Quakeress. He emigrated to Upper Canada and settled near Newmarket, in the county of York, in 1811. In 1834 he represented the county of Simcoe in the Upper Canada legislature, and served two years. In 1836 he became a candidate again, and was defeated by corrupt practices used by his political opponents. A petition of eight thousand people asked for a reprieve, which was refused. He lived a patriot and died for popular rights.

"Peter Mathews was the son of Peter Mathews, Sr., a United Empire Loyalist, who fought on the British side in the American Revolutionary War, and at its close settled with his wife and family in the townsite of Pickering in the (then) county of York. Peter Mathews, the son, belonged to Brock's volunteers during the War of 1812

## REVOLUTIONARY PLANS

A number of other political prisoners, under sentence of death at Toronto, had their sentences commuted to transportation for life; and they, with others who were to be banished without trial, were sent to Fort Henry, Kingston, for safe keeping, till they could be conveyed to Van Diemen's Land. From Fort Henry they managed to effect their escape; and John Montgomery and several others, after great suffering, succeeded in reaching the United States.

About June 1st, many persons, who had been connected with the rebellion, crossed the frontier line at the west, and took refuge in Michigan. Now commenced an organization for revolutionizing Canada and bringing about its independence; a movement comprising a much larger number of Canadians than has ever been suspected. The centre of the organization was in Michigan, and General Handy was among the most active in its promotion. Lodges were formed, every member of which took an oath to be subject to the commander-in-chief, General Handy, and not to obey any order except from him to General Roberts. Handy signed blank commissions, and sent some trusty individuals through the provinces to form revolutionary societies, and enroll all in whom he thought he could confide. In every square mile

to 1815, and fought in various battles in Upper Canada of that war. He was known and respected as an honest and prosperous farmer, always ready to do his duty to his country, and died as he lived—a patriot."

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of settled country a person was appointed to grant commissions in the secret army of revolt. Handy's commissions were given to the captains; and the associations were left to elect their own colonels. Couriers and spies, one hundred in number, were constantly kept in motion through the provinces, taking intelligence daily to Handy. Each of them had a beat of ten miles, at either end of which he communicated with others; and this distance he regularly made both ways every day. Two hundred companies, of one hundred men each, were enrolled, making an aggregate force of twenty thousand men in the Canadas, ready to rise whenever called upon; and through the system of couriers in operation, they could have been called into action with the least possible delay. July 4th, 1838, was fixed upon for striking the first blow. The patriot standard was to be raised at Windsor, a Canadian village opposite Detroit; and when this was accomplished, the couriers were to be prepared to transmit the intelligence with all possible speed, and a general rising was to take place. The first thing to be done was to seize all available public arms, ammunition, and provisions, and then the fortification of some prominent point designated was to be commenced. If an accident had not occurred to prevent the execution of this plan, it is difficult to say what would have been the result.

A ruffian named Baker came across the path of General Handy. He got up an expedition on



## THE SHORT HILLS AFFAIR

the Black River, and induced forty men to join him by falsely representing that he was authorized by General Handy to cross to the Canadian shore with the men as freebooters. They seized some flour, and being discovered and followed to the Michigan shore, the affair created a commotion that set General Brady of the United States army—who appears to have used his best exertions to put down all these expeditions—on the alert. A new guard was set on the arsenal; and on the day before Windsor was to have been captured, preparatory to a general rising in Canada, the conspiracy had collapsed from the want of arms.

Mackenzie had no connection whatever with this movement. In 1839, he made an affidavit that when he heard, through the public press, of the intended expeditions at Short Hills, and against Prescott and Windsor, he wrote to Lockport earnestly urging those whom he thought likely to have influence with the refugees—the Refugee Association Committee, no doubt—to abandon all such attempts as injurious to the cause of good government in Canada. He was still favourable to the independence of the Canadas; but he was not convinced that the means proposed were calculated to secure the object. He came to this conclusion, it would seem, in February, when he refused to “sail in the same boat” with Van Rensselaer, to be piloted as the latter might think fit.

Of the Short Hills affair, which took place in

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

June, 1838, he first learned from the frontier newspapers. Those who took part in it, I find, claim to have had five hundred and twenty-six men, well armed and equipped; but it is quite certain that there was not over one-fifth of that number who fell in with the lancers at Overholt's tavern. The rest, if there were any such number as is alleged, must have been Canadians. A few men crossed the Niagara River in small bodies, taking with them what arms they could. These they deposited at an appointed place which was reached by a march of some fifteen miles in the woods, and they then went back for more. These arms must have been intended for Canadians. In this way, eight days were spent before the parties were discovered. Being fired upon by a body of lancers from Overholt's tavern, they finally set fire to it, taking prisoners all who survived, but shortly afterwards releasing them. The invaders soon after dispersed, going in different directions; but thirty-one of them were captured, and it is believed very few escaped.

It is difficult to determine whether the organization set on foot by Handy was identical with what was known as Hunters' Lodges. Hunters' Societies are generally supposed to have originated in the state of Vermont, in May, 1838.

A convention of the Hunters' Lodges of Ohio and Michigan was held at Cleveland, from September 16th to 22nd, 1838. There were seventy delegates present. Mackenzie was not cognizant

## HUNTERS' LODGES

of the intended meeting, and the results of its deliberations were not officially communicated to him. He was not a member of the society, and by its rules none but the initiated could be admitted to its secrets. All the lodges were required to report to the central committee at Cleveland.

Sir George Arthur had his spies on the frontier to supply him with whatever could be learned of these movements for a fresh invasion of Canada. The information these persons obtained, whatever credence it might be entitled to, created great alarm in Toronto. They told Sir George that, at the end of October, there were at least forty thousand persons in the frontier States in the invasion plot, which was "carried on by means of Masonic Lodges, secretly established in almost every town along the frontier, the members of which communicate with each other by private signs, and are divided into several grades of initiation." But when Sir George Arthur had learned something of the plot, the expedition of Windmill Point was on the eve of taking place, and it had been carried into effect two days before United States Secretary Forsyth could reply to Sir George's complaint, conveyed to the President through Mr. Fox. The federal government had previously learned from its own spies some particulars of these movements; but it pleaded its inability to arrest them.

In the first ten days of November, the Hun-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

ters' Lodges were concentrating their forces for an attack on Prescott. On Sunday morning, the eleventh, two schooners, in tow of the steamer *United States*, left Millen's Bay for Prescott, having on board men, arms, and munitions of war. The men who came down in the steamer, about six hundred in number, were transferred to the schooners in the evening; one of these was in command of Van Shultz, a brave Pole, and the other in charge of the notorious Bill Johnson. Van Shultz proposed to land all the men in the expedition immediately on their arrival at the Prescott wharf; then, after leaving a sufficient force to guard the boats, to divide them into three bodies, with the principal of which he should march through the village, while Colonel Woodruff should lead one wing round on one side, and another person the other on the other side. The three bodies were then to meet between the village and the fort, in case any resistance were offered from that point. He was opposed to first landing on the American side, at Ogdensburg.

The principal officers of the expedition opposed the plans of Van Shultz, yet, in skill and bravery, they were all very far his inferiors. They did land at Ogdensburg; but General Bierce, who was to have commanded the expedition, fell sick with a suddenness that created a suspicion of cowardice which he was never able to remove. Van Shultz took over about one hundred and seventy men in

## BATTLE OF WINDMILL POINT

one of the schooners, about nine o'clock on the morning of the twelfth. Bill Johnson managed to run the other schooner upon the bar, with many arms and much ammunition on board, and she never crossed to the succour of Van Shultz.

On hearing of the expedition, Captain Sandom, commanding the Royal Navy in Upper Canada, set out from Kingston in pursuit. After an engagement of an hour's duration, the invaders were driven into a large, circular stone mill, the walls of which were of immense thickness, and into a stone house adjacent; but, the fire of Sandom's guns making no impression on the thick walls, he withdrew from the attack.

Meanwhile Van Shultz, not receiving the expected reinforcements from the leaders of the expedition who remained in Ogdensburg, and not being joined by any of the inhabitants, was reminded by the one hundred and seventy men under his command of the hopelessness of their position. They begged him to lead them back to the States. But there was not a single boat at their disposal, and the British steamer *Experiment* kept a vigilant look-out on the river.

On the sixteenth, Colonel Dundas arrived at Prescott from Kingston with four companies of the 83rd Regiment, and two eighteen-pounders and a howitzer. Nearly every shot perforated the massive mill. Under cover of night, the division of Van Shultz's men, who were in the stone house,

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

took refuge in the brushwood on the bank of the river, where, with their commander, they were taken prisoners. A flag of truce was displayed from the mill, whence the firing had ceased; and Colonel Dundas accepted an unconditional surrender. One hundred and fifty-seven prisoners were taken, of whom eleven were executed, including the gallant and heroic, but misguided and betrayed leader, Colonel Van Shultz.

Van Shultz was in New York a short time before the expedition against Prescott took place, but he neither consulted nor in any way communicated with Mackenzie, who was then living there. "I knew nothing of the expedition," said Mackenzie in his *Gazette* of November 14th, 1840, "never saw or wrote a line to Van Shultz, was four hundred miles distant, and had nothing to do with the matter whatever; nor did any of the sufferers, when on trial, or going to the gallows, or to banishment, once name me." And he afterwards made the same remark with regard to the Windsor expedition, with which he had no connection whatever.

A few days after the Prescott expedition, President Van Buren issued a proclamation calling upon the citizens of the United States to give neither countenance nor encouragement to persons who, by a breach of neutrality, had forfeited all claim to the protection of their own country; but to use every effort in their power to arrest for trial and punishment every offender against the laws,

## PUBLIC MEETINGS IN THE STATES

“providing for the performance of their obligations by the United States.”

Two days after the surrender of Van Shultz, Sir George Arthur issued a proclamation renewing the reward of £1,000 for the apprehension of Mackenzie. The pretext for this procedure was the pretence that he had been seen, on November 17th, in the neighbourhood of Toronto. On that very day he was in Philadelphia, where he addressed a meeting of five thousand persons. About a month after, he was warned that an attempt would be made to kidnap him, and take him over to Canada.

As Kossuth did afterwards, in the case of Hungary, Mackenzie held a series of public meetings in some of the principal cities of the States in favour of Canadian independence. The first was held at Vauxhall Garden, New York, on November 15th, the others in Philadelphia, Washington and Baltimore, where large audiences attended. President Van Buren was much annoyed at a meeting having been held at the capital. In Lower Canada, Dr. Nelson had, a few days before the New York meeting, made a new appeal to arms, and had issued a declaration of independence on behalf of a provisional government for that province, followed by a proclamation offering security and protection to all who should lay down their arms and cease to oppose the new authority that claimed to be in existence before the old one had expired. Notice was taken of this circumstance by the New

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

York meeting, which tendered its sympathy to Lower Canada.

Mackenzie was not, at this time, in the secrets of the Lower Canadian patriots any more than in those of the pretended government of Upper Canada which had been set up at Cleveland. Dr. Robert Nelson had been in New York a short time before, and, calling on Mackenzie, proposed to tell him the plans of the Lower Canadian patriots, whereupon Mackenzie stopped him, by saying, "Tell me nothing, more or less, as I am to take no part; I have no means to aid, and I want to know nothing, either as to what has been done or may be intended." On the previous June 12th, he had been indicted, at Albany, for a breach of the neutrality laws of the United States, for the part he had taken in the Navy Island expedition, and while the trial was hanging over him, he had an additional reason for being anxious to keep clear of all similar movements.

While Van Shultz had failed at Prescott, General Bierce was to revive the project of Handy at Windsor. For this purpose men were collected at various points on the frontier to the number of nearly four hundred. They marched to the junction, four miles from Detroit, equipped themselves, and made ready to cross into Canada, where they seem to have expected that they were about to commence a winter campaign. A knowledge of this movement was spread abroad; and couriers were sent through the



## AN ATTACK ON WINDSOR

western district to bring men for the defence of Windsor, Sandwich, and Fort Malden. On the night of the fifth day, when the numbers had been much reduced by desertions, General Bierce was ready to cross the river, the steamer was prepared, and a crossing was made to Windsor. On landing he briefly addressed the men, and issued a proclamation to "the citizens of Canada." On nearing a house used as a barracks for the militia, shots were exchanged between the occupants and the invaders, and a Captain Lewis, from the London district, who was with the latter, was killed. The invaders set the militia barracks on fire, and two militiamen are said to have been burnt to death. The sentinel was shot. The steamer *Thames*, embedded in the ice, shared the fate of the barracks. After this, the party proceeded towards the centre of the town, where the principal division was met by a militia force under Colonel Prince and Captain Spark, and driven into the woods. Bierce resolved to retreat, and leave the larger body of the men who had taken refuge in the woods. The retreating party were reduced to the necessity of picking up canoes, or whatever they could find, in which to escape. In this raid, twenty-five of the invaders lost their lives, and forty-six others were taken prisoners. Of the twenty-five, four were taken prisoners and shot in cold blood, without the form of a trial, by order of Colonel Prince. This act was condemned by Lord Brougham and others in terms

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of great severity ; and there can be no doubt that, whatever excuses may be made for it, Colonel Prince committed a terrible mistake.

So long as Mackenzie remained at New York, he was between four and five hundred miles from the nearest centres of frontier operations. During the last three-quarters of the year 1838, he had been occupied in the publication of a newspaper ; and was now about to yield to the solicitations of his friends to remove to Rochester, where it was thought its influence would be more directly felt. In the early part of January, 1839, he visited that city, and resolved to remove there with his family and printing office. The change was made early in February. The last number of the *Gazette* issued in New York bore date January 26th, and the next number made its appearance in Rochester on February 23rd.

On March 12th following, Mackenzie issued a confidential circular calling a special convention, to be held at Rochester, "to be composed of Canadians, or persons connected with Canada, who are favourable to the attainment of its political independence, and the entire separation of its government from the political power of Great Britain." An Association of Canadian Refugees was formed, of which John Montgomery was appointed president, Mackenzie, secretary, and Samuel Moulson of Rochester, treasurer. A confidential circular, dated "Office of the Canadian Associa-

## ASSOCIATION OF REFUGEES

tion, Rochester, March 22nd, 1839," was issued, in which questions were proposed and suggestions made. While the independence of Canada was the ultimate object aimed at, another object was to prevent all isolated or premature attempts, such as had recently failed at Ogdensburg and Windsor, from being made. The notion of attempting to secure the independence of Canada, by means of invading parties from the States, was discarded. But the idea of Americans succouring the Canadians, in case they should themselves strike for independence, was unquestionably included in the plan. This was shown by one of the questions asked in the circular.

These associations appear to have differed from those of the Hunters' Lodges in very essential particulars. The Rochester Association was composed of Canadian refugees; the Cleveland Association was composed almost entirely of Americans. The former laid it down as a rule that the independence of the Canadas must first be asserted by the resident Canadians, and then, but not till then, extraneous assistance might be afforded them. Mackenzie claimed for the Rochester Association that it prevented small marauding expeditions from being organized. At the same time, its members were preparing to second the efforts of the Canadians, should the standard of revolt be again raised within the provinces. Certain it is, that no expeditions were fitted out against Canada after this

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

time, although there were extensive organizations in the border states, of which the object was to assist in bringing about the independence of Canada. There was formed an auxiliary Association of Canadian Refugees in Cincinnati, in which there were no Americans. Dr. Duncombe was connected with it. But the plan of uniting the Canadian refugees, instead of allowing Americans to form schemes for the "liberation" of Canada, seems to have originated with Mackenzie in January, 1839.

The circular of the Rochester Association does not appear to have elicited many replies, though there were refugees scattered all over the union, from Maine to Florida, and the project came to nothing.

## CHAPTER XV

### THE TRIALS OF AN EXILE

WE shall now see what Mackenzie was to suffer and endure for his part in the civil war in Upper Canada. When he was indicted at Albany, in June, 1838, Attorney Badgley, by his instructions, informed the court that he would be ready for trial next day. Mackenzie kept his word, and attended before the court; but District Attorney Benton was not ready. The court required him to be present again in October. In September, Mr. Benton assured him the trial would come on. Mackenzie again attended at Albany; but the district attorney had found reasons, in a statute of Congress, for trying the case at Canandaigua, Ontario county. About a month before the June sessions of the Circuit Court, Mr. Benton informed Mackenzie that the case might come on on the very first day of the sittings. The defendant attended at Canandaigua; and, his patience being exhausted, he, on the second day after the court opened, addressed a memorial to the judges expressing a desire to be allowed to be put upon trial on the charge preferred against him; he had never shrunk from a trial, and had no wish that it should be waived. This memorial was presented on June

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

19th, 1839, and the trial commenced before the United States Circuit Court on the next morning. It lasted two days. The recognizances, into which Mackenzie had entered, having expired some time before, and not having been renewed, his appearance before the court was a voluntary act. The judges were Smith Thompson, of the United States Supreme Court, and Alfred Conklin, circuit judge of the northern division of New York. The prosecution was conducted by N. S. Benton, United States district attorney. Mackenzie, as had been his custom in cases of libel, undertook his own defence. No jurors were challenged. The jury appears, however, to have been irregularly struck. The indictment, under a law of 1794, and another of 1818, never before put into execution, charged the defendant with setting on foot a military enterprise, at Buffalo, to be carried on against Upper Canada, a part of the Queen's dominions, at a time when the United States were at peace with Her Majesty; with having provided the means for the prosecution of the expedition; and with having done all this within the dominion and territory, and against the peace, of the United States.

After the evidence for the prosecution was concluded, Mr. Mackenzie addressed the jury for six hours. "His speech," says a Rochester paper, "was really a powerful effort. He enchained the audience, and at its conclusion, if a vote had

## SPEECH IN HIS DEFENCE

been taken for his conviction or liberation, he would have had a strong vote in his favour." "I think it hard," he said, "to be singled out and dragged here at this time; but as I require an asylum in your country, I am bound, and I do sincerely wish, to pay the utmost respect to your laws. Indeed it is admiration of your free institutions which, strange as it may seem, has brought me here to-day." He pointed out the anomaly of allowing their own citizens to escape, while he and one other foreigner were pounced upon. "I have been told," he remarked to the jury, "to say pleasant things to you, to use honeyed words, and avoid any topic that might touch the national pride or wound the national vanity; but as I did not stoop to flatter power in the few on the other side of the Great Lakes, it is not likely that I shall cringe to it here, as apparently vested in the many." He told them very plainly, what had been their traditional policy in regard to Canada.

Judge Thompson, in his charge to the jury, was careful to tell American citizens exactly how far they could go without overstepping the limits of the law; they could give their sympathy a practical shape by personally carrying money and supplies to the oppressed. He added that, in the case of Canada, he had no doubt, the "oppressions detailed by the defendant really existed, or do exist, and that all the zeal he has dis-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

played has been the zeal of a patriot." But the greater part of the judge's charge bore strongly against the defendant. He told the jury they must accept the law from him.

At two o'clock the jury retired; at half past four they sent for a copy of the statutes of Congress, and at five they came into court with a verdict of "guilty." The defendant gave eighteen reasons why the sentence to be passed upon him should be merely nominal. The court had power to imprison for three years, and levy a fine of three thousand dollars; but Judge Thompson took into consideration that this was the first trial under a law passed in 1794; that the defendant had evidently been ignorant of its provisions; that the case involved no moral turpitude; and that the defendant had acted with a zeal which actuates men who, however mistaken, think they are right. The sentence was that he should be confined in the county gaol of Monroe for eighteen months, and pay a fine of ten dollars.

For the first three months of his confinement, Mackenzie was shut up in a single room, with an iron door, which he was never once allowed to pass. Except his own family, scarcely any friend was permitted to see him; but he was kept on constant exhibition by the gaoler, crowds of strangers being allowed to feast their eyes upon a live rebel leader. Having a perhaps somewhat morbid fear that he might be poisoned if he



## NARROW ESCAPE FOR HIS LIFE

accepted food at the hands of the gaoler, his meals were regularly brought from his own house. Twice, when he was sick, his physicians were refused admittance. Built on low marshy ground, the gaol was surrounded with stagnant water during the greater part of the year; and as Mackenzie was particularly susceptible to miasmatic influence, he suffered severely from the debilitating effects of marsh fever, and was a good deal dispirited. Medical certificates, that the close confinement had a very injurious effect on his health, having been laid before the board of supervisors, they, without having any power in the matter, suggested that he should be permitted a little more exercise within the walls of the building. "The charges upon which Mr. Mackenzie was convicted," they said, "are not looked upon by the community as very venial, nor in any way compromising his moral character, and therefore we would frown down indignantly upon any extraordinary enforcement of official authority."

On October 12th, 1839, the imprisoned fugitive had a narrow escape for his life. A little before noon, as he was standing at one of the windows looking out to see whether a friend, Mr. Kennedy, was coming, a slug shot, coming through one of the panes, whizzed past him and penetrated the plaster on the opposite side of the room. He opened the window and asked the gaoler's boy, who was outside, if he saw any one in the direction

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

whence the shot must have come. The boy said he had not. "Who fired the shot," said Mackenzie, in a private letter, "I shall probably never know;" but, with the expectation of longevity, which he always entertained, he added that the escape afforded "another chance for old age, with the pains and penalties attached to it." The gaoler, on inquiry, learned that a tall, stout man, with a gun in his hand and a dog by his side—having the appearance of a sportsman—had been seen beyond the mill-race, whence the shot must have come, about the time of the occurrence. A buckshot was found to have penetrated one of the adjoining windows, and several others struck the wall. In Buffalo, in 1838, he had been warned that assassins were on his track, and a young man about his size, a brother of General Scott's secretary, had been assassinated under circumstances which gave rise to the suspicion that he had been mistaken for Mackenzie.

By this time the effects of the close confinement in the room of a gaol, surrounded by miasma, had broken the luckless prisoner's health. He could not take the food which his children regularly carried to him, and medicine seemed to give no relief. His means were exhausted, and the approach of a gloomy winter inclined him to despair. He had depending on him a mother, ninety years of age, a wife in delicate health, and six helpless children. The people, however, had become greatly inter-

## FAREWELL TO HIS MOTHER

ested in the fate of the political prisoner, and by the middle of November, memorials for his release had been signed by between fifty and sixty thousand persons. The exertions made had procured him a larger space to walk in; medicine had, at last, produced a salutary effect, and he was better in health. He was allowed to walk in the hall into which his room opened, and to take exercise six hours in the day in the attic which extended over the entire building.

In December his mother died, and he, by being brought as a witness in a case tried in his own house by permission of the state attorney, was enabled to spend six hours with her, and to receive her last farewell, but he was not permitted to attend the funeral.

Mr. Secretary Forsyth's instructions to Marshal Garrow had not the desired effect of producing any considerable mitigation of the severity to which the prisoner had been subjected. On January 14th, 1840, Mackenzie memorialized Mr. Seward, governor of the state of New York, on the subject. But the laws of the state gave that functionary no power to act in a matter which concerned the United States alone. "Nevertheless," said Governor Seward, in his reply of the twenty-seventh of the same month, "I acknowledge most freely that your offence being of a political character, I think it is to be regarded in a very different light from crimes involving moral turpitude, and that a distinction

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

ought to be made, as far as possible, between the treatment of persons convicted of political offences and those of the other class ;” and he wrote to the sheriff of Monroe county expressing this opinion, and the desire that the prisoner’s position might be made as comfortable as possible. The rigour of his punishment was now abated, and Mackenzie was allowed to take exercise as prescribed in the sheriff’s orders. The prisoner’s birthday was duly celebrated by a number of friends who dined with him in gaol, on March 12th.

The memorials to the President for the prisoner’s release had now hundreds of thousands of signatures attached to them. Congress had also been petitioned on the subject. A friend assured him that the President had, at Saratoga, declared to different persons that he should not comply with the petitions for a pardon unless desired by the British government to release the prisoner. Did that government present such a request? Or did the petitions become too numerous for President Van Buren to resist? The latter seems to be the true explanation ; for Mackenzie was afterwards informed, at Washington, that the President, adverse to a release to the last, felt himself unable to resist the demand of three hundred thousand petitioners. About April 12th, the secretary of state told a friend that Mackenzie would soon be pardoned, but that it was necessary to keep the matter secret for a few days ; and, on Sunday evening

## VISIT TO WASHINGTON

May 10th, 1840, he was permitted to bid adieu to the horrors of what he called the American Bastile.

Though Mackenzie had exerted himself with all the energy his enfeebled strength would permit, and though, while imprisoned, he had continued to conduct his newspaper, and had compiled the *Caroline Almanac*, which contained matter enough, compressed in small type, to have made a volume of respectable dimensions—his business failed to thrive. Till the death of his mother, the family never suffered want; but after that event, the gaunt spectre sometimes threatened to enter the door. But in this respect there was still worse in store for them.

Shortly after his release from prison, Mackenzie revisited Washington and Philadelphia. At Washington, he had private interviews with a number of senators and leading men from all parts of the union. "I heard much and saw much," he wrote privately from Albany, on July 6th, on his way back, "and am sure that we of the North have nothing to hope from the party in power. Van Buren is with the South, the English importer and the capitalist, who rule this nation for their own advantage. There is much and well-founded discontent among northern members—even of those who go with the party in power—and some of them were so plain as to wish trouble on the frontier—though I place no names here—while

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

others hinted that the North might push matters to the length of a disunion from the slave-driving South." He still hoped for the independence of Canada, to which he was not permitted to return, and where rewards for his apprehension, schemes for his extradition, and plans to kidnap him were still kept alive. As the result of his visit to Washington he felt, "on the whole, greatly encouraged." His health was much improved, and he was delighted with a day's visit to the Catskill Mountains.

But the greater the exile's practical knowledge of the working of American institutions, the less was the admiration he felt for them. "Over three years' residence in the United States," he said in the last number of his *Gazette*, on December 23rd, 1840, "and a closer observation of the condition of society here, have lessened my regrets at the results of the opposition raised to England in Canada in 1837-8. I have beheld the American people give their dearest and most valued rights into the keeping of the worst enemies of free institutions; I have seen monopoly and slavery triumph at their popular elections, and have witnessed with pain 'the bitter fruits of that speculative spirit of enterprise to which,' as President Van Buren says in his late excellent message, his 'countrymen are so liable, and upon which the lessons of experience are so unavailing'; and although the leaders of parties here may not say

## PREMIUMS TO KIDNAPPERS

so to their followers, yet the conviction grows daily stronger in my mind that your brethren of this union are rapidly hastening towards a state of society in which President, Senate, and House of Representatives will fulfil the duties of King, Lords, and Commons, and the power of the community pass from the democracy of numbers into the hands of an aristocracy, not of noble ancestry and ancient lineage, but of moneyed monopolists, land-jobbers, and heartless politicians."

Soon after the publication of the *Gazette* was closed, the press and types were sold; and the family subsisted on the proceeds as long as they lasted. The injury inflicted on the publication by the absence of Mackenzie's personal superintendence, while in prison, was never overcome; and the paper ceased to be profitable before it ceased to exist.

The Canadian authorities resorted to every possible expedient to get Mackenzie into their power. Rewards for his apprehension were held out as a premium to kidnappers; and his personal and political enemies clubbed their dollars into blood money to make the temptation strong enough for some man-catcher to undertake the detestable speculation. In the winter of 1838, a Canadian judge wrote to an American judge suggesting the "exchange" of Mackenzie for a number of Prescott and Windsor prisoners. The offer embraced a hundred for one; and while the men to be given

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

up were guilty of invading Canada, Mackenzie, for whom it was proposed to exchange them, had had no connection whatever with the expeditions. Coming from an old political enemy, the offer had all the appearance of a revengeful thirst for the blood of a fallen foe.

There can be no question that the suggestion made by the judge had the authority of the colonial executive; because a similar proposition was afterwards put forth in the name of the executive council. In a report to Sir George Arthur, dated February 4th, 1839, the executive council said: "Were it positively understood that such men as Johnson, Birge, Bierce, and Mackenzie would be seized and delivered up, as having violated the refuge afforded them, there would be no objection to the release of hundreds of obscure criminals; because we might be assured that, if certain punishment awaited their leaders, notwithstanding their escape across the border [at least half of them were Americans and never lived in Canada], the whole conspiracy would fall to the ground for want of leaders." So far as it relates to Mackenzie, this is precisely the same as if Louis Napoleon were to expect England to give up French political refugees who had escaped to that country. With American citizens who had invaded Canada, in time of peace, the case was different; the duty of the federal government was not to hand over these leaders, but to enforce



## PREMIUMS TO KIDNAPPERS

against them its own laws for the maintenance of neutrality. If this had been done, the prosecution of Mackenzie would have ceased to wear a partial aspect.

Sir George Arthur approved of the project for exchanging prisoners for refugees; and the authorities of the state of New York were sounded on the subject. W. H. Griffin, post-office surveyor, went upon this mission. Not finding Mr. Seward at Albany, he conversed with Mr. J. A. Spensor on the subject. Mr. Spensor told him that the principal obstacle to the proposed arrangement was the public indignation its execution would excite; and he suggested that, under the circumstances, it would be better to kidnap the refugees, adding an assurance that, if this were done, the state authorities—Mr. Seward and the rest—would not be disposed to regard the act as a breach of amity.<sup>1</sup>

Why should such a hint not be improved? Had Canada no bloodhounds ready to snatch Sir George Arthur's four thousand dollars by kidnapping Mackenzie? It seemed not: for a private subscription of two thousand dollars more, set on foot by one of the exile's old political opponents, had to be added. And now surely here is temptation enough to turn mercenary men into kidnappers! On November 14th, 1840, Mackenzie received from several re-

<sup>1</sup> Letter from Mr. Griffin to the Hon. R. N. Tucker, dated Gananoque, U. C., May 14th, 1839.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

spectable citizens of Rochester warning that an attempt would be made in a day or two to seize him, drag him on board the steamer *Gore*, and carry him off to Canada.<sup>1</sup> Among them was Mr. Talman, who called three times at Mackenzie's house that day without finding him. The last time he left word that Mackenzie should by no means leave his house after dark that night. But this warning was not heeded; he went to see Mr. Talman that night. The substance of the information received from various sources was the same. A guard was placed upon his house.

The matter, being brought before the attention of the authorities, was made a subject of judicial investigation before Mr. Wheeler, on November 20th, 1840. Several witnesses were examined, the principal of whom, W. A. Wells, stated the result of a conversation he had had with James Cameron, son-in-law of the late Mr. Drean of Toronto, and brother-in-law of Mayor Powell of that place, and

<sup>1</sup> Some warned him verbally, and one, Mr. Wells, one of the publishers of the Rochester *Daily Whig*, in writing. He said: "William L. Mackenzie—Sir:—I take the liberty of informing you that a plan is in contemplation to carry you to Toronto. It is this: The steamboat *Gore* (Captain Thomas Dick) will be in this port in a day or two. She is to be at the wharf at the mouth of the river, with steam up, etc., to surprise and muffle your face, and put you in a carriage which will be in waiting, and take you to the boat. A British officer is in this place, and has disclosed the circumstances to me. Although we have had some personal difference, I cannot consent to have you kidnapped. Be on your guard.

"Nov. 14, 1840.

W. A. Wells."

## A KIDNAPPING CONSPIRACY

sometime clerk in the Bank of British America at Rochester House. Cameron commenced the conversation by introducing the subject of the Canadian troubles, and asked Wells whether he had not had some difficulty with Mackenzie that had created an unfriendly feeling between them. Receiving a reply in the affirmative, Cameron, thinking he might safely trust a person who was on such terms with the object of the kidnappers' desire, then unfolded to him the scheme. Mackenzie was to be decoyed to the lower part of the city by an invitation from one whom he regarded as a friend ; he was then to be seized by two powerful men, a handkerchief tied round his mouth, and dragged into a carriage, with a pistol pointed at his face under a threat that his brains would be blown out if he made a noise. In this state he was to be taken on board the steamer *Gore*, at Frankfort—the mouth of the Genesee River—which was to be ready with steam up. In her next trip she was to bring over another person, a Scottish military officer, who was to assist in the kidnapping, All this was to be done with the consent of the persons in charge of the steamer. Cameron mentioned that, in addition to the reward offered by the Canadian government for the apprehension of Mackenzie, he expected to get a colonial appointment. Cameron's counsel did not cross-examine the witnesses, but took a technical exception to the form of warrant. The evidence was deemed sufficient to justify the magis-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

strate in binding Cameron over to answer the charge, but the case was quashed when it came before the grand jury.

Cameron afterwards pretended that he had hoaxed Wells in the conversation at the Rochester House; but there is little reason to accept so shallow a pretence. According to his account he was somewhat "oblivious" of what had occurred at the interview with Wells; and men in their cups are very much in the habit of blurting out truth which at other times they would conceal. The idea of kidnapping Mackenzie was not a new one. A long train of preliminaries pointed to precisely such an enterprise as that in which Cameron told Wells he was engaged. The steamer did leave the upper wharf that night at an unusual hour, and without ringing her bell. At the mouth of the river, seven miles below the head of the Genesee navigation, where he was to have been put on board, she waited till near midnight. These are circumstances of suspicion too strong to be neutralized by the action of the grand jury in the case.

A few months after the last number of the *Gazette* was issued, and a memorial to the judges of the Court of Common Pleas to admit him to practise at the bar had been refused, namely, about March, 1841, the public were notified that William Lyon Mackenzie's law office was to be found in an upper room in St. Paul Street. It was a last effort of despair, and came to nothing.

## THE DARK DAYS OF ADVERSITY

The clouds of adversity gathered thick and gloomily over the exile's head. Bereft of his property by an insurrection in which he had borne a leading part, he had known what it was to commence the world anew among strangers. A long imprisonment had ruined the precarious profession of a journalist who appealed to the public sympathies only upon a single subject. He found himself without occupation, and with only very limited and uncertain means of subsistence. At this period it would frequently happen that, for twenty-four hours at a time, the family had not a morsel of food, and neither light nor fire. Yet no father could be more assiduous in his endeavours to provide for his family. After a day and night's enforced fasting, he would go shivering forth in the morning's cold, hoping to collect a small sum due to him, or, failing in that, to borrow from a friend the means to purchase bread for his famishing children. He tried another newspaper, the *Volunteer*, of which the first copy appeared on April 17th, 1841, and the last on May 10th, 1842. During that period only nineteen numbers were issued. They were printed when the means to print them could be obtained. This attempt to revive a general interest in the Canadian question failed, and without that interest a paper devoted to it could not live. His pecuniary circumstances experienced no improvement; and to make things worse, his house took fire in March, and a portion

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of his furniture was burnt. The family suffered much from sickness, the result of pinching want. And now, despairing of any measure of success in Rochester, where he had spent three and a half weary years, he fixed his hopes once more on New York. On June 10th, 1842, he left with his family for the latter city.

After his arrival at New York, the unfortunate refugee spent most of his time in collecting some of his old debts and devising ways and means to live, till an influential political friend obtained for him the situation of actuary of the New York Mechanics' Institute. He refused situations in two or three newspaper offices, because he would not occupy a subordinate position on the press ; and this disposition to be everything or nothing was no bad illustration of his character. In his new office, Professor Gale, of Columbia College, had been his predecessor. He was pleased with his occupation. "The prospect brightens," he says, "and I may enjoy a little ease in my old days," a hope which was never realized. His emoluments were chiefly derived from fees ; and these were paid with so little punctuality or honesty that his new employment proved but a slight mitigation of his distress. At the close of the year, however, he considered himself "very comfortably settled." "I was much behind, when I got into the office," he wrote privately, December 24th, "but during the year for which I am engaged, I

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

have no doubt that I shall place myself and family once more in comfortable circumstances, the more gratifying as we have suffered much poverty and long continued privation." Such was his pride in his children, his ideas of duty, and his appreciation of the advantages of education, that he continued to keep them at good schools.

While in this situation, Mackenzie commenced a work entitled *The Sons of the Emerald Isle, or Lives of One Thousand Remarkable Irishmen*. He made application for a copyright, and entered into a written agreement with Burgess, Stringer & Co., of New York, to become the publishers. In July, 1843, he speaks of having nearly five hundred of the biographical sketches ready; but only two numbers—there were to have been eight or ten in all, averaging fifty pages each—were published. The subjects selected were Irish patriots or their descendants; and the concise sketches contain a multitude of facts and much matter of novel character. He had access to sixteen thousand old American newspapers extending over a period of forty years, from which he was enabled to study the character of the men and the measures of that time. He wrote, after the first two numbers were out, that the work would be immensely profitable; but want of means seems to have prevented his continuing it.

At the end of the year, he gave up his office in the Mechanics' Institute, retiring with a un-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

animous approval of his conduct. Owing to the remissness of the members in paying, it turned out a poor place ; and in January, 1844, he declares that he has had as hard times in New York as he ever had in Rochester. Having been introduced to the son of President Tyler, Mackenzie was offered an inspectorship of customs, at New York, at eleven hundred dollars a year ; but when the nomination was sent to Washington, it was rejected by the secretary of the treasury because the nominee was a British outlaw and had attacked the late President. He had issued three numbers of a new paper called the New York *Examiner*, but he gave it up on his nomination to this office. Tyler wrote him that he might have any other office in his gift of equivalent value. When the promised situation came it was a temporary clerkship in the archives office of the New York Custom House, with a salary of only seven hundred dollars a year.

While engaged in the Custom House, it became Mackenzie's duty to read a correspondence between Jesse Hoyt and Benjamin Franklin Butler, of a very extraordinary character. Hoyt had been collector of customs at New York, and in that capacity had embezzled two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Mackenzie, thinking that, in his haste to secure the money, Hoyt had forgotten that he had left certain private letters in the public archives, induced Henry Ogden to call upon him



## THE BUTLER-HOYT BIOGRAPHIES

and ask him to take them away. Hoyt replied that he had already taken all he wanted. By permission of the collector, Mackenzie copied the letters; and he had official authority to do what he pleased with them. He sent copies of several of these letters to President Polk; and the result of their perusal was to prevent the appointment of Coddington to the collectorship of New York. Mackenzie then, on June 1st, resigned his office; and, in 1845, published *The Lives and Opinions of Benjamin Franklin Butler, United States District Attorney for the Southern District of New York, and Jesse Hoyt, Counsellor at Law, formerly Collector of Customs for the Port of New York*; a compact octavo volume of one hundred and fifty-two pages. In a very short time fifty thousand copies were sold; whereupon an injunction was obtained from the Court of Chancery to restrain the further publication of the work. The copies went up to double the previous price. The injunction was granted at the instance of Hoyt, on a complaint that three of his letters were comprised in the publication. While the publishers made a very large profit on the book, the author, to avoid all ground for the imputation of improper motives in the publication, refused to take any remuneration for his labour, though he lived on borrowed money for several months while he was preparing the work for the press. He took out a copyright, and assigned it without consideration

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

to the publishers. Chancellor Walworth, on appeal, dissolved the injunction granted by the vice-chancellor, after the lapse of two and a half years, deciding that the author had a right of property in the book, and that a court of equity had no power to restrain its publication. Unsuccessful attempts were made, at different times before grand juries, to indict the author for the use he made of these letters, but without avail.

In 1846, Mackenzie published *The Life and Times of Martin Van Buren*, a closely printed octavo volume of three hundred and eight pages. It was enriched by contributions from the bundle of letters left by Hoyt in the New York Custom House, though a large portion of the materials was drawn from other sources. Of this work he sold the copyright to William Taylor of New York for a thousand dollars. The sale of the copyright is dated November 25th, 1845, and the book was to be completed by about January 15th following. This work dealt Van Buren his political death blow. He never rose again.

In the course of this year, Mackenzie became connected with the New York *Tribune*, of whose editor, Horace Greeley, he continued to the day of his death to entertain the highest opinion, as did Greeley of him. On May 1st he arrived in Albany for the purpose of attending the convention to revise the state constitution. He wrote daily to the *Tribune* a long letter on the proceedings of

## HIS FRIENDSHIP WITH GREELEY

the convention. Commencing in the early part of June, the convention continued its sittings till October 9th. Many suggestions made by Mackenzie were adopted and embodied in the amended constitution.

In some respects times with him had improved. He had plenty of offers of literary employment. He had found a real friend in Greeley; and he received from George Bruce, the great type founder of New York, a very tempting offer. The large printing establishment of Percy & Reid, New York, had been sold at sheriff's sale; and Bruce had become the purchaser at ten thousand dollars. He offered it to Mackenzie on a credit of ten years, with means to carry on the business. The offer was gratefully received, but was rejected, contrary to the advice of his family and friends, principally because the business would have required a partner, and he disliked partnerships. Mackenzie remained in Albany one year, in the latter part of which he performed the duties of correspondent in the legislative assembly for the *Tribune*.

Upon returning to New York, Mackenzie continued his connection with the *Tribune* till Mr. McElrath, one of the partners in the establishment, expressed some dissatisfaction with his writings, and he then left with the intention of never returning. This was early in April, 1848. He spent some time in the composition of a work on British America, which he never completed. He always

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

continued on good terms with the editor, Horace Greeley; and in October, 1848, at Mr. Greeley's earnest request, he agreed to attend the next session of Congress as correspondent of the *Tribune*. But he did not leave New York till about the New Year.

By the end of the year 1843, an amnesty—not general but very comprehensive—had enabled numerous political exiles to return to Canada. But while Papineau, Rolph, Duncombe, and O'Callaghan were pardoned, Mackenzie was still proscribed. Hume wrote him on one occasion stating that the exclusion arose from the belief, entertained by the English ministry, that the origin of the rebellion was due to him. Three years after, Isaac Buchanan wrote to Sir Robert Peel and Lord Palmerston begging that they would have Mackenzie included in the amnesty.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Mr. J. C. Dent, in his *Story of the Upper Canadian Rebellion*, (Vol. i, p. 302, note), says, speaking of the amnesty: "Considerable misapprehension appears to exist on this subject owing in great measure, doubtless, to inaccurate statements in Mr. Lindsey's *Life and Times of William Lyon Mackenzie*. It is there alleged that, by the end of the year 1843, an amnesty—not general, but very comprehensive—had enabled numerous political exiles to return to Canada (Vol. ii, p. 290). This is altogether erroneous. No amnesty, comprehensive or otherwise, was granted in 1843, nor at any time prior to 1849. Those exiles who returned to Canada before the last mentioned date did so, either by virtue of special pardons granted under the great seal, or in consequence of official discontinuance of proceedings against them."

Mr. Dent is entirely mistaken in this statement. The Act, 1 Vict. c. 10, passed March 6th, 1838, and embraced in the statutes of

## HUME'S LETTER TO MACKENZIE

The reply was that, before this would be done, the Canadian ministry must recommend the measure. But the latter were adverse to such a course, and to them alone his continued exclusion from Canada was owing. The remembrance of this circumstance probably intensified his opposition to the men who composed this ministry after his return to Canada. In 1848, the Canadian assembly unanimously addressed the Queen in favour of granting a general amnesty of all political offences.

A letter from Hume to Mackenzie written at this time, on the subject of the amnesty, is interesting for other reasons as well. It was dated at London, January 20th, 1848, and was sent to Mackenzie at New York where he was then living. Hume, it will be remembered, was the writer of the so-called "baneful domination" letter, which was published by Mackenzie in the *Advocate* many years before, and which, being charged as disloyal, was sought to be used as such against Mackenzie in every way possible. The following letter, besides being a tribute to Mackenzie himself, quotes one of several statements by Lord Sydenham in defence of the rebellion, and shows that Hume's opinions were entirely opposed to those imputed to him:—

"Although I have always deprecated and con-

Upper Canada, 1837-8, was an Act to enable the government of this province to extend a conditional pardon, in certain cases, to persons who had been concerned in the insurrection, and such pardons were extended. Mr. Lindsey's statement is strictly correct.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

demned the attempt at revolution, made in Canada by you and others, by which you were outlawed, and have been for these ten years in the United States, yet I cannot forget the eighteen months you spent in London, as the delegate from the House of Assembly and people in Upper Canada, to endeavour to put a stop to the misrule of the clique administration of that province, and to allay the discontent so generally existing in the province at that time.

“Of many public men, deputed to promote the welfare of their constituents, who have come to my acquaintance during the last forty years of my public life, I have known no one who showed a greater desire to see the abuses of the government of the Canadas removed quietly and in a constitutional way than you did; and I therefore gave you every aid in my power to procure for you access to Lord Ripon and other members of the administration of the day; and I attended for hours to hear your statements of the abuses of the colonial government (and of the mode of removing them) by the colonial office supporting the measures of one-third of the popular assembly there.

“With that knowledge, and after the declaration, or rather retarded opinion, of Lord Sydenham (after he became acquainted with the proceedings in Canada), ‘that he was surprised the people had borne so long the oppression of the family clique,

## HUME'S LETTER TO MACKENZIE

and had not rebelled sooner,' I cannot but consider you as the victim of the misrule of that government and of the colonial office in Downing Street, that had continued their support to the family clique that was the bane of Upper Canada, and had caused such discontent throughout the province.

"It was to be expected that you, who had been the first mayor of Toronto, and who had been the leader of the Reformers in the House of Assembly for years; and who had, before a select committee of that assembly, exposed and proved corruption and misrule to that extent that resistance to the order of the clique was the theme of the population of Upper Canada, when recourse was had to arms, would be selected as a leader, and as such you were placed as an outlaw from Canada. As a political offender you took the chance of the struggle, and you have suffered for the part you took; but, as I think, too much and too long.

"I have six times made application to the ministers of the Crown here to grant an amnesty to all the political offenders in Canada, stating that, as the discontent was caused by misrule, oppression and corruption, the whole should be buried in oblivion as speedily as possible, but without success. On the birth of the first Princess by our Queen, I applied to the ministers to grant a general amnesty and was refused. On the birth of the Prince of Wales, I repeated my application with similar want

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

of success. When Mr. Baldwin was minister, I sent to him, and to Mr. Hincks, copies of my correspondence with the ministry for a general amnesty, and I requested them to apply to the colonial office for the same. They said the day was not come, and they never did it.

“In May, 1847, when Lord Palmerston, in interfering in the internal affairs of Portugal, made it one of the principal points in the Protocol, ‘that every man of whatever rank, taken in arms in the field or otherwise, should have an amnesty granted,’ I applied to have the pardon, or rather the amnesty, extended to you and two others from Canada, all that remained in exile; but my application was refused. I should have made it the subject of a specific motion in the House of Commons, if I had not been advised to allow the government to do the act themselves. They have one by one removed the outlawry until you alone remain.

“On the 15th instant I waited on Earl Grey, and solicited from him an amnesty for you, the only remnant of Canada’s victims. He refused to originate any steps for your pardon, as the charges against you were serious, but said that he would receive favourably any resolution or representation from the government of Canada in your favour. I stated that there was a petition to that purport on file, but he had not seen it. I expect the result of the elections, now finished, will be to place Baldwin and his party in power, and, by the first packet,



## A LETTER TO EARL GREY

I shall write them to take measures for your immediate pardon.

"I have always considered you the victim (a very incautious one, if you please,) of a vicious system, and, having witnessed your laborious and honest endeavours, here and in Toronto, to prevent bad government and to reform the bad system by constitutional means, I shall never be deterred from the endeavour to see you in perfect freedom, and the sooner the better for all parties."

On February 3rd, 1849, Mackenzie addressed a communication to Earl Grey, at the colonial office, containing some remarkable confessions, the good faith of which is sufficiently guaranteed by numerous statements in private letters. From this communication I quote the following extracts:

"A course of careful observation, during the last eleven years, has fully satisfied me that, had the violent movements in which I and many others were engaged on both sides of the Niagara proved successful, success would have deeply injured the people of Canada, whom I then believed I was serving at great risks; that it would have deprived millions, perhaps, of our own countrymen in Europe, of a home upon this continent, except upon conditions which, though many hundreds of thousands of immigrants have been constrained to accept them, are of an exceedingly onerous and degrading character. I have long been sensible of the error committed during that period to which

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

the intended amnesty applies. No punishment that power could inflict, or nature sustain, would have equalled the regrets I have felt on account of much that I did, said, wrote, and published ; but the past cannot be recalled. . . . There is not a living man on this continent who more sincerely desires that British government in Canada may long continue, and give a home and a welcome to the old countrymen, than myself. Did I say so, or ask an amnesty, seven or eight years ago, till under the convictions of more recent experience? No ; I studied earnestly the workings of the institutions before me, and the manners of the people, and looked at what had been done, until few men, even natives, had been better schooled. The result is—not a desire to attain power and influence here—but to help, if I can, and all I can, the country of my birth.”

Pressed by Hume and others, the Canadian government, in 1849, originated a measure for a complete amnesty of all offences arising out of the events of 1837-8. Mackenzie had for some time been the last exile. It passed unanimously in both Houses; and in the name of the Queen, Lord Elgin, as governor-general, gave it the royal assent on February 1st, 1849. Immediately on receiving this intelligence, Mackenzie resolved to return to Canada permanently. But after so long an absence, he was in some doubt as to how he would be received there. In this state of uncer-

## MACKENZIE'S RETURN TO CANADA

tainty, he resolved to try the effect of a personal visit. Before coming to Toronto, the scene of his former activities, and his future home, he called at Montreal, then the seat of the Canadian government. What Sir George Arthur had, ten years before, denounced as Mackenzie's scheme of responsible government was now in full operation;<sup>1</sup> but it was administered by persons, only one of whom, the Hon. Francis Hincks, paid the least attention to the man who had been reviled as its author so long as it was deemed odious or unpopular. This member of the government had paid him a casual visit in the Rochester prison; while others from Toronto, on whose friendship he had much greater claims, had passed on without giving any proof that they retained a consciousness of his existence. On his way westward, the returned exile was burnt in effigy at Kingston. At this time, namely, in the spring of 1849, the second LaFontaine - Baldwin administration was in office, the country was in the throes of agitation over the Rebellion Losses Bill, as it was popularly called, and the Queen's representative, having resolved to give his assent to that memorable measure, was about to furnish the strongest evidence possible of the settlement, firmly and finally, of the constitutional question.

The arrival of Mackenzie in Toronto was the signal for a Tory riot. On the evening of March

<sup>1</sup> Despatch to the Marquis of Normanby, August 21st, 1839.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

22nd, a mob collected in the streets, with flambeaux and effigies of Attorney-General Baldwin, Solicitor-General Blake, and Mackenzie. They marched defiantly past the police office, burnt two of the effigies opposite the residences of the Crown officers, and then proceeded up Yonge Street to the house of John McIntosh, M.P., his brother-in-law, where Mackenzie was staying. Here, by the aid of two or three blazing tar-barrels, the mob burnt the remaining effigy and assailed the house, broke the windows, and attempted to force their way through the door. All the while, the chief of police and at least one member of the city council were quietly looking on. It is a well attested fact indicative of Mackenzie's indifference to personal danger, that, on this occasion, when some of the rioters were besieging the front doors of Mr. McIntosh's house and endeavouring to effect an entrance, their would-be victim, accompanied by his daughter Janet, and a young political friend connected with a city newspaper, left the house by a rear door opening into the garden, and, unbarring a front gate which led to the street, walked boldly through the angry mob to the residence of a Mr. White, several blocks distant. It was this daughter (afterwards the wife of Mackenzie's biographer) who, a twelvemonth previous, waited on Lord Elgin, the governor-general, with a petition for her father's pardon, which was granted by the bill of amnesty of that year.

## PUBLIC OPINION IN UPPER CANADA

On the following day, the mayor caused special constables to be sworn in with a view to preventing a repetition of these outrages ; and an alderman, in his place in the council, declared that he " would not hesitate an instant " to assassinate Mackenzie, were he not restrained by fear of the law ! For many nights after, the house was well guarded, and was not again attacked. The office of the *Examiner*, which had condemned these outrages, was also threatened with attack. A mob assembled in King Street for that purpose ; but when it became known that there was a number of armed men in the building, they dispersed without attempting any violence. The *Examiner* was at that time published and conducted by Francis Hincks (Sir Francis Hincks, as he became later on), whose *Reminiscences* are a distinct contribution to the political history of the period. The following extract from the article referred to touches points of historical and political interest, and is a fair reflection of the prevailing opinion in the province at the time. " The revolt of 1837," said the writer, " was in reality only a revolt against local misrule—not against imperial authority. Whatever may have been Mr. Mackenzie's errors as a public man, and no one is more ready to admit them than himself, his attachment to the great principles of the British constitution, no one who is at all acquainted with his history, prior to the year 1837, can with truth deny. No man in Canada, indeed, ever gave such evidence of attachment to

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

the British Crown, or laboured more earnestly to secure the attachment of the colonists to imperial sway than did Mr. Mackenzie until 1836, at which period hope itself languished and withered and died, when the hero of the Pampas, on assuming the government of the Upper Province in 1836, virtually declared that our constitution was only a 'mockery, a delusion and a snare.' Thousands in Canada may not be aware of the fact that, in 1832, Mr. Mackenzie, at the greatest self-sacrifice, left his business in this city, and, with the assistance of a few patriotic friends, crossed the Atlantic, went to London, and for many months laboured with great intelligence, fidelity and zeal in bringing the complaints of the Canadian people under the notice of the home government. And for what purpose did he thus labour? It was in order to avert the evils which he foresaw were generating dissatisfaction, and which were sowing broadcast the seeds of revolt throughout Canada. Who, we ask, among all the hosts of Tories in Canada, ever manifested such disinterested devotion to the interests of his country and the Crown? We defy them to name the man. Nothing but a sincere and ardent attachment to the British constitution could have led Mr. Mackenzie, or any man, to have made such a voyage under such circumstances, and for such a purpose. Malevolence itself could hardly call in question the stern fealty of such a man to the government of his country.

## THE "EXAMINER" ON THE SITUATION

"But there are bounds to loyalty and subject-tion. The people are not made for the government. Government is a compact between the people and their rulers for the general good, in which is involved reciprocal rights, duties and obligations. There is, therefore, treason against a people as well as treason against a government. If the laws of the political compact are violated on the one hand by rulers, we need not be surprised if they should be violated on the other by the people. And there must be a long and accumulated load of misrule and suffering before a people can be led to brave a conflict with power, and hazard the loss of property and life in defence of their rights. The revolt of 1837 was only the crisis of a disease which had been preying upon the vitals of the country from the beginning of the present century. Sir Francis Bond Head, with an effrontery which is almost unparalleled, published to the world that he encouraged the revolt in order to exhibit his prowess in its suppression! A wise ruler would have respected public opinion, and would have calmed the rising storm, but, instead of this, he laughed to scorn the constitutional claims of the people—he defied the instructions of His Majesty—he boasted that he had created a rebellion which had well-nigh lost an important colony to the empire, and he was, therefore, by imperial authority, driven from power, and crowned with imperishable disgrace and in-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

famy. The humiliation and disgrace of this infatuated ruler by the imperial government, the elaborate and faithful report of Lord Durham, and the unequivocal testimony of Lord Sydenham as to the extraordinary misrule and injustice which had distinguished the reign of the Compact in Upper Canada, form together the strongest palliation for the events of 1837, just as a proof of the monster iniquities of James II led to and palliated the revolt under William III—with this remarkable difference, however, that the latter was successful while the former was not.”<sup>1</sup>

On May 1st, 1850, Mackenzie brought his family from New York to Toronto. So long as he remained in New York, his connection with the *Tribune* continued; and his regular salary gave him the means of supporting his family in comfort. To the end Horace Greeley remained his true and admiring friend. Such was Mackenzie's confidence in his own popularity, that he resolved to stand for the first constituency that might become vacant. It happened to be Haldimand; for which county he was elected in April, 1851, his principal opponent being George Brown, the proprietor and editor of the *Globe* newspaper. The contest was an exciting one and created widespread interest on account of the political prominence of the candidates, both of whom belonged to the Reform party, which, at that time, was com-

<sup>1</sup> The *Examiner*, Toronto, March 24th, 1849.



## BROWN AND MACKENZIE

posed of groups or sections not fully in accord on some of the questions of the day.

The result of this election caused a certain amount of estrangement between Brown and Mackenzie, which was never wholly removed on account of Mackenzie's independence in the assembly and otherwise. It was also one of the causes of Brown's rupture with a large section of the Reform party which had supported the second LaFontaine-Baldwin government, and which supported in turn their successors, the Hincks-Morin administration. The estrangement was, of course, purely political, for public reasons and on public grounds, and never seriously interrupted the personal relations of the two men. They agreed to differ, however widely, without carrying their differences into private life; in fact, Mackenzie, whose nature and disposition were thoroughly genial, never allowed his political differences to affect his private friendships. There was no reason, so far as he was concerned, for resentment on Brown's part in regard to the issue of the election, except that Brown may have considered Mackenzie's standing for the constituency, under the circumstances, an unfriendly act. Mackenzie did not so regard it. He claimed that he was quite within his rights in becoming a candidate, and he conceded the same right to any person who might choose to exercise it. Dr. T. T. J. Harrison, of Selkirk, an old resident of Haldimand, and one of the comparatively few who have a personal

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

knowledge of the history of the contest, has made the following reference to it in a published interview: "I notice that, in his *Life of the Hon. George Brown*, Mr. Alexander Mackenzie states that Brown was the choice of the Reform convention as a candidate in that election, but that is not correct. There was no convention. There were eighteen persons, two from each municipality, chosen by Mr. Brown and a Mr. Turner, who was also an aspirant, and these eighteen fixed upon Brown as the candidate. That was one of our objections to Brown's candidature—my father and I, I need scarcely say, were Mackenzie men—and one of the principal arguments which we addressed to the people. We could always say, that the nominators really represented no persons but themselves, and that the great body of the people were not consulted; and this argument was always an effective one. Parties, in the political sense, were pretty well split up in that contest. Mr. Michael Harcourt, the father of the present minister of education,<sup>1</sup> and who afterwards represented the county, did not support Mackenzie at that time. He was a Brown man. But Mr. Mackenzie was too much for them all."<sup>2</sup>

The restrictions of space in this volume prevent even a cursory review of Mackenzie's subsequent parliamentary career; this must be reserved for a

<sup>1</sup> The Hon. Richard Harcourt, ex-M.P.P., for many years a member of the Ontario legislature.

<sup>2</sup> The *Star*, Toronto, December 27th, 1900.

## POLITICAL CHANGES

more extended biography, should such ever be called for in connection with the political history of the last seven years in which he held a seat in the assembly. Upon re-entering parliament, he found the area of legislative action and the system of government greatly changed. The provinces of Upper and Lower Canada, which had separate legislatures at the time of his expatriation, were now united in a legislative partnership; the Family Compact, as a power in the State, was dead and buried, although the spirit of its enmities still survived;<sup>1</sup> the new system, inaugurated by the Union Act of 1840, had had a ten years' trial with a fair measure of success; the principle of responsible

<sup>1</sup> In a debate in the House of Assembly, in March, 1849, on the Rebellion Losses Bill, Sir Allan MacNab, a leading Tory member of the House, whose party was opposed to the bill, called the French-Canadians "aliens and rebels." In reply, Solicitor-General Blake (father of the Hon. Edward Blake and the Hon. S. H. Blake) said: "I have not come here to learn lessons of loyalty from honourable gentlemen opposite. . . . I have no sympathy with the would-be loyalty of honourable gentlemen opposite, which, while it at all times affects peculiar zeal for the prerogative of the Crown, is ever ready to sacrifice the liberty of the subject. This is not British loyalty: it is the spurious loyalty which, at all periods of the world's history, has lashed humanity into rebellion. . . . The expression 'rebel' has been applied by the gallant knight to some gentlemen on this side of the House, but I tell gentlemen on the other side of the House that their public conduct has proved that *they* are the rebels to their constitution and country." MacNab shouted across the House that, so far as he was concerned, this was "nothing else than a lie." Straightway there ensued a scene of angry disturbance on the floor of the House and in the galleries, which threatened to end in a personal encounter between the two belligerents had not the sergeant-at-arms intervened.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

government, which for a time had not been clearly understood by the representatives of the Crown, had been fully recognized by Lord Elgin, then nearing the meridian of his fame; this great constitutional remedy, for the attainment of which Mackenzie had spent the best years of his life, had brought other blessings in its train. Although a brave tribune of the people, Mackenzie had never pretended to be a political seer; but a seer he proved to be. Twenty years later and exactly ten years after he had passed forever from the scene, the opinions which his writings show he had expressed, and the prophecies he had uttered, during the ante-rebellion conflict, with respect to the adoption of executive responsibility, were aptly stated by the historian:—

“By the adoption of this principle,” says Erskine May, “a colonial constitution has become the very image and reflection of parliamentary government in England. The governor, like the sovereign whom he represents, holds himself aloof from and superior to parties, and governs through constitutional advisers, who have acquired an ascendancy in the legislature. He leaves contending parties to fight out their own battles; and, by admitting the stronger party to his counsels, brings the executive authority into harmony with popular sentiments. And as the recognition of this doctrine, in England, has practically transferred the supreme authority of the State from the Crown to parliament

## THE QUESTIONS OF THE DAY

and the people, so, in the colonies, has it wrested from the governor and from the parent state the direction of colonial affairs. And again, as the Crown has gained in ease and popularity what it has lost in power, so has the mother country, in accepting to the full the principles of local self-government, established the closest relations of amity and confidence between herself and her colonies."<sup>1</sup>

It was "a far cry" from 1837, and the after years of hard adversity, to the normal political serenity and settled constitutional conditions of 1851; and, for a time, the returned exile found it difficult to realize the tremendous political transformation. But he speedily got his bearings, and ere long was in the thick of the imminent political controversies of the day—representation by population, secularization of the Clergy Reserves, which meant separation of Church and State, and which was already a subject of agitation, separate schools, etc. These, which were destined to become burning questions, and embarrassing and even destructive to succeeding governments, were at this time not seriously confronting the second LaFontaine-Baldwin ministry, which was then in office. It was not till 1852 that the population of Upper Canada fairly outnumbered that of Lower Canada. It then became evident that the prediction of Lord Durham, that failure to accept his prudent proposal of

<sup>1</sup> *Constitutional History of England* (1871), Vol. iii., pp. 368, 369.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

representation according to population, in the legislature of the united provinces, would be productive of future inter-provincial dissension, was about to be verified. Representation by population became the political slogan of George Brown and the powerful newspaper of which he was the founder, and, for many years, the editor, and introduced, as it could not fail to do, a cleavage, which gradually widened, between the representatives of the Reform party in the two provinces, and helped to sow the seeds of decline in its reigning administration.

The story of that particular period need not be dwelt upon here. It is not within the scope of this volume, and has been admirably told by Mr. John Lewis, in his biography of George Brown in the "Makers of Canada" series. The ultimate fate of the ministry, however, in which the leaven of disintegration was already at work, was determined by Mackenzie. He introduced, and supported in a speech of considerable argumentative force, a motion for the abolition of the Court of Chancery. The motion was lost, but the division list showed a majority of the Upper Canadian representatives in its favour, including the members of the legal profession, who usually voted with the government. Attorney-General Baldwin, the Upper Canadian leader, was greatly mortified at this evidence of apparent want of confidence on the part of representatives of his own province, and he shortly afterwards resigned from the govern-

## ADVOCATES REPEAL OF THE UNION

ment,<sup>1</sup> very much to the regret of its supporters. In the following October, LaFontaine retired from public life altogether; and so it happened, that the member for Haldimand became the unwitting instrument in breaking up, eventually, one of the strongest and most capable administrations of the ante-federal era of government.

The political changes, which followed the retirement of the second LaFontaine-Baldwin government, transferred the French-Canadian majority, which had been the mainstay of that government, to the Conservative party in 1854, under the leadership mainly of John A. Macdonald. The alliance thus formed lasted without interruption during the remaining years of Mackenzie's parliamentary career, and in fact for many years afterwards. The *Globe*, inspired by George Brown, fulminated against "French-Canadian domination," and the government of Upper Canada by a Lower Canada majority. Brown's remedy was representation by population; Mackenzie's remedy was a repeal of the legislative union of the two provinces, and the establishment of a system of government on a federal basis, or, indeed, on any basis which would give Upper Canada a complete control of her own affairs. "Mackenzie's annual motion for a repeal of the union" became a familiar phrase in the parliamentary reports of the *Globe* and other Reform papers of the

<sup>1</sup> His resignation was tendered June 30th, 1851.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

time. Both remedies, which had the same object in view, were repeatedly denied by the Conservative majority, but were ultimately effectuated and embodied in the British North America Act, 1867.

Outside of parliament Mackenzie was as much sought after, on political occasions, as he had ever been in former years. There was no Reform demonstration of any pretensions to which he was not invited, and at which, when he attended, he was not a welcome and honoured guest. Writing to him from Port Rowan, in the county of Norfolk, on December 18th, 1855, Mr. S. P. Mabee, a prominent Reformer, said: "I was very sorry that you were not at our last anti-ministerial dinner, which really was a grand triumph, and I think must go far towards prostrating the present unprincipled Coalition. I travelled twenty-five miles over almost impassable roads for the purpose of seeing and hearing you and George Brown. Mr. Brown was there and gave a most excellent exposition of the Coalition. You were very much missed. When your letter of regret was read, I never heard a greater outburst of applause. I had no idea your services were so highly appreciated in this country. I verily believe you are the most popular man in Canada; honesty and virtue as a politician must have its reward either sooner or later."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The writer was the father of the present chairman of the Railway Commission of Canada.



## CRITICIZES REFORM ALLIANCE

Some of these meetings, at a later date than the one above mentioned, were in the interest of the Reform Alliance, an organization designed to unite and consolidate all sections of the Reform party throughout the province. Like the Church at Corinth, the Reform party was not at that time "perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment." One of the objects of the Alliance was to promote union, and the presentation of a solid front to their adversaries. Mackenzie was as usual a candid critic of the movement. He thought "the voice is Jacob's voice, but the hand is the hand of Esau;" in other words, he thought he perceived George Brown's hand directing the machinery of the organization, and that it was an attempt on his part at dictation with respect to political opinion and action which Mackenzie believed should, within reasonable bounds, be perfectly free and untrammelled. He was probably none the less confirmed in this view from the fact that the *Globe* had been all along—in fact almost from his entrance anew on the parliamentary stage—an undisguised censor of many of his votes in the party divisions of the assembly, and of his alleged disposition to be a "political fault finder." It was under these circumstances that Alexander Mackenzie, then a rising politician on the Reform side, writing from Sarnia, January 22nd, 1857, remonstrated with the other Mackenzie in these terms:

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

“As a sincere friend of yours, I trust you will permit me to say a word concerning the course you have thought proper to pursue in reference to the Reform Alliance. I assure you I think your course in the last two numbers [of *Mackenzie's Message*] is anything but what the party have reason to expect at your hands; opposition from Tories is natural, and the more the better for that matter, but opposition from you is a very different matter, and must result in either depriving you of all influence politically, or in killing off a laudable attempt to unite all Reformers under a close, consistent organization. Are you prepared for either of these alternatives? I cannot believe it. I regret exceedingly that you should go aside from arguing the question and attack Mr. Brown's motives, etc. Such a course is neither just nor wise. If Mr. Brown is considered by yourself and the body of Reformers unsafe and unprincipled, attack him openly by all means. If he is not so considered, ally yourselves with him. For my own part, I can say that he has entirely fulfilled all the pledges he made at the two elections here. Like yourself, he has laboured unceasingly for the good of the party and the public interests; and now it seems to me quite possible to make our principles and party the dominant power in the State, if you and other Reformers fall in heartily with us in the recent movement. If this is not done, there will be nothing left for

## RESIGNS HIS SEAT IN ASSEMBLY

us to do but battle against professed friend and open foe alike."

This was certainly a characteristic letter, and we may be sure that it received a characteristic reply. There is no record of what the reply was, but the Alliance having soon after died a natural death, there was probably no further room for correspondence or controversy.

In December of this year (1857) there was a dissolution of parliament, followed by a general election in January, 1858. Mackenzie, who had been returned without difficulty at the previous election, now went back to his constituents, as the event proved, for the last time. There were no party conventions in those days, and no less than six candidates entered the lists. He was re-elected by one hundred and ninety majority over the next highest of the rival candidates—a result which was regarded as a great mark of confidence, and a handsome endorsement of his conduct as the representative of the constituency. The general result, however, was a sore disappointment to him. He had hoped for such a political change in the two provinces, or at least in the Upper Province, as would give the party of Reform a controlling influence in the new parliament; but this was far from being the case. There was a very substantial Conservative majority, which, in his opinion, was not likely to be weakened or diminished within the next four years, at all events. He had a strong

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

conviction that, in such a parliament, there would not be that disposition to trust the people which he believed should prevail in their representative body. He despaired of the future, and resolved to quit the parliamentary arena; and, in the month of August, 1858, he resigned his seat in the legislature. The announcement was received with unfeigned regret by the Reform party and the Reform press in all parts of the country. The *Globe*, in a brief appreciative article, voiced the general sentiment by deploring "the loss to the Reform party in the House" of one whose "vote has always been on the side of good government and the people's rights." "If," it added, "we thought that the veteran Reformer was really about to retire into private life, we should have more to say about him, but we believe he can no more keep out of politics than a cat can keep out of the dairy when the window is open."<sup>1</sup>

The omission of a fuller narrative, either here or in any other work dealing with the events of that time, of Mackenzie's public life and career after his return to Canada, is not for want of material to prove his industry, vigilance and fidelity as a representative of the people, his political independence, and his high ideals of honesty and uprightness in administration, and in the conduct of the public business of the country. Although he never sought a leading position in parliament, the proceedings and

<sup>1</sup> The *Globe*, August 18th, 1858.

## MACKENZIE IN PARLIAMENT

debates in the assembly, which, in those days, were fully reported in the newspaper press, afford ample evidence of the prominent and useful part which he took in the discussion of all questions of public moment, and in the criticism of all measures of proposed legislation. There is scarce an issue of the leading newspapers published while parliament was in session, in which he does not figure as contributing to the debates something substantially helpful and effective. Considering all he had undergone, and the many trials of temper he had had to endure in twelve years of exile, it is surprising how free his speeches were of the gall which chronic opposition engenders. He would frequently draw upon his large fund of humour, in a manner which is still pleasantly remembered by the then *habitués* of the House. If any reference were made to the rebellion, he would always treat the subject jocosely. "There's the attorney-general for Lower Canada,"<sup>1</sup> for instance, he would say; "when the British government placed an estimate on our heads, they valued mine at four thousand dollars, and his at only two thousand!"

Mackenzie's participation in parliamentary discussions, however, was more that of an impartial and independent bystander than as the representative of any political party; he in fact never allied himself closely with either of the two parties, and so left himself free to criticize the doings of both.

<sup>1</sup> The Hon. George E. Cartier.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

In his opposition to the Municipal Loan Fund Bill he stood alone, although, not long after the passage of that measure, a large majority of the people of Canada would have voted the same way. His exercise of this freedom became all the more widely known to the public for the reason that he was one of the comparatively few members of the House who was "easy to report." He was a fluent and forcible speaker, and, what is not always found in the possessor of these qualities, a good debater as well. His habits as a journalist gave him a ready command of simple and appropriate language, and it was well understood among the busy men in the gallery that their reports of his speeches required little or no correction. Being, however, a tireless student of public questions which needed study and exposition, he was, in the last years of his parliamentary life, sometimes apt to be prolix and irrelevant, especially when he came down to the House full of the subject; but, with all his idiosyncrasies in this respect, and despite the impatience at times of a not over-tolerant assembly, he never ceased to fill a unique place, and to hold his own as a popular and attractive personality in the councils of the united provinces. His motions for departmental returns, which were frequent and well directed, were of infinite assistance to the government and to members of the House generally, besides providing valuable data for future use

## MACKENZIE IN PARLIAMENT

and service. His knowledge of finance, also, and of financial and trade questions, and of the science of banking and our banking system—which was admitted by all his contemporaries—added greatly to his usefulness as a parliamentarian. Few public men, in parliament or out of it, were better equipped for the work of his time than William Lyon Mackenzie.

10

h

11



## CHAPTER XVI

### LAST YEARS, ILLNESS AND DEATH

**F**EW men who have led a life of great mental activity long survive the abandonment of their accustomed habits of labour. Nor was it different with William Lyon Mackenzie. When he resigned his seat in the legislative assembly in 1858, few of his colleagues were equal to the endurance he underwent. It was no uncommon thing for him to burn the midnight oil till streaks of gray were visible in the eastern horizon. He would do this three or four nights in the week. Every one thought there were still many years of wear in his slender but wiry frame; but the seeds of mortality had been already sown in his system. During the last two years of his life he failed more rapidly than his most intimate friends were able to realize; and to declining health there supervened pecuniary embarrassments which cast a gloom over the close of his existence. But hopes of brighter days always cheered him even in the darkest hour of adversity, and he was constantly trying to inspire others, with whom he was in intimate relations, with the same feeling.

Of a highly sensitive nature and somewhat secretive, he was never fully understood, perhaps, even by his most intimate friends. There was no sacri-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

fice which he would not cheerfully make for his children ; he could enter into all their childish feelings, and would at almost any time leave his studies to engage in their play ; yet he was sometimes unapproachable. The rude collisions with the world, in which he received so many hard knocks, would temporally weaken the springs of his elastic temper, and, till the fit was over, the gloom that crowded upon his thoughts would cast its dark shade on all around. In his children he took the greatest pride ; and the stern politician, who carried on so many relentless contests, wore the watch of his eldest daughter around his neck for twelve years after her death, in almost superstitious veneration of her who had passed away.

After his return to Canada, his stern independence conciliated the respect of all parties. He was very far from being rich ; but he taught the world this moral, that it is not necessary to be rich to be politically independent. Immediately after his return, Isaac Buchanan, with that princely munificence for which he was noted, offered to make him a gift of a thousand dollars ; but he refused it, lest it should interfere with his independence of action.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Hon. Isaac Buchanan, M.P., who was a warm friend and admirer of Mackenzie, was in his day the Conservative member for Hamilton, in the parliament of the United Provinces, the pioneer of the wholesale trade of Upper Canada, and one of the projectors of the Great Western Railway, which is now part of the Grand Trunk system. Born in Glasgow, Scotland, July 21st, 1810, the fourth son of Peter Buchanan of "Auchmar," an ancient seat of the Buchanans, on the banks of Loch Lomond, Stirlingshire, he came to Canada in

## THE MACKENZIE HOMESTEAD

The late Robert Hay, afterwards M.P. for Centre Toronto in the House of Commons, generously offered to furnish his house from top to bottom—a kindness which was gratefully declined. Twice he was offered office under the government—once directly and once indirectly—but he treated the offers as little short of insults; such was his almost morbid jealousy of a covert attack on his independence. The county of York paid him some £300 due on account of previous legislative services; and the government paid for his services as Welland Canal director before the union. In 1856, some friends started a subscription for a “Mackenzie Homestead;” and after several years’ exertions, some £1,250 were collected; of which £950 were invested in a house in Toronto, and the rest loaned by the committee to himself. Owing to a difference of opinion between himself and the committee, he inserted a notice in the public journals, in 1859, refusing to allow any more subscriptions—of which there were about fifteen hundred dollars outstanding—to be collected. From February, 1853, to the autumn of 1860, he published a weekly paper, *Mackenzie’s Message*, but not with great regularity. Latterly he was unable, for various reasons, to

1830, established in Toronto a branch of a leading mercantile house in Glasgow in which he was a partner, and was subsequently senior partner in an extensive wholesale business carried on in Glasgow, New York, Montreal, Hamilton and London. Mr. Buchanan died many years ago at “Auchmar,” his home on the mountain overlooking Hamilton.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

give the business of the office the attention which it required; financial difficulties closed in around him, and hope, his constant companion, which had never before deserted him, failed him at last. The inevitable stood in his pathway, although he long refused to recognize it.

For months before he died it was painfully evident that his health was rapidly failing, but his stern will knew no yielding. He declined to admit his physical weakness, and, although complaining of dizziness in walking, persisted in taking this favourite exercise as long as it was possible. Even when confined to his sick chamber, and when recovery was hopeless, he insisted upon his ability to regain his strength, and clung to life with a tenacity that was marvellous. He refused all medicines or stimulants, and it was only by strategy that these could be administered. Towards the close of his illness he was unconscious for days together, his speech, in the periods of fever which was consuming his vitality, recurring pathetically to the Gaelic of his early years. At other times, with mind and faculties active and apparently unclouded, he would insist upon rising and being dressed as for a journey, only to lie down again dispirited and exhausted. On the Sunday preceding his death his indomitable spirit made what proved to be its final effort. He had members of his family about him ministering to his simple wants; he received the visits of a number of old friends, with

## DEATH AND FUNERAL

whom he had very touching interviews; and he listened reverently to the consolations of religion. During the following days he was for the most part unconscious of suffering, and of those who watched beside him, and on Thursday evening, August 28th, 1861, as the sun was sinking, he passed away. He died broken-hearted with disappointment; died because he no longer knew where to find the means of existence, and because his proud spirit forbade him to beg. From his most intimate friends, who might have helped him, he concealed the embarrassments of his pecuniary position. Such was the end of this extraordinary man whose powers of agitation, at one period of his life, gave him an almost absolute command over the masses in his adopted country.

The funeral on the following Saturday afternoon, from the family homestead on Bond Street, was attended by a large concourse of people from the city and country. All classes and creeds, the high and the lowly, old opponents and old friends, were represented in the long *cortège* of mourning. Many came from distant places to pay their last tribute of respect to the memory of one whom they admired and loved. The remains were interred in the family plot in the Necropolis, with the simple religious service of the Presbyterian Church, of which the deceased was a member.<sup>1</sup> There, "in

<sup>1</sup> Mackenzie was one of the founders of St. Andrew's Church, Toronto, of which the late Rev. D. J. Macdonnell was, for many

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

the long silence of peace," Mackenzie lies buried beside his devoted wife,<sup>1</sup> and surrounded by twelve of his children, a granite column crowned by a Celtic cross marking their last resting-place. One daughter, the youngest of a family of thirteen, alone survives.<sup>2</sup>

The announcement of Mackenzie's death evoked many kindly tributes from the press of Canada, and the lapse of years has, as we have seen, added in grateful measure to the testimony of regard in which his name and services are held by the Canadian people. Considering the proximity of the event to the turbulent period in which he was so prominent an actor, it would have been natural to expect some harshness and severity to mingle, here and there, with the generous words which were published of him when "his tired life's story" came to an end. But of harshness or severity there was none. His appeal to arms against the tyranny of Sir Francis Bond Head and the official party, of which Bond Head was the ruling spirit, was censured in some quarters; but the appeal, it must be admitted, was not in vain. The constituency to which the censures were addressed, or which years, the minister. He was the secretary of the meeting at which the congregation was organized, and, along with the Hon. Mr. Justice Maclean and Mr. Alexander Morris, took a prominent part in the proceedings. He and his family were regular attendants at St. Andrew's, and also, in later years, at Knox Church.

<sup>1</sup> Mrs. Mackenzie died January 12th, 1873.

<sup>2</sup> The wife of John King, K. C., Toronto.

## OPINIONS OF NEWSPAPER PRESS

gave them any serious hearing, has been long since merged in one of wider influence and authority. Mackenzie, and the Reformers of his day who enlisted in his cause, will be judged by the more deliberate and enlightened judgments of our own time, and by these they will not be condemned.

When it became known that his illness had terminated fatally, the Toronto newspapers appeared in mourning columns, and with lengthy and appreciative obituaries. The local press in all parts of Canada was equally pronounced in its notices of the event. It was not forgotten that Mackenzie was not only a veteran of a stormy and exasperating period in the political arena, but that he was also a pioneer and veteran of their own profession; that, as Sir Henry Lytton Bulwer said of Cobbett, he possessed "the spirit of change, of criticism, of combativeness, which is the spirit of journalism; that he was not only this spirit embodied, but that he represented journalism, and fought the fight of journalism against authority, when it was still a doubt which would gain the day."<sup>1</sup>

Of the many notices of Mackenzie which appeared at that time, the following are fairly indicative of the opinions held of him, and of his character and work, by the newspapers of both political parties. They are necessarily abbreviated, but they are sufficient to show the "spirit of the press":

<sup>1</sup> *Historical Characters*, p. 357.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

“A man of very great, though sometimes misdirected, ability and energy, he played a great part in his adopted country, and exerted a very important influence over its material and political interests. No history of Canada can be complete in which his name does not occupy a conspicuous, and, we must add, notwithstanding his errors, an honourable position. Whatever may have been the means he employed, his aims were honest and public spirited. He was no money hunter; he was the friend of purity and economy in the administration of public affairs. Let no man who values the political freedom and enlightenment we enjoy, fail to give a meed of praise to one who struggled for long years, amidst enormous difficulties, to secure for his country a free constitution and an efficient administration of affairs. Those who have known Mr. Mackenzie as a writer and speaker in his later years only, can form no idea of his power in his younger days. . . . He was at all times a man of impulse, prompt in action, full of courage and fire. No danger could deter him from the accomplishment of his designs; his courage commanded the admiration of his bitterest enemies. In the early struggles of the people of Upper Canada for the privileges of self-government, Mr. Mackenzie's services were invaluable; and, though he committed a grievous error in exciting the people to rebellion, it must be recollected that the insurrection was the immediate cause of the introduction of



## OPINIONS OF NEWSPAPER PRESS

a new political system. It might have been gained without the rebellion, but the rebellion gained it. Mr. Mackenzie did good service by imparting to the early settlers a love of economy and sound principles in the administration of affairs, which has borne its fruits in the steady adhesion of the people of Upper Canada to these virtues, although they have been overborne under the existing régime by the power of Lower Canada. With many faults, Mr. Mackenzie is borne in affectionate and grateful remembrance by hundreds, we might say, thousands, of the honest yeomanry of Upper Canada, who recall his early labours on their behalf, and bear willing testimony that he never took part in a job, never advocated a measure, which he did not believe to be for the public good. Their regard for him is his best monument.”<sup>1</sup>

“Few men have exercised a more potent influence on the affairs of Canada than that wielded by the subject of this notice. He it was who first directed attention to the necessity of those changes in the system of government which were afterwards effected under the auspices of others when he had been driven into exile. . . . Even the rebellion with all its evils was not without its incidental advantages. It awakened the attention of the imperial government to the monstrous abuses of the oligarchical system which had previously existed, and brought about a beneficial change

<sup>1</sup> The *Globe*, Toronto, August 29th, 1861.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

sooner than it could otherwise have occurred. During his long public career he did many things which he afterwards admitted to be wrong, and for which he expressed the deepest regret; but whatever errors may have blended with his exertions—errors which he himself afterwards frankly admitted—there can be no question that he did much to advance the cause of civil liberty in his adopted country. . . . It is now all but universally conceded, that, however erroneous his views, Mr. Mackenzie did everything from a thoroughly honest motive, and in the belief that it was best for the country. He was no trading politician or office-seeker, and the best test of his political virtue is, that he resisted the most alluring temptations when he thought their acceptance would be contrary to the interests of the public. His most intimate friends best knew the value he set upon political honesty, and how deep and utter was his detestation of a tendency to dishonesty or corruption. His great ambition appears to have been to bequeath a name which should be free from the suspicion of corruption or selfishness; and in that we think it will be generally admitted that he succeeded.”<sup>1</sup>

“Mr. Mackenzie was all his life one of the most prominent public men in Canada—possessed of great natural ability, industry and perseverance. Though a poor man he was always strictly honest

<sup>1</sup> *The Leader*, Toronto, August 30th, 1861.

## OPINIONS OF NEWSPAPER PRESS

and independent. The part he took in the Rebellion of 1837 is familiar to our readers. Mr. Mackenzie for a long time edited the then leading paper in Upper Canada ; and was always connected with the press in some shape or other. His principal business in parliament was to scent out and expose jobs and corruption, and unhesitatingly denounce the perpetrators. He also kept a scrapbook ready at hand to pounce upon inconsistent politicians, and convict them out of their own mouths. Though a man of extreme views, there is no doubt as to his sincerity and honesty of purpose. His is one of those names in the history of Canada that will not be let die. There are many who will regret Mr. Mackenzie's loss ; though 'after life's fitful fever he sleeps well.'"<sup>1</sup>

"Mr. Mackenzie, in his prime before the union, occupied a prominent position in the politics of Upper Canada, and, by his energy and power as a public writer and stump orator, lashed the people into rebellion in 1837. . . . It is certain that, by the bitterness of his attacks upon the government and the governing class, he stung them to wrath ; and possibly, in their exasperation, they may not have been overwise in the language which they in their turn used in denouncing him. It was he who commenced the system of printing extracts from the journals of the legislature, and obnoxious votes, interspersed with capitals and black letters as thick

<sup>1</sup> *Montreal Pilot.*

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

as plums in a pudding—a system of which Mr. George Brown has been an imitator, and which he has pursued with a success almost as great as that of Mr. Mackenzie. . . . It must be said of him that, in all his bitter agitation, he was not actuated by any corrupt or sordid motives. The sacrifice of his property was sufficient proof of his sincerity. . . . In the House he spoke frequently, and at times he rose to eloquence, and won cheers from all sides. When Lord Elgin strained the constitution at Quebec in favour of Mr. Hincks, by dissolving parliament before a bill was passed, the old man stepped out on the floor to raise his voice against that act of wrongdoing, and aimed his hot, quick words so well that they once again stirred men's blood and produced a marked sensation. . . . His real strength lay in detecting flaws in the public accounts, and to his credit be it said that, during a time of corruption and inflation, he never soiled his hands, or ever obtained any advantage whatever from any party. . . . He was small of stature but physically strong, and, almost to the last, he could spring over a table at a standing jump. He is now gone to his account for the good and evil he has done. We are willing to forget, in as far as may be, past political differences—to remember only the good in his career.”<sup>1</sup>

“Mr. Mackenzie's name is mixed up with the con-

<sup>1</sup> *Montreal Gazette.*

## OPINIONS OF NEWSPAPER PRESS

stitutional history of Canada to a greater extent, perhaps, than that of any other individual; and, with his many faults, there can be no doubt that he had, throughout all his career, the interests of Canada and of human freedom at heart. In the great struggle in Upper Canada against the Family Compact, as it was then called, which terminated in the Rebellion of 1837, he was a leading spirit, trusted, not only by his own party in that province, but by the French-Canadian majority in Lower Canada then led by Papineau. In the civil war he was the most prominent leader, and had several very narrow escapes. . . . Latterly, those who had sympathized with the man who had laid all his energies, means, and opportunities, on the altar of his country without meeting any reward, contributed a sufficient amount to purchase for him a comfortable homestead where he quietly ended his days.”<sup>1</sup>

“The late Mr. Mackenzie appears to have been sincere in all his proceedings. He believed the country, as a colony, oppressed, and he was determined to bring it immediate relief. He erred, however, in using the sword instead of the pen, and in fostering rebellion instead of loyalty. . . . To err, however, is human. Mr. Mackenzie was not, with all his faults, an office seeker, and in this respect presents a strong contrast to the ‘look to Washington’ men of the present day. He is gone—peace to his ashes.”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Montreal Witness*.    <sup>2</sup> *Brantford Courier*.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

“As a politician, Mr. Mackenzie was exceedingly industrious, and brought a vast amount of energy to bear upon whatever he undertook. As a newspaper writer his style was peculiarly his own, and latterly he wrote but little. Few men have gone through so many varying and trying changes as Mr. Mackenzie; yet he flinched not in anything he undertook. He was a man of extraordinary energy and possessed an unconquerable will. Whatever may be said of his faults and follies, and he had many, he was certainly sincere in all he did. As one of the most remarkable men of this country, Mr. Mackenzie departs at a ripe age leaving behind him many memorials of the past.”<sup>1</sup>

“No man’s career, perhaps, is better known here than his, and while he had his faults as well as other men, it may truly be said of him, that he was ever above those influences which act so powerfully on many public men in Canada. He was always above the money power, and never succumbed to the blandishments of executive patronage; but was ever actuated, we doubt not, by the conviction that he was doing right, however far from it he may have been, so that with all his faults we respect his memory.”<sup>2</sup>

“We make no excuse for inserting a lengthy notice on the death of the late W. L. Mackenzie from the columns of the *Globe*. He played too con-

<sup>1</sup> Hamilton *Spectator*.

<sup>2</sup> Hamilton *Times*, “Death of an Old Patriot.”

## OPINIONS OF NEWSPAPER PRESS

spicuous a part in Canadian politics to be passed over with a mere paragraph. Would that it could be said of all politicians, what is universally admitted in regard to Mr. Mackenzie—he sought not his own advancement or wealth, but the good of the country. Wayward and impracticable though many esteemed him, yet his aims were not to enrich himself, and he has descended to the grave after a long and busy life with the enviable character of ‘An honest man, the noblest work of God.’”<sup>1</sup>

“It is unfortunate that a man’s death must precede a general appreciation of his character and services. Being dead, all parties praise him, and his funeral *cortège* would do honour to the memory of a king. In the sad procession all classes of citizens were amply represented. The mayor and corporation were there to dignify the ashes of the first chief magistrate elected to preside over the affairs of the city. Radical and Tory walked and rode together, the more pointedly to prove the sincerity of their conviction that the dead man’s errors were on the side of his country. It was a funeral which demonstrated that in the long run honesty is cherished ; that blunders and even crimes are forgiven by the people, if their author has but acted under the pressure of disinterested impulses. The pity is, that the generous verdict is postponed until the being most concerned is placed beyond the jurisdiction of earthly tribunals.”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Brockville Recorder.

<sup>2</sup> Toronto correspondence Ottawa Citizen.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

The press of the United States, which, to say the least, was quite competent to form a dispassionate judgment, and many of whose journalists were well acquainted with Mackenzie, was particularly appreciative of his labours as a constitutional reformer. In common with other newspapers, the *New York Tribune*, whose famous editor, Horace Greeley, watched the progress of events in this country with the closest attention, expressed an opinion on this point that has met with very general acceptance. "William Lyon Mackenzie," said the *Tribune*, referring particularly to the conflict in Upper Canada, "was the leader of the real struggle for responsible government in Canada. He conducted the political siege, and headed the storming party that effected the breach. Mackenzie personified the *vim* and virtues, personal and political, that fought the fight and won it."

Mackenzie was scarcely in his grave when the newspaper press called for some "tangible testimony" to his memory. "Mr. Mackenzie dead and buried," said the Toronto correspondent of the *Ottawa Citizen*, "is nothing more to be heard concerning him? Is the long procession which followed his remains to the grave to be the last sign of the public estimate of his honesty and usefulness?" The erection of a monument to commemorate his public services has been frequently suggested. As in the case of the portraits of Mackenzie, which were hung in the legislative and municipal



## PROPOSALS OF PUBLIC MONUMENT

buildings at Toronto, the proposal has been favourably received by the press of both parties, and, although it has never taken practical shape,<sup>1</sup> the comments on the subject possess a certain historic interest, apart from the references to Mackenzie himself.

"It is surprising, not a few will say ungrateful, that, during all these years of political progress, no memorial of a personality so picturesque and strenuous as Mackenzie should have come into existence. The late Sir M. C. Cameron used to say that, Conservative as he was, he would gladly contribute to such an object. The first premier of Ontario, the Hon. J. S. Macdonald, was also one of Mackenzie's ardent admirers. Mackenzie proved his faith by his works as a fearless public man. He was the leader of a movement which, though not faultless, hastened a radical change in British colonial government; and he staked his life on the issue. Such a man may well be honoured by a monument to his memory."<sup>2</sup> "Apropos of tablets," said the *Westminster*, "is it not time for a monument to be erected to the memory of William Lyon Mackenzie? . . . The fierce political animosities of '37 have died away, and Canadians of to-day can see the great men of those troublous

<sup>1</sup> The late Hon. Archibald McKellar, at one time commissioner of public works in the Ontario government, and subsequently sheriff of Wentworth, had the project pretty well in hand at the time of his death; but his plans died with him.

<sup>2</sup> The *Star*, Toronto, May 23rd, 1900.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

times in a clearer light, and do them juster honour than their fellows did. What though our fathers killed the prophets, if they were true prophets we should not be ashamed to build their sepulchres.”<sup>1</sup>

A writer in a Toronto morning paper, who described himself as a “Loyalist in the stirring times of 1837,” felt impelled, as he said, to declare himself in favour of this public recognition of Mackenzie’s patriotic labours. Commenting on the Loyalist’s letter, a leading Conservative journal said, in its article of the day: “This proposal is not a new one, but it is none the less laudable, and, coming from a Conservative source, is significant of the just sentiment which eventually prevails with respect to sterling honesty and self-sacrifice in public life. The strong contrast in this respect presented by Mackenzie’s patriotic career, with the utter selfishness of not a few in high places since his day, is making itself felt as time goes on. The events of the last few years in Canada have made the Reform leader more appreciated than ever he was. The movement which he headed was less a movement against the Crown’s authority, than against the abuse and prostitution of it by men unworthy of the Queen’s confidence. The rash and tyrannical Sir Francis Bond Head did more to goad the long-suffering people of Upper Canada into revolt than any man living

<sup>1</sup> May, 1900.

## THE PRESS ON THE REBELLION

at the time. . . . By all means give him a monument. He well deserves it, if only because he hastened by many years the reign of responsible government, and taught, by shining example as well as precept, the much needed lesson that fearless, unpurchasable independence in the people's service should be, as too often it is not, the highest aim and reward of political ambition."<sup>1</sup>

Any further reference to the personal and public character and career of Mackenzie seems scarcely necessary. Like others who have passed through the fires of political persecution, he said and did some things which it may not always be possible to defend or excuse. There is no desire to defend or excuse them in these pages; nor, in an impartial estimate of his life work, is it necessary to do so. Neither is it necessary to endorse his own manly confessions of fault or error, although, as he himself once said in his place in parliament, he believed "there was more true nobility of mind in confessing an error than in persisting in one."

A few years ago, a correspondent in a Toronto newspaper took exception to the Reform party being classed with Mackenzie and his associates. A prominent Liberal journal<sup>2</sup> resented the distinction in a strong article in defence of the "rebels" of 1837, and was supported by other Liberal newspapers throughout the province. "This

<sup>1</sup> *The News*, Toronto, December 26th, 1895.

<sup>2</sup> *The Hamilton Times*, February 26th, 1901.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

protest," said a Toronto journal, referring to the correspondent's letter, "doubtless expresses the opinion of a small section of the Reform party, but a section whose numbers are diminishing, and which will become extinct. A Reformer of the present day who calls it 'disloyal' to rebel against unbearable tyranny is out of date. Whether or not Mackenzie—the man Mackenzie—was headstrong, vain, and visionary, future generations will care less and less to enquire. Men will remember only that the world has too little of that courage which counts not the cost of political protest, and will not compromise with tyranny. By the foolhardiness of such men as those of '37 and later, those 'crazy men' at Harper's Ferry, men who follow the path of their convictions, though it lead them to the scaffold, the race of men is honoured."<sup>1</sup> "We who enjoy the liberties for which Mackenzie and his followers fought would be ungrateful if we weighed their actions in too nice a balance. They suffered for us, and the principles for which they fought proved to be the best not only for Canada but for the Empire."<sup>2</sup> "But for the strenuous and protracted fight Mackenzie made for pure administration and democratic institutions, the oligarchy he sought to overthrow might have retained its hold much longer on the provincial machinery. To very many people he is only a 'rebel,' or an un-

<sup>1</sup> The *Star*, Toronto, March 4th, 1901.

<sup>2</sup> The *Globe*, Toronto, January 2nd, 1902.

## ESTIMATES OF HIS CHARACTER

successful patriot ; to those who know most about his efforts and achievements, his career was remarkably successful as well as admirable."<sup>1</sup>

Writing of Macaulay, in his beautiful little essay, "*Nil Nisi Bonum*," Thackeray says: "He is always in a storm of revolt and indignation against wrong, craft, tyranny. How he cheers heroic resistance ; how he backs and applauds freedom struggling for its own ; how he hates scoundrels ever so victorious and successful ;"—words not inapplicable to Mackenzie, and that might have been said or written of him, ever and anon, in the vicissitudes of fortune that marked his chequered career. He was unquestionably one of the strong personalities of his time, and whatever be the reason, he has retained his hold on the imagination of the people. Old men of the rebellion period have recounted with pride how they were "out with Lyon Mackenzie in '37." Possessed of popular gifts, and of unswerving honesty and independence, he was animated by strong convictions, and, when needs be, could express them with persuasive eloquence. "He was an uncompromising friend of civil and religious liberty, and had an innate hatred of wrongdoing, injustice and oppression. This is the true test of his political propaganda. He encountered a thoroughly bad system of government and administration and enormous public abuses. These he persistently assailed, and, in the long and bitter conflict which

<sup>1</sup> The *Globe*, February 6th, 1903.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

closed with the rebellion, he received no quarter.”<sup>1</sup> Although not always right, he always believed he was right, and he had the power of inspiring that belief in others. He was what his physical features and make-up suggest, a dynamic man, all energy, activity and force, capable of long sustained physical and mental exertion in the prosecution of his labours, masterful, impatient of opposition, suspicious of the political caucus, no friend of the “machine,” and undaunted in any purpose by its unpopularity, difficulty, or danger. At the same time, as described by one who knew him well, he was “a pleasant companion and associate, full of vivacity and good humour and the ready mother wit of a Highlander. Despite all the buffetings of fortune, he never lost, even in his latest years, the freshness, buoyancy and brightness of youth. He frolicked with his children, delighted in their society, and was as young in heart as any of them.”

Although not unwatchful of the currents of public opinion, “the great support of the State,” Mackenzie struck down below the surface to the working of those social forces beneath, which seldom fail to influence communities in the discussion of public questions and the promotion of political movements. He believed in trusting the people, but he was not of those who thought that the people were never wrong. On the contrary, he

<sup>1</sup> *The Globe*, Toronto, August 4th, 1906.

## THE JUDGMENT OF HISTORY

thought they were wrong on many occasions, and he so declared with some bitterness; but he believed with Burke, "that in all disputes between them and their rulers, the presumption is at least upon a par in favour of the people;" and that when popular discontents are prevalent, something is amiss in the constitution or the administration. "The people have no interest in disorder," wrote Burke. "When they do wrong, it is their error, and not their crime," adding the famous passage from the *Memoirs of Sully* (whom he describes as a great man and minister of state and a zealous asserter of monarchy), that "the revolutions that come to pass in great states are not the result of chance, nor of popular caprice. . . . As for the populace, it is never from a passion for attack that it rebels, but from impatience of suffering."<sup>1</sup> "A passage," said John Morley, "which practical politicians and political students should bind about their necks and write upon the tables of their hearts."<sup>2</sup>

The "impatience of suffering," thus emphasized by Lord Morley, had everything to do with inspiring and determining the public career of the man whose life story has now been told. The story

<sup>1</sup> *Thoughts on the Present Discontents*, Burke's Works, Bohn's Ed., Vol. i, p. 310.

<sup>2</sup> *Burke, English Men of Letters*, pp. 50, 51. The author is now Viscount Morley, Secretary of State for India in the British cabinet, of which the late Right Hon. Campbell-Bannerman was, and the Right Hon. H. H. Asquith is now, the First Minister.

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

is not perfect in every detail, but the readers of to-day are far enough removed from the violent things which were said and done on both sides at that time, from the bitter warfare of the parties and the long train of mutual animosities to which it gave rise, more especially in the pre-confederation years of our history, to regard with dispassionate feelings the character and work of the man himself—to remember his unselfish patriotism, his noble integrity, his many and great services and sacrifices for the public welfare. These must always ensure him a high place in the affections of a people who have gained so much from his vindication of liberty and justice, and his advocacy of those great constitutional reforms which are inseparably connected with our present system of government. Posterity, which generously veils the follies and frailties of public men, who have honestly and patriotically served their country in their day and generation, can never forget the debt of gratitude which it owes to Mackenzie for the just cause which he made his own, and history, in passing judgment, will not unfairly adjust the balance with respect to one whose faults and errors were so far overshadowed by his virtues.



# THE DAUGHTER OF WILLIAM

LYON MACKENZIE

the Past Ali

Dec. 1917

May 1/18

Death has emptied the homes ination of any comm

which the late Mrs. Grace Macken-legacy of the past.

King was welcomed in her girl-ain way; condition

hood and womanhood, and death has y are taken for granted.

illed many of the hearts that loved to outsiders a source of

d honored the last surviving ation—and sometimes re-

ughter of William Lyon Mackenzie. of a place, the attitudes

A company of sincere sorrowing rent, are the inheritance

d sympathetic friends were joined h set a course in the past.

sorrow to the mourners who were ys been a curious mixture

ited by the nearest and dearest and the radical, interpreted

es of family and kindred to the as of the day. No small

widow of the late John King, K.C., l of this dualism was the

and to the mother of Hon. W. L. M. of William Lyon Macken-

ing. and rebel, editor and first

As a daughter, Mrs. Grace Macken- Toronto. Always a figure

e King was related to the fame of im of his own unbalanced

national leader who was idolized heless set a mark on the

y his followers and execrated by ce which will not be over-

s foes; as a wife, to the activities if only for the color it

as a distinguished member of the for self-government, now

ntario bar; and as a mother, to the r granted.

ninence of a son who served as a come on Bond Street, To-

abinet Minister and fought as the n Tuesday as a memorial

rst lieutenant of his party's leader. been furnished with con-

he daughter of William Lyon Mac- ven by public-spirited citi-

enzie, the wife of John King, K.C., naintained permanently as

nd the mother of Hon. W. L. M. life in this city a century

King was recognized by many friends ood thing thus to preserve

and admirers as a strong, true and the past—something we

attractive personality in her own done too well. Those who

ght. Sympathy is offered to Hon. g this memorial to a prac-

V. L. M. King and other mourners the gratitude of the people.

rom all the survivors in the great might well inspire emula-

company of friends that the late Mrs. priceless raw material of

Grace Mackenzie King made and our early history is being lost forever by the

cept. careless descendants of worthy people.

Canada  
history. A  
kenzie was  
half a mill  
rather wa  
Toronto w



## INDEX

### A

**ALIEN ACT**, 1804, 88 ; hardships of, 140, 141 ; bill to amend, 142  
**Amnesty**, Act of 1838, 474 ; Hume urges, for Mackenzie, 477, 478 ; Act of 1849, 480  
**Anderson**, Anthony, given command of the rebels, 360 ; moves on Toronto, 363 ; takes prisoners, 364 ; victim of Powell's treachery, 365  
**Annexation to United States**, Mackenzie not for, 10  
**Arthur**, Sir George, governor of Upper Canada, 435 ; disregards clemency petitions, 435 ; learns of intended attack on Canada, 441 ; renews reward for Mackenzie's capture, 445 ; proposes exchange of prisoners and refugees, 463 ; U.S. refuses, 463  
**Assembly**, Legislative, composition of, under Constitutional Act, 53 ; Goldwin Smith on, 54 ; irritation between and executive, 55 ; Lord Durham on, 56, 58, 59, 60 ; the true principle of government, 61, 63  
**"Association of Canadian Refugees,"** formed, 448 ; object of, independence of Canada, 449 ; ended further expeditions against Canada, 449

### B

**BALDWIN**, DOCTOR W. W., upholds

Judge Willis, 132 ; protests against his removal, 133  
**Baldwin**, Robert, defends Judge Willis, 133 ; Mackenzie supports, 159 ; elected to the assembly, 159 ; on banks in politics, 170 ; appointed executive councillor, 294 ; resigns, 294 ; goes to England, 305 ; opposed by Head, 305 ; accompanies flag of truce, 368 ; retires from executive council, 408 ; Mackenzie defeats government of, 492  
**Banking**, report of House on, 161  
**Bank of Upper Canada**, increase of capital vetoed, 215 ; run on, 340  
**Bidwell**, Marshall Spring, defends Mackenzie, 181, 182 ; moves committee of inquiry, 184 ; moves Mackenzie's eligibility, 243 ; discountenances royal veto, 251 ; elected Speaker of the House, 151 ; again elected Speaker of the House, 261 ; Head declines to make him judge, 307 ; defeated for the House, 308 ; refuses nomination to convention, 343 ; gives legal advice to rebels, 343 ; his part in the rebellion, 357 ; accepts voluntary exile, 358  
**Bierce**, General, plans attack on Windsor, 446 ; lands at Windsor, 447 ; retreats, 447  
**Blake**, Hon. Edward, when rebellion is justified, 26, 27  
**Blake**, William Hume, solicitor-

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

- general, debate on Rebellion Losses Bill, 489
- Boulton, John Henry, solicitor-general, reprimanded, 153; dismissed from office, 232; threatens rebellion, 233; chief justice of Newfoundland, 235
- Brown, George, Mackenzie defeats, 486; relations with Mackenzie, 487; the Haldimand election, 488; Alexander Mackenzie's good offices, 496
- Buchanan, Isaac, urges Mackenzie's amnesty, 474; generosity of, 504
- Buller, Charles, authorship of Lord Durham's Report, 82, 83
- C
- CAMERON, JAMES, attempts to kidnap Mackenzie, 464
- "Canadian Alliance Society," founded December 1834, 258; its objects, 258
- Canadian Freeman*, the, Collins publishes it in 1825, 111
- Caroline Almanac*, Mackenzie publishes, 459
- Caroline* the (steamboat), goes over Niagara Falls, 419; cutting out of, 420; merits of act, 421; international complications, 423
- Casual and territorial revenues, details of, 54, 55
- Chamberlain, Rt. Hon. Joseph, justifies Upper Canada rebellion, 29, 30
- Chandler, Samuel, aids Mackenzie's escape, 397
- Christie, his *History of Canada*, 405
- Chronicle*, Kingston, 103
- Citizen*, the (Ottawa), Mackenzie's obituary in, 517; urges monument to, 518
- Clergy Reserves, created by Constitutional Act, 70; details of, 70; Lord Durham on, 71; Mackenzie's view of, 94, 95; grievance report on, 272; Lord Glenelg's position, 283
- Colborne, Sir John, governor of Upper Canada, 157; Mackenzie's letters to, 164-7; suggests Mackenzie make reparation, 248; his view of legislative council, 268; his view of executive council, 279
- Collins, Francis, reports legislative debates, 106; publishes *Canadian Freeman* in 1825, 111; convicted of libel, 134; fined and imprisoned, 134
- Colonial Advocate*, the, published at Queenston, May 18th, 1824, 85; reviews condition of provinces, 86, 87; topics discussed in, 94-7; reports debates, 102, 103; granted a subsidy for printing, 103; moved to York, Jan. 1825, 106; House refuses publication of reports in, 108; destruction of, 113; W. J. Rattray on, 116; defendants made to pay £625 damages, 129; criminal prosecution of, 130; second destruction of, 221; last issue Nov. 1834, 259
- Comfort, Thomas, aids Mackenzie's escape, 384
- Confederation of British American colonies, Mackenzie advocates, 104, 105; Robinson reports on, 105

# INDEX

Constitutional Act, the, its objects, 48, 49; the debate on the bill, 49, 50; the handiwork of Pitt, 51; the germ of the federal system, 51; divided Quebec into two provinces, 52; created legislative council, 52; created legislative assembly, 53; executive council, 53; General Simcoe on, 54; Goldwin Smith on, 54; Lord Durham's commentary on, 53, 56; recommends revision of, 57; provisions creating Clergy Reserves, 70; effect on parliamentary rule summarized, 71, 72; Mackenzie declares war against, 72; silent on the question of executive responsibility, 80; evils of system of government summarized, 73-5; Lord Durham on these evils, 76, 77

*Constitution*, the, Mackenzie starts, 320; destroyed by mob, 321; draft constitution of provisional government published in, 356

Council, Executive, created under Constitutional Act, 53; irritating relations with assembly, 55, 58; Durham on, 61; real advisers of the governor, 63; responsibility of, demanded by U. C. Reformers, 64, 69; Durham's view of the effect of irresponsibility, 65, 66; Sir John Colborne's view of, 279; Lord Glenelg's view of, 286

Council, Legislative, the, created by Constitutional Act, 52; Lord Durham criticizes and suggests revision, 57; attitude of Lower Canadian Reformers to, 67; atti-

tude of Upper Canadian Reformers to, 69; rejects 325 bills in 8 years, 73; Sir John Colborne on, 268; collision with assembly, 276; should be elective, 277; Glenelg insists shall be non-elective, 324

*Courier*, the (Brantford), Mackenzie's obituary in, 515

## D

DALLING AND BULWER, LORD, author of *Sir Robert Peel*, 16

Declaration of Independence, July 1837, its history, 330; the work of Rolph and O'Grady, 330

Dufort, Thomas, agent of Papineau to Upper Canada, 345; sets out for Michigan, 345; secures assistance in Michigan, 427

Duncombe, Dr., complains to Glenelg of Head, 315; deals with the York election, 316; his letter referred to a committee, 321; report of the committee, 322; forces at Brantford, 425; retreat to Scotland, 425; increased by one thousand, 425; men disperse, 426; amnestied, 474

Dundas, Colonel, defends Windmill Point, 443; accepts Van Shultz's surrender, 444

Dunn, John Henry, appointed executive councillor, 294; resigns, 294

Durham, Lord, "a man ahead of his time," 6, 7; speech on the Reform Bill, 14, 15; his report on the Constitutional Act, 55; on the position of lieutenant-governor,

# WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

56 ; on the legislative council, 57 ; on the executive council, 58 63, 64 ; says Reformers are justified in demanding responsible executive, 59, 67, 68, 69 ; points out powerlessness of assembly, 60 ; on the Family Compact, 62, 65 ; Clergy Reserves one of chief causes of rebellion, 71, 72 ; on evils arising from Constitutional Act, 75, 76 ; says representative government was guaranteed by Constitutional Act, 76 ; his report justifies Reformers, 77 ; Stuart J. Reid on the Report, 78, 79 ; analogy between Report and "Seventh Report on Grievances," 79, 80 ; Union Act of 1840 based on Report, 80 ; recommends responsible government, 81 ; authorship of Report, 82, 83 ; on Head's interference in election, 309 ; on the causes of disaffection, 402 ; the remedy, 403

## E

**ELGIN, LORD**, governor-general, 480 ; assents to amnesty act, 480  
*Examiner*, the (New York), Mackenzie publishes, 470  
*Examiner*, the (Toronto), published by Sir Francis Hincks, 483 ; on the riots, 483 ; its estimate of Mackenzie, 484, 485

## F

**FAMILY COMPACT**, the, their loyalty tested, 10 ; Durham's view of, 62, 65, 66 ; great influence of, 66 ;

lasting and extensive monopoly of power, 66 ; decides on Gourlay's destruction, 89 ; destroys *Colonial Advocate*, 115 ; incensed at Lord Goderich's concessions, 230 ; secures Head's sympathy, 302

**Fitzgibbon, Colonel James**, defeats rebels at Montgomery's farm, 379  
**Fothergill, Charles**, attacks Mackenzie in *U. C. Gazette* 38 ; accuses Mackenzie of disloyalty, 99 ; moves to pay Mackenzie for report of debates, 102, 103 ; dismissed from position of king's printer, 110

## G

*Gazette*, **MACKENZIE'S**, published May 12th, 1838, 433 ; last issue of, 461

*Gazette* (Montreal), Mackenzie's obituary in, 514

**Gibson, David**, organizes shooting matches, 342 ; rebels meet at his house, 360 ; opposes advance on Toronto, 362 ; his house burned, 375 ; objects to Mackenzie's plans, 376 ; escapes, 380

**Glenelg, Lord**, colonial secretary, opposes responsible government, 20 ; on colonial self-government, 73 ; refers report of the committee on grievances to the king, 263 ; his reply to report, 280 ; on executive councils, 302 ; schooled by Head, 304 ; Head disobeys his orders, 307 ; non-elective legislative council, 324  
*Globe*, the (Toronto), justifies the

# INDEX

- rising of 1837, 13; on Mackenzie's expulsions, 254; on Mackenzie's retirement from public life, 498; Mackenzie's obituary, 511; on Mackenzie's personality, 523
- Gourlay, Robert, comes to Canada, 1817, 89; arouses public feeling, 89; tried for libel at Kingston and again at Brockville and acquitted, 89; tried under Alien Act and ordered to leave province, 90; refuses and is committed to gaol, 90; *habeas corpus* proceedings fail, 90; treatment in prison, 91; Chief Justice Powell orders him to leave province, 92; banished, 93
- Goderich, Viscount, colonial secretary, 1832, 221; enquires into Upper Canada Reformers grievances, 223, 224; offers Mackenzie the post-office department, 225; deprecates civil war, 226; replies to Mackenzie, 227; relieves religious bodies as to taking oath, 227; stops free gifts of public lands, 227; British subjects not to be disqualified from voting, 228; promotes extension of education, 228; orders account of public moneys, 228; suggests retirement of ecclesiastics as legislative councillors, 229; reduces cost of elections, 229; favours independent judiciary, 229; differs from Mackenzie, 230; Family Compact incensed at, 230; dismisses Hagerman and Boulton, 231, 232; resigns, 235; disallows Bank Acts, 237
- Greeley, Horace, editor of *N. Y. Tribune*, 472; Mackenzie's friend, 473; his influence with Mackenzie, 474
- Grey, Earl, prime minister, Mackenzie's opinion of, 221; favours amnesty of, 478; Mackenzie's letter to, 479
- Gurnett, George, brought to the bar, 152; editor of *Courier*, 165; style of, 165

## H

- HAGERMAN, Christopher Alexander, solicitor-general, accuses Mackenzie of libel, 208; dismissed from office, 232; goes to England, 233; restored to office, 234; threatens House with vengeance of troops, 298
- Handy, Henry S., commander of patriot army, 427; quarrels with General Sutherland, 427; occupies Sugar Island, 428; put to flight, 428; forms new plot to revolutionize Canada, 437; its extent, 438; failure, 439
- Harrison, Dr. T. T. J., his account of the Haldimand election, 487
- Harrison, Hon. S. B., moves resolution for responsible government, which carried, 408
- Hay, Robert, generosity of, 505
- Head, Sir Francis Bond, governor of Upper Canada, states his position on responsible government, 22; Durham says he purposely invited rebellion, 23; his instructions on taking office, 263; makes public a confidential despatch,

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

- 280 ; arrives in Canada, 291 ; his appointment, 291 ; states his position, 293 ; appoints three executive councillors, 294 ; council resigns, 294 ; his views of responsibility, 295 ; censured by committee of the House, 296 ; House adopts the report, 297 ; refused supplies, 297 ; replies to address of deputation, 298 ; the deputation's reply, 300 ; appoints four new councillors, 300 ; schooled by Lord Glenelg, 301 ; joins Family Compact, 302 ; dissolves the House, 303 ; refuses assent to money bills, 303 ; interferes in elections, 304 ; insults Glenelg, 304 ; denounces Robert Baldwin, 305 ; quarrels with imperial commission of inquiry, 305 ; refuses to obey Lord Glenelg, 307 ; W. J. Rattray on, 307 ; his success in the elections, 308 ; unscrupulous influence in, 309 ; Lord Durham on, 309 ; some of his addresses, 313 ; charged with undue influence, 313 ; sustained by partisan House, 314 ; refuses offer of troops, 353 ; invites revolt, 354, 355 ; prepares to escape, 364 ; sends flag of truce, 368 ; orders burning of property, 381 ; seeks Mackenzie's extradition, 415 ; offers reward for Mackenzie's apprehension, 380
- Hincks, Sir Francis, on Welland Canal, 265 ; befriends Mackenzie, 481 ; publishes *Examiner*, 483 ; his *Reminiscences*, 483 ; his estimate of Mackenzie, 484 ; prime minister, 487
- Hume, Hon. Joseph, befriends Mackenzie, 221 ; assists Canada's cause, 222 ; presents case against Crown officials, 231 ; suggests Canadian independence, 250 ; "baneful domination" letter, 263 ; Dr. Morrison defends, 263 ; thanked by Mackenzie, 289 ; predicts civil war, 326 ; letter to Mackenzie, 475
- "Hunters' Lodges," convention of, 440 ; attack on Prescott, 442
- I
- IMMIGRATION, to colonies in 1820, state of, 88
- J
- JARVIS, SHERIFF W. B., Loyalists retreat under, 373
- K
- KETCHUM, JESSE, elected to the assembly, 150 ; delivers rejoinder to governor, 300
- Kerr, W. J., attempts Mackenzie's assassination, 218 ; tried and convicted, 220
- King, Dr., aids Mackenzie's escape, 389
- King, John, K.C., author of *A Decade in the History of Newspaper Libel*, 163
- L
- LaFontaine, L. H., addresses revolutionary meetings, 328



# INDEX

## M

Lands, public, evils of methods of granting, 74 ; list of grants in first thirty-five years, 74

Laurier, Rt. Hon. Sir Wilfrid, justifies U. C. rebellion, 30, 31

Lesslie, James, president of "Canadian Alliance Society," 258 ; delivers rejoinder to governor, 300 ; refuses to sign declaration of independence, 331

Libel, Mackenzie's bill on, 163

Lieutenant-Governor, (office of), Durham's view of his power, 56, 57 ; his surroundings in 1838, 61 ; his position in both Upper and Lower Canada, 62

*Life and Times of Martin Van Buren*, Mackenzie publishes, 472

*Lives of Butler and Hoyt*, Mackenzie publishes, 471

Lount, Samuel, member for Simcoe, 316 ; election corruption, 317 ; given command of rebels, 360 ; arrives at Montgomery's, 362 ; his account of the flag of truce, 369 ; his first engagement, 373 ; his second engagement, 379 ; leaves country, 380 ; executed, 435 ; his fidelity, 435 ; petitions for commutation, 435 ; effect of his execution, 436 ; monument to, 436

Lower Canada, crisis approaching, 287 ; imperial commissioners' report, 323 ; against responsible government, 325 ; events leading to rebellion, 327 ; asks other provinces for support, 329 ; crisis arrives, August 1837, 344 ; arrest of editors, 344 ; conditions of, in 1837, 347 ; rebellion in, 358

MACKENZIE, Hon. Alexander, his letter in reference to George Brown, 496

Mackenzie, Isabel, wife of William Lyon Mackenzie, granted \$4000 by parliament, 240 ; at Navy Island, 424 ; death of, 508

*Mackenzie's Message*, newspaper, published 1853, 505

Mackenzie, William Lyon, his personality, Goldwin Smith on, 3 ; Dr. Harrison on, 4 ; W. J. Ratt-ray on, 5, 6 ; first to enunciate responsible government, 5 ; "a man ahead of his time," 6 ; his loyalty, 10 ; not an annexationist, 11 ; a constitutional reformer, 12 ; parentage and ancestry, 34-6 ; defends himself from charges of disloyalty, 36-8 ; school days, 38, 39 ; books he read from 1806-19, 40, 41 ; enters commerce, 41, 42 ; goes to Canada, 43 ; physical description of, 43 ; joins survey of Lachine Canal, 44 ; enters business with John Lesslie, 44 ; moves to Queenston, 44 ; marries, 45 ; declares war on Constitutional Act, 72 ; starts *Colonial Advocate*, 85 ; describes Upper Canada in 1820, 85-7 ; warns Canadians against union with the United States, 87, 97 ; attitude on Clergy Reserves, 94 ; advocates provincial university, 95 ; reforms advocated by, which have come into effect, 97, 98 ; defends himself against disloyalty charge, 98-101 ;

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

advocates federation of all North American colonies, 104, 105 ; moves to York, 106 ; pictures life of editors, 111 ; assists a party revolution, 112 ; mob destroys *Colonial Advocate*, 113 ; Macaulay offers damages, 115 ; personal attacks, 117-20 ; Macaulay's treatment of, 121-3 ; retaliates, 124, 125 ; answers Macaulay's pamphlet, 126 ; gets £625 damages, 129 ; refuses to prosecute criminally, 129 ; indicted for libel, 130 ; prosecution abandoned, 135 ; friendship of Robert Randal, 138 ; secures Randal's mission to England, 139 ; advocates responsible government, 146, 148 ; elected for York, 150 ; moves committal of Allan MacNab, 152 ; chairman of committee on post-office, 153 ; chairman of committee on privileges of House, 154 ; carries many motions and addresses, 154 ; opinions stated, 156 ; visits New York, 157 ; letter in *National Gazette*, 158 ; supports Robert Baldwin, 159 ; chairman of committee on banking, 161, 162 ; moves libel bill, 162, 163 ; letters to Sir John Colborne, 164 ; advocates responsible government, 166, 167 ; appeal to the people of Upper Canada, 168 ; re-elected for York, 169 ; the banks oppose, 170 ; gets committee on state of representation, 171 ; it reports, 175 ; prints journals of House, 172 ; accused of printing libel on House, 175 ;

rouses Upper Canada, 176, 177 ; visits Quebec, 178 ; introduces thirty-one resolutions, 155 ; first expulsion from assembly, 181-201 ; the libel complained of, 182, 183 ; his speech in his defence, 185 ; House refuses committee of inquiry, 201 ; petitions to the governor, 203 ; governor's answer, 203 ; backed up by the people, 204 ; again elected, 205 ; presented by constituents with gold medal, 205 ; second expulsion moved, 207 ; defends himself, 209 ; expelled a second time, 209 ; appeals to electors, 210-13 ; again elected, 215 ; attempt to assassinate, 219 ; *Colonial Advocate* office again attacked, 221 ; his mission to England, 221 ; estimate of Earl Grey, 221 ; his friendship with Hon. Joseph Hume, 222 ; introduces George Ryerson to Lord Goderich, 223 ; offered management of post-office department, 225 ; prepares statement for minister, 226 ; reply to Lord Goderich, 227 ; concessions obtained, 227-30 ; third expulsion, 232, 242 ; secures dismissal of Boulton and Hagerman, 232 ; scheme of post-office reform, 236 ; asks control of post-office revenue for Canadians, 236 ; obtains veto of Bank Charter Acts, 237 ; introduces Rev. Egerton Ryerson to colonial office, 238 ; quarrels with Ryerson, 238 ; publishes *Sketches of Canada and the United States*, 238 ; visits Scotland, 239 ;

## INDEX

pays old creditors, 239; refuses banquets in Montreal and Quebec, 240; left to pay his own expenses, 240; unanimously re-elected for the third time, 242; not permitted to take oath, 242; new election ordered, 244; unanimously re-elected for the fourth time, 244; ejected from the House, 245; governor orders that he be allowed to take oath, 248; takes the oath, 251; again ejected from the House, 252; again expelled, 252; first mayor of Toronto, 255; designs city arms, 256; helps cholera patients, 256; takes cholera, 257; defeated for second mayoralty term, 257; forms Canadian Alliance Society, 258; retires from journalism, 259; estimate of him as a journalist, 260; again elected for York, 261; obtains select committee on grievances, 263; obtains committee on Welland Canal, 264; appointed director, 264; anticipates official report of canal committee, 265; sued for libel, 265; report of committee on grievances, 270; urges responsible government, 279; visits Quebec, 287; meets Papineau, 288; opposes British restraint on trade, 292; anticipates reciprocity treaty, 292; defeated for the House, 308; claims the election was unfair, 309-14; insulted by Tory press, 317; his replies, 318; visits New York, 320; starts the *Constitution*, 320; Declaration of

Independence of Upper Canada, 329, 330; meetings at Doel's brewery, 330-2; becomes agent of convention committee, 332; addresses nearly 200 public meetings, 333-8; advises run on Bank of Upper Canada, 340; second meeting at Doel's brewery, 346; urges seizing arms and proclaiming provisional government, 349; drafts constitution 355; organizes rebellion, 359; warrant out for his arrest, 360; tries to correct Rolph's mistake, 361; his advice disregarded, 362; starts for the city, 363; again proposes to march on the city, 366; meets Head's flag of truce, 367, 368; urges Lount to march into the city, 371; battle of Montgomery's farm, 379; a ransom offered for, 380; account of his escape, 381 *et seq.*; addresses Buffalo audience, 411; meets Van Rensselaer, 412; Head seeks his extradition, 414; occupies Navy Island, 415; president of provisional government, 416; arrested at Buffalo, 424; threats of assassination, 428; abandons Van Rensselaer, 428; exonerated by Van Rensselaer, 430; visits New York and Philadelphia, 433; starts *Mackenzie's Gazette*, 433; no connection with later frontier movements, 439, 444, 446; moves to Rochester, 448; forms Association of Canadian Refugees, 448; tried for breach of neutrality laws, 452; found guilty, 454;

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

- his sentence, 454 ; rigorous treatment in gaol, 455-8 ; released, 459 ; publishes *Caroline Almanac*, 459 ; last issue of *Gazette*, 460 ; his exchange attempted, 463 ; attempts to kidnap him, 464 ; publishes the *Volunteer*, 467 ; poverty, 468 ; moves to New York, 468 ; appointed to Mechanics' Institute, 468 ; publishes *Lives of One Thousand Remarkable Irishmen*, 469 ; publishes the *Examiner*, 470 ; appointed to N.Y. Customs House, 470 ; two books published by, 471, 472 ; goes on *Tribune*, 472 ; Hume's letter to, 475 ; writes to Earl Grey, 479 ; amnestied, 480 ; visits Toronto, 481 ; brings family back, 486 ; elected for Haldimand, 486 ; his relations with George Brown, 487 ; his work in parliament, 492 ; again elected for Haldimand, 497 ; resigns, 498 ; later parliamentary life, 500 ; love of his children, 504 ; Buchanan's proffered friendship, 504 ; Robert Hay's generosity, 505 ; offered office, 505 ; publishes *Mackenzie's Message*, 505 ; friends purchase homestead for, 505 ; financial difficulties, 506 ; declining health, 506 ; death and funeral, 507, 508 ; one of the founders of St. Andrew's Church, 507 ; tributes of the press, 509-23
- MacNab, Sir Allan, committed to gaol by Speaker, 152 ; moves Mackenzie's expulsion, 241 ; admits error, 242 ; leads forces against Navy Island, 417 ; orders cutting out of *Caroline*, 420 ; knighted, 423 ; goes to Brantford, 425 ; seizes Dr. Duncombe's papers, 426 ; goes to Sandwich, 427 ; debate on Rebellion Losses Bill, 489
- M'Afee, Samuel, aids Mackenzie's escape, 400
- McIntosh, John, Mackenzie's brother-in-law, 482 ; house attacked by mob, 482
- McLean, Archibald, elected Speaker, 170
- McLeod, Alexander, charged with murder of Amos Durfee, 423 ; trial and acquittal, 424
- McLeod, General, occupies Point Pelé Island, 430
- Macaulay, J. B., defends destroyers of *Colonial Advocate*, 115 ; offers compensation, 117 ; Mackenzie's opinion of, 118 ; violates secrecy of private letters, 121 ; taunts Mackenzie, 123 ; Mackenzie retaliates, 124 ; writes venomous pamphlet, 125 ; Mackenzie's reply, 126
- Marcy, governor of N. Y., declines surrender of Mackenzie, 414
- Mathews, Peter, executed, 435 ; monument to, 436
- Merritt, W. H., president of Welland Canal, 265 ; sues Mackenzie for libel, 265
- Montgomery, John, banished, 437 ; escapes from Fort Henry, 437 ; president "Association of Canadian Refugees," 448

# INDEX

Moodie, Colonel, shot at Montgomery's hotel, 365

May, Erskine, author of *Constitutional History*, 21, 25; on effect of responsible government 490

Morrison, Dr. Thomas David, defends Joseph Hume, 263; aids Mackenzie's petition, 310; aids Lower Canada, 330; refused to sign Declaration of Independence, 331; at Doel's brewery, 346; his conduct explained, 350; joins rebellion movement, 357

## N

NELSON, DR. WOLFRED, addresses revolutionary meetings, 328; takes the field, 358

*News*, the (Toronto), urges monument to Mackenzie, 521

Newspapers, postage on, 93, 103, 106; their tributes to Mackenzie, 509-23

## O

O'CONNELL, DANIEL, befriends Mackenzie, 221

O'Grady, Doctor, publishes *Correspondent and Advocate*, 259; visits Quebec with Mackenzie, 287; prepares answer to governor, 298; pens Declaration of Independence, 330

*Observer*, Carey's, allowed to print legislative reports, 107; defends Judge Willis, 132, 133

## P

PAPINEAU, LOUIS J., visited by Mac-

kenzie, 288; addresses meetings 328; amnestied, 474

*Patriot*, the, publishes proceedings of House, 174

Peel, Sir Robert, condemns Head for inducing rebellion, 355

Perry, Peter, expenditure of £50,000 road money, 303; defeated for the House, 308

Post-Office, report on, 153; Mackenzie offered control of department, 225; Lord Goderich requests Mackenzie's opinion on, 235; Mackenzie's scheme for reform of, 236; control of the revenue from, 236

Powell, Chief Justice, tries and banishes Robert Gourlay, 92

Powell, John, shoots at Mackenzie, 364; his treachery, 365

Press tributes, paid to Mackenzie on his death, 509-23

Price, James Hervey, at Doel's brewery, 330 rebels at his house, 362

Prince, Colonel, defends Windsor, 447; shoots prisoners, 447; condemnation for, 448

## Q

QUEBEC ACT, the, commentary on, 47; cause of its repeal, 47

## R

RATTRAY, W. J., his opinion of Mackenzie, 5, 6, 12, 26; views of the rebellion, 26; on destruction of *Advocate*, 115; opinion of Head, 307

## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

- Randal, Robert, 138 ; Mackenzie defends, 138 ; goes to England about Alien Act, 139 ; success of his mission, 142, 143
- Read, D. B., author of *The Rebellion of 1837*, 1, 5, 12
- Rebellion, excused, 12 ; history of, 12, 13 ; the *Globe* justifies, 13 ; J. S. Willison's view, 14 ; Lord Durham on the power of rebellion, 14, 15 ; Lord Dalling and Bulwer on, 15, 16 ; Goldwin Smith's view, 18, 27 ; of 1837, how far justified, 23, 24 ; Chamberlain's view of, 28-30 ; Laurier's view of, 30, 31 ; "first low murmur of insurrection," 300
- "Reform Alliance," the, objects of, 495 ; Mackenzie attacks, 496 ; death of, 497
- Reid, Stuart J., *Life and Letters of Lord Durham*, 2, 7, 12, 17 ; on authorship of Durham's Report, 82, 83
- Representation, state of, in U. C., Mackenzie's committee on, 171 ; report of, 175, 176
- Responsible government, Rattray on, 5, 6 ; Lord John Russell on, 19, 20 ; resolution refusing, passed by imperial House, 20 ; Lord Glenelg opposes, 21 ; Erskine May's review, 21 ; Bond Head on, 22 ; Lord Durham justified in demanding, 61, 67-9 ; the "true remedy," 61, 63 ; Durham's Report urges, 81 ; Mackenzie advocates, 148, 166, 177, 244, 279 ; "Seventh Report on Grievances," 273 ; Lord Glenelg on, 279-86 ;
- Lord Russell opposes, 325 ; comes at last, 409 ; Erskine May on value of, 490
- Ridout, George, dismissed by Head, 306
- Robinson, John Beverley (Chief Justice), prosecutes Gourlay, 92 ; reports on union of provinces, 105 ; denies existence of ministry, 274
- Rolph, Dr. John D., defends Judge Willis, 133 ; moves address, 151 ; brings Gurnett to bar, 152 ; appointed executive councillor, 294 ; resigns, 294 ; prepares answer to Governor Head, 298 ; exposes opposition to Mackenzie's petition, 311 ; prevented from speaking in the House, 319 ; speech ridiculing Governor Head's exculpation by House, 323 ; pens Declaration of Independence, 330 ; does not sign, 331 ; to be "sole executive" of rebellion movement, 350 ; changes day of rising, 361 ; meets Mackenzie, 362 ; accompanies flag of truce, 368 ; advises Lount to advance, 371 ; second flag of truce, 371 ; leaves for the U. S., 375 ; on Navy Island, 413 ; declines treasurership, 416 ; amnestied, 474
- Russell, Lord John, opposes elective legislative council, 19 ; opposes cabinet government, 19 ; instructions to Lord Sydenham, 20 ; seizes Lower Canada funds, 324 ; opposes responsible government, 325 ; Union Act, 405

# INDEX

Ryerson, Rev. Egerton, his mission to England, 237; introduced to colonial office, 238; quarrels with Mackenzie, 238

Rymal, Jacob, aids Mackenzie's escape, 390

## S

SELECT COMMITTEE ON GRIEVANCES, Seventh Report of, 26; Mackenzie obtains committee, 263; matters referred to, 269; the committee's report, 270-7; reply of Lord Glenelg, 280; Head's instructions, 280; subjects dealt with, 281-6

Sherwood, Justice Levi P., quarrels with Judge Willis, 131-3

Shorthills affair, the, 440

Simcoe, General, Lieutenant-Governor of U. C., his view of the Constitutional Act, 54

Small, James E., defeated by Baldwin, 159; opposes Mackenzie, 214

Smith, Goldwin, his opinion of Mackenzie, 3; *Canada and the Canadian Question*, 3, 10, 27, 55; *Three English Statesmen*, 18; on revolution, 18; view of the parliamentary government under the Constitutional Act, 54, 55

Stanley, Lord, colonial secretary, 236; discusses post-office, 236; restores Hagerman to office, 234

*Star*, the (Toronto), opinion of Mackenzie, 4; on rebellion, 13; Mackenzie as a reformer, 522

Strachan, Rev. Dr., proposes provincial university, 95

Sutherland, Thomas J., plans occupation of Navy Island, 412; want of discretion, 412; starts for Michigan, 418; reaches Detroit, 427; meets Handy, 427; lands on Bois Blanc Island, 428; arrested in Detroit, 428; taken by the Loyalists, 431; found guilty but released, 431

Sydenham, Lord, on the state of the province, 406; would not have fought against rebels, 407; praises Reformers, 407; opposition from the Family Compact, 407; gives responsible government, 409; surprised people had not sooner rebelled, 477

## T

THOMPSON, EDWARD, defeats Mackenzie, 308

"Toronto Alliance Society," sympathizes with Lower Canada, 327

## U

UNIVERSITY, Provincial, Mackenzie's view on, 95

*Upper Canada Gazette*, official organ, 38, 109

## V

VAN BUREN, PRESIDENT, anxious to avoid war with Britain, 423; issues neutrality proclamation, 444; annoyed at Mackenzie, 445; pardons Mackenzie, 458; his political death blow, 472

Van Egmond, Colonel, commander-in-chief of the rebels, 1837, 360;

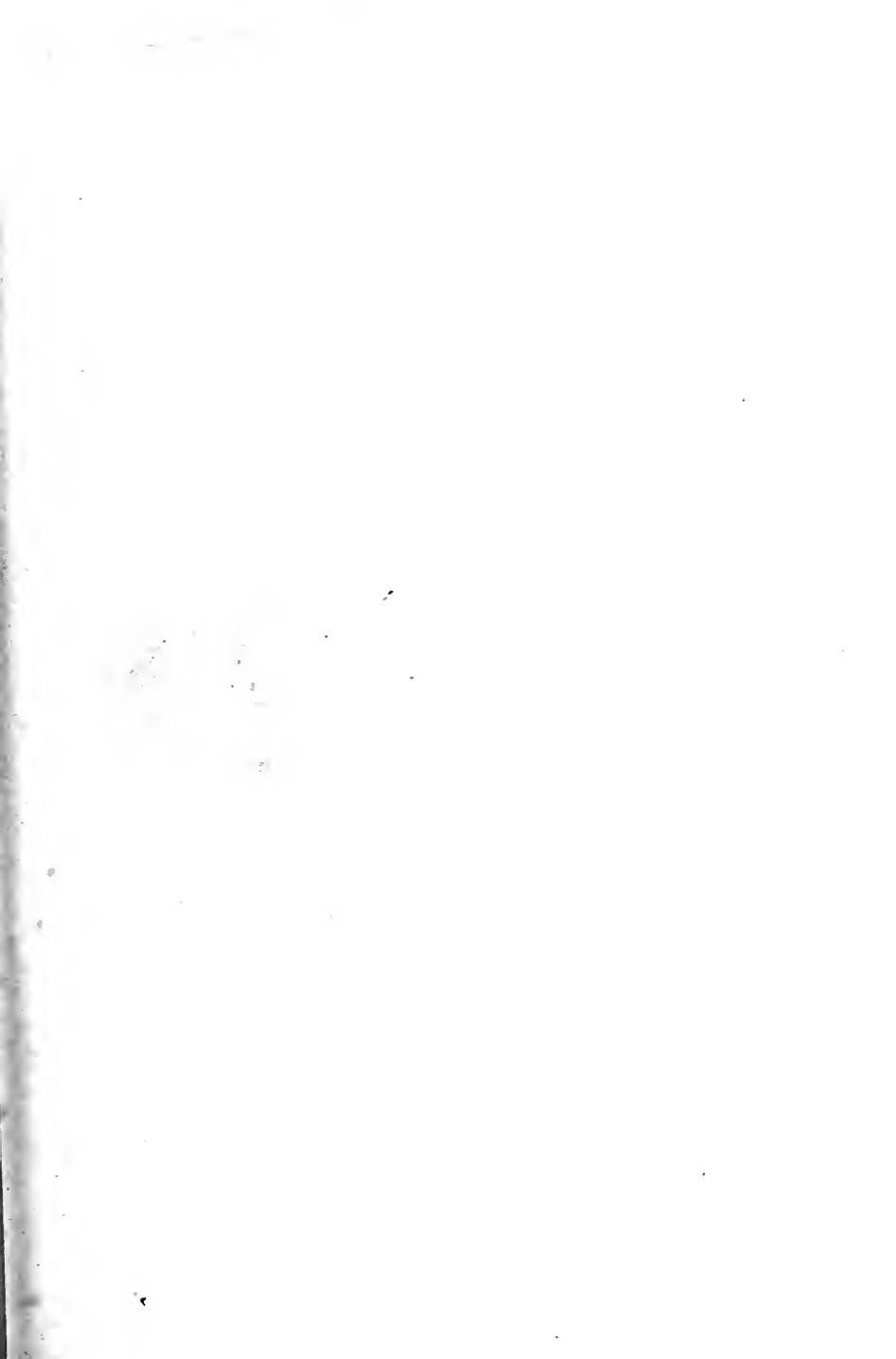
## WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE

- arrives late, 376 ; endorses Mackenzie's plans, 376 ; in charge at Montgomery's, 379 ; captured, 382 ; dies in prison, 382
- Van Rensselaer, Rensselaer, fought under Bolivar, 412 ; given command at Navy Island, 413 ; arrives there, 415 ; his habits, 417 ; evacuates island, 424 ; plans attack on Kingston, 429 ; failure of, 429 ; blames Mackenzie, 430 ; exonerates Mackenzie, 430
- Van Shultz, Colonel, plans attack on Prescott, 442 ; officers oppose plans, 442 ; lands at Prescott, 443 ; battle of Windmill Point, 443 ; surrender, 444 ; execution of, 444
- Volunteer*, the (newspaper), Mackenzie publishes, 467
- WELLAND CANAL, the, Mackenzie's committee to inquire into, 264 ; Mackenzie a director of, 265 ; Francis Hincks on, 265 ; transactions of officials, 266, 267 ; report of committee, 268
- Wilcox, Absolom, aids Mackenzie's escape, 383
- Wilcox, Allan, accompanies Mackenzie in his flight, 384-6
- Willis, Judge, appointed 1827, 130 ; quarrels with brother judges, 131 ; his contention, 131, 132, 133 ; removed, 133 ; large petition in favour of, refused, 133
- Willison, J. S., his opinion of Mackenzie, 14
- Windmill Point, battle of, 441, 444



**LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU**

16.1





*Papineau*

*THE MAKERS OF CANADA*

# LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

BY

ALFRED D. DECELLES

TORONTO

MORANG & CO., LIMITED

1912

*Entered according to Act of the Parliament of Canada  
in the year 1904, by Morang & Co., Limited, in the  
Department of Agriculture*

## CONTENTS

	Page
<i>CHAPTER I</i>	
THE EARLY YEARS OF PAPINEAU . . .	1
<i>CHAPTER II</i>	
A RETROSPECT . . . . .	7
<i>CHAPTER III</i>	
THE PARLIAMENTARY RÉGIME . . .	19
<i>CHAPTER IV</i>	
HIS FIRST STEPS IN POLITICS . . .	27
<i>CHAPTER V</i>	
THE UNION SCHEME OF 1822 . . .	41
<i>CHAPTER VI</i>	
PAPINEAU RETURNS TO CANADA—AT WAR WITH LORD DALHOUSIE . . . . .	55
<i>CHAPTER VII</i>	
PAPINEAU'S TROUBLES WITH HIS FRIENDS . .	65

# CONTENTS

	<i>CHAPTER VIII</i>	<b>Page</b>
LORD AYLMER IN THE PATH OF DALHOUSIE .		<b>75</b>
	<i>CHAPTER IX</i>	
THE NINETY-TWO RESOLUTIONS . . .		<b>85</b>
	<i>CHAPTER X</i>	
"LA CONVENTION" . . . . .		<b>99</b>
	<i>CHAPTER XI</i>	
LORD GOSFORD : NEARING THE DÉNOUEMENT .		<b>111</b>
	<i>CHAPTER XII</i>	
TO ARMS ! . . . . .		<b>127</b>
	<i>CHAPTER XIII</i>	
THE REBELLION AND ITS CAUSES . . .		<b>143</b>
	<i>CHAPTER XIV</i>	
EXILE AND RETURN TO CANADA . . .		<b>163</b>
	<i>CHAPTER XV</i>	
CONCLUSION . . . . .		<b>185</b>
INDEX . . . . .		<b>201</b>



## CHAPTER I

### THE EARLY YEARS OF PAPINEAU

**T**HE reader will perhaps find it somewhat odd to see united under the same cover, the biographies of Papineau and Cartier, men whose careers were so different and whose temperaments had so few points in common ; men, who for a moment, it is true, fought under the same flag, but were afterwards divided forever.

The name of Papineau recalls the tribune who, from 1820 to 1837, is the personification of a whole people ; who defends their most sacred rights ; the melodious speaker who fascinates and overpowers the multitudes with his sonorous sentences, his ample gestures and his commanding appearance—the true sovereign, indeed, of his province of Quebec. Whilst the influence of Lord Dalhousie and of Lord Aylmer does not extend beyond the walls of Quebec and Montreal, Papineau's voice reaches the most remote hamlet of the province. He is the star around which, for twenty years, all the notabilities of French Canadian blood gather, until he disappears in a political storm.

As a living contrast, Cartier represents the man of action, all absorbed in his work, though wanting in those bewitching gifts which captivate the crowd,

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

and attract men as with an irresistible magnetism. His words point directly to the object he has in view, and he never tries to win his audience with rhetorical devices. The first is a speculative personality wedded to theories of his own; the other believes only in what he can handle and put in tangible form. Wisdom and caution take hold more and more of the practical man, when called upon to assume the responsibilities of power, and cause him to weigh beforehand the consequences of his policy. Theories, on the contrary, do not bind firmly to any particular line of conduct, but they too often tend to overexcite the mind of their originators. The work accomplished by Cartier who hated everything that was not positive, is considerable; it is to be found in our statutes and it has left its imprint on our institutions, while Papineau is looked upon by many as a mere agitator, a verbose tribune, a violent critic of his opponents, having left after him nothing but the hollow renown of a great popular orator.

Nevertheless, his name still shines resplendent, a star of the very highest rank in the constellation of our Canadian celebrities; he is still a legendary god, shrouded in a somewhat mysterious halo of glory; the people admire him without having understood him, as if they were hypnotized by the renown of his eloquence which has encircled his memory for over fifty years. For the educated as well as for the masses of our people he is still the prototype of

## ORATORICAL FAME

eloquence and the recognized standard employed in the appreciation of the oratorical powers of the modern speaker. The term "He is a Papineau," constitutes the highest praise which can be conferred in our days on a master of the art of speaking.

If his name is not connected with any radical reform, circumstances rather than his own deficiencies must account for it. Is it not a rather summary proceeding to stamp him as an unpractical statesman of merely negative talent, when it is manifest that opportunity never was furnished him to display his usefulness? As a minister of the Crown, Papineau might have been a very different man from the tribune. Having missed that opportunity, he was left without a chance of displaying the positive qualities of his intelligence. If we admit that the troubles of 1837 hastened the dawn of liberty, then Papineau must be given a large share of credit for its appearance.

Papineau, like most Canadians who have achieved a glorious career, came from the ranks of the people, his ancestors being ordinary craftsmen. As the poet says:—

*"Arbre ou peuple, toujours la force vient d'en bas.*

*"La sève monte et ne descend pas."*

"As for the tree, so for the nation, strength ever comes from below. The sap ascends never to return."

Both our hero and his father were self-made men, with no high-sounding pedigree. But what does it matter? As Dumas, the younger, said: "When a

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

man is the son of his own industry, he can claim to be of a very good family."

His father, Joseph Papineau, broke the tradition of the family and became a notary by profession. He was one of the recognized celebrities of his day, and when England granted us the constitution of 1791, the electors of Montreal honoured him with the important charge of representing them in the legislative assembly, where we find him at the very first session of parliament, in 1792, fighting energetically for the maintenance of the French language, the use of which in the House of Assembly was seriously attacked by the English minority. Bédard and Joseph Papineau stand foremost in the ranks of the members at that time. Garneau, the historian, has left us a portrait of the latter:

"The two athletes about to catch the eye, as foremost in the parliamentary arena, will be Pierre Bédard and Joseph Papineau, whom tradition represents to us as patriots endowed with uncommon oratorical powers. Both were the firmest defenders of our country's rights, yet the most faithful and disinterested advocates of English supremacy; for the royal cause the latter showed himself most zealous during the period of the American revolution. Both sprang from the people; they had received a classical education in the college of Quebec. Mr. Papineau soon became the most notable orator of the two Houses. Majestic of stature, imposing in mien, having a strong and

## FATHER AND SON

sonorous voice, gifted with vehement eloquence and great argumentive powers, he could not but exercise a commanding influence in public meetings. To the latest day of his life, his patriotism was of the purest, and he enjoyed the confidence of his fellow-citizens, who were proud to show a special respect for the grand old man whose erect figure and venerable head, adorned with long silvery hair, still retained the impress of the energy of his youth."

It will not be out of place to mention here the fact that during the American invasion of 1775-6, Papineau, the elder, contributed his share to the defence of the country. He performed the remarkable feat, in company with Mr. Lamothe, of carrying despatches to Governor Carleton from Montreal to Quebec, when the country on both sides of the St. Lawrence was swarming with bands of Americans. The two young militiamen with their despatches concealed in hollow walking-sticks, travelled by night, secreting themselves during daylight in barns or farm-houses, their trip occupying ten days. Papineau, the younger, also rendered good service in 1812 to the British Crown; and the conduct of these two noted Canadians goes a long way to show that their opposition, later on, was directed, not against the Crown but only against colonial misrule.

In 1804 Joseph Papineau became the owner of the seigniori of La Petite Nation, on the north shore of the Ottawa river; there he laid the founda-

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

tion of a settlement and built a home for himself, on l'Ile à Roussin, opposite to what is now the village of Montebello. It was then an unknown spot lost in the forest, which could be reached only by using the mode of travelling employed by the North West *voyageurs*.

Louis-Joseph Papineau having inherited the seigniory, built on the mainland the splendid manor of Montebello, until his recent death occupied by his son, M. Amedée Papineau.

Louis-Joseph was born in 1786; he followed a course of studies in the Quebec seminary, became an advocate, and was elected in 1812, a member of the House of Assembly, where he made his début in the presence of his father, then at the height of his prestige and enjoying the esteem of his countrymen. The latter had prepared for his son a heritage heavy to carry, but with his brilliant gifts and his eloquence, the son was worthy of his sire and added still greater lustre to the already celebrated name. Papineau, the elder, lived until 1841; long enough to witness his son's short but dazzling public career during which he truly reigned over his native province—long enough also to mourn his defeat, in the midst of a crisis which seemed, at the time, the final downfall of the cause for which both had so sternly fought.

## CHAPTER II

### A RETROSPECT

**I**N order to enable the English reader to understand Papineau thoroughly, it is necessary to set before him a rapid outline of certain pages of the history of Lower Canada prior to the appearance on the stage of the famous tribune. The first years following upon the downfall of French rule, constituted for these new subjects of the English king a period of agitation, resembling the death throes of a nation. Exhausted by a long series of wars, ruined by the administration of Bigot, feudal *corvées*, exactions of every kind, and the loss of their crops, the Canadians were face to face with masters who bore them little good-will; from the capitulation of Montreal (1760) until 1774, when the Quebec Act shed upon them the first rays of long deferred justice, they were governed as a conquered people, in the face of treaties, articles of capitulation, and laws of nations.

The royal proclamation of 1764 deprived them of their laws, and the test-oath, sought to be imposed upon them, made our unhappy forefathers outlaws in their own country, on the soil they had wrenched at the price of their best blood from the grasp of barbarism. Murray, who ruled at first with a rod

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

of iron, after a time allowed his rigour to relax, and ended by recognizing none the less cordially when listening with bated breath to the rumbling of rebellion in the bosom of the neighbouring colonies, the noble qualities of the Canadians, and claiming for them royal protection and justice. He held that England could best consult her own interests, if she considered the retention of her new colony as an advantage, by treating the Canadians with justice, and he himself, combining practice with precept, allowed the application of French laws in the matter of landed property and the right of succession.

At the inception of English rule, it was laid down as a principle, that the Canadians had no right whatever to the use of their own laws or their own language. Such was the starting-point, and when we contrast their unhappy position at that time with what we ourselves enjoy to-day, we are tempted to conclude that there coursed through the veins of those who won our liberties for us, some strain of the blood of those Norman barons who on the field of Runnymede wrested from the hands of John the great charter of English liberty.

From time to time the question as to the origin of our rights is discussed amongst us. Some maintain that they spring from the capitulation of Montreal and Quebec, while others tell us that they are the free gift of the Crown of England. The question should be examined dispassionately and



## ORIGIN OF POLITICAL RIGHTS

with a mind free from all foregone conclusions, in the clear light of historical truth. This we propose to do in the following pages, in the hope that our readers will conclude with us that our rights are derived:—(1) From the Treaty of Paris ratifying the articles of capitulation of Quebec and Montreal; (2) From the law of nations, and (3) From our status as British subjects.

Our task will be comparatively easy, for we shall be guided by the opinions of the councillors of George III., and our judgment will rest on their reports, ultimately embodied in the Quebec Act of 1774, which establishes French civil law in Canada, and ratifies the article of the Treaty of Paris (1763) relating to the free exercise of the Catholic religion. This statute is truly the *magna charta* of the French Canadian people. We shall see with what a breadth of view, with what generosity, these enlightened minds of the eighteenth century viewed our position; and it is but seemly that we who are enjoying the fruits of their policy, should do homage to the noble sentiments which placed them above the narrow prejudices of race and sect.

The urgency of discharging our duty in this respect is the more manifest in that we have by no means found everywhere, even during the closing days of the century so proudly claiming to be the age of enlightenment, that impartiality and sense of equity which prevailed in Europe and especially in England, over one hundred years ago. In fact, if

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

we go back to past ages, and find among the Romans notions more just and more in harmony with the law of nations than those which form the political stock in trade of many of our contemporaries, it is truly disheartening to reflect how very slowly the human mind progresses !

According to our conception of our rights they flow from three sources : the law of nations has secured to us civil rights and our customs; the capitulations of Quebec and Montreal are our security for the free exercise of our religion ; and lastly, we owe our political rights to our status as British subjects. Some there are who imagine that to conquer a country by force of arms gives absolute rights over the vanquished. The idea is quite obsolete and would have been scouted by the contemporaries of Sallust and Cicero. "Our fathers," said the latter, "deprived the enemy of nothing but of the power of injury." *Neque victis quidquam, praeter injuriae licentiam eripiebant.* Grotius lays down the principle that conquest confers on the victors nothing but the right of sovereignty over the conquered country. With the change of supreme power there results a change of allegiance for the people who still remain in possession of their laws, their property and their customs. The ministers of George III. were well versed in international law, for they frequently quote Grotius in the course of the debates on the claims of the Canadians. The king's councilors, who, after the conquest, were the first to deal

## THE QUEBEC ACT

with the fate of the Canadians, in order to secure for them better terms and conditions, were Attorney-General Yorke, and Solicitor-General de Grey. Their report (1776) on the condition of the king's new subjects, was to the effect that the French civil law should be restored to the Canadians; and this report was quoted later on in support of their own contention in favour of the same policy, by Messrs. Thurlow and Wedderburne, the successors of those eminent statesmen, in the cabinet of Lord North. This view prevailed with the councillors of George III., and as a consequence, the bill which became the Quebec Act was presented to parliament. The bill was first dealt with by the House of Lords, and reached the Commons on May 26th, 1774. After a debate shared in by Lord North and Messrs. Thurlow, Townsend, Charles Fox, Dunning, Glynn and Wedderburne, the bill became law by a majority of one hundred and five votes to twenty-six.

The attorney-general spoke on behalf of the government. We give the salient points of his speech: "It is expressly stipulated in the capitulations that the Canadians, and especially the religious orders, are to have the full enjoyment of their property, and the free exercise of the Catholic religion." Then coming to the objection by which he had been met, that the royal proclamation of 1764, which, after the Treaty of Paris, established the civil government of Canada, and had introduced the common

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

law of England, he withstood the claims and ridiculed the proclamation, characterizing it as unfair, badly constructed, incoherent and full of absurdities, which must be put an end to.

“Now, sir,” he continued, “a proclamation conceived in this general form, and applied to countries the most distant from each other, not in situation only, but in history, character, and constitution, will scarcely, I believe, be considered as a very well studied act of state, but as necessary immediately after the conquest. But, however proper that might be with respect to new parts of such acquisitions not peopled before, yet, if it is to be considered according to that perverse construction of the letter of it; if it is to be considered as creating an English constitution; if it is to be considered as importing English laws into a country already settled, and habitually governed by other laws, I take it to be *an act of the grossest and absurdest and cruelest tyranny that a conquering nation ever practised over a conquered country.* Look back, sir, to every page of history, and I defy you to produce a single instance, in which a conqueror went to take away from a conquered province, by one rough stroke, the whole of their constitution, the whole of their laws under which they lived, and to impose a new idea of right and wrong, of which they could not discern the means or the end, but would find themselves at a loss, and be at an expense greater than individuals could afford, in order to inform them-

## THE RIGHTS OF THE CONQUERED

selves whether they were right or wrong. This was a sort of cruelty, which, I believe, was never yet practised, and never ought to be. . . .

“My notion is, that it is a change of sovereignty. You acquired a new country ; you acquired a new people ; but you do not state the right of conquest, as giving you a right to goods and chattels. That would be slavery and extreme misery. In order to make the acquisition either available or secure, this seems to be the line that ought to be followed,—you ought to change those laws only which relate to the French sovereignty, and in their place substitute laws which should relate to the new sovereign ; but with respect to all other laws, all other customs and institutions whatever, which are indifferent to the state of subjects and sovereign, humanity, justice, and wisdom equally conspire to advise you to leave them to the people just as they were. Their happiness depends upon it ; their allegiance to their new sovereign depends upon it.”

Thus the English ministers expressed the opinion that the Canadians were entitled to their own civil laws, because being guaranteed the possession of their properties under the Treaty of Paris, it followed as a natural consequence that they were entitled to the use of the laws governing property, and also because it is an essential principle of the law of nations, that a conquered people can only be compelled to change their allegiance. Nearly four-fifths of the members of parliament of that day took this

liberal view of the matter. Would it be impossible to find in the present day people who have not attained to that degree of liberality? In order to render the above demonstration more complete we quote the following extract, in reference to the same question, from the report of Solicitor-General Wedderburne, under date of December 6th, 1772 :—

“Canada is a conquered country. The capitulations secured the temporary enjoyment of certain rights, and the treaty of peace contained no reservation in favour of the inhabitants, except a very vague one as to the exercise of religion. Can it therefore be said that, by right of conquest, the conqueror may impose such laws as he pleases? This proposition is maintained by some lawyers who have not distinguished between force and right. It is certainly in the power of a conqueror to dispose of those he has subdued, at discretion, and when the captivity of the vanquished was the consequence of victory the proposition might be true; but in more civilized times, when the object of war is dominion, when subjects and not slaves are the fruits of victory, no other right can be founded on conquest but that of regulating the political and civil government of the country, leaving to the individuals the enjoyment of their property, and of all privileges not inconsistent with the security of the conquest.”<sup>1</sup>

Some persons express regret and surprise at the

<sup>1</sup> R. Christie, vol. I., page 28.

## ENGLISH LIBERALITY

fact that there was no reference, either in the capitulations or in the Treaty of Paris, to the use of the French language. De Vaudreuil and de Lévis deemed it an unnecessary precaution. Language is part of the human personality, it is a part of the soul, unassailable within the inner consciousness. To assail the language of a people is a crime for which there is no name, an act of high treason against humanity.

Does it follow that our argument, if well founded, relieves the French Canadian of any debt of gratitude towards England? Such is not our view of the matter. England, it is quite true, only did her duty; but for this alone we are deeply indebted to her, when we see so many governments who neither understand their duty nor accomplish it. The mere fact that, having the power to oppress us, she refrained from doing it, entitles her statesmen to our grateful respect. In contrast with the English ministry and its supporters in parliament, there were then many individuals in Canada who would not have hesitated for a moment to make of our country another Ireland and of our people their "hewers of wood and drawers of water."

The opinion of the law advisers of George III. and of his ministers, bearing on the interpretation of the Treaty of Paris and the law of nations applicable to our circumstances, was embodied after many debates in parliament, in the Quebec Act of 1774. Are we not warranted in considering that act which

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

is the outcome of the claims of our forefathers and of the deliberations of those best authorized to speak for England, as the great charter of our liberties, as precious and as inviolable for us as the charter of King John is for the people of England? Does it not consecrate the rights essential to our national existence? The liberties since acquired have grown from it; they are, so to speak, a development induced by a national evolution, retarded at times by various obstacles but never quite arrested. When General Amherst said in reply to De Vaudreuil's representations in behalf of the Canadians, "They shall be English subjects," was he not uttering a threat? Some sought to interpret these words as auguring nothing good for the king's new subjects, but from the covert sense of these words the Canadians have realized unexpected results. It was in virtue of that very status as English subjects that they claimed and secured for themselves the privileges of self-government.

The Quebec Act received the royal sanction in 1774, and in less than one year thereafter, the Canadians, constituting nineteen-twentieths of the population, rallying to the flag under which they had been fairly treated, put an end to the American invasion beneath the walls of Quebec. The policy of the English government was not only just, but it was eminently politic and far-seeing. Her statesmen had made an excellent investment of which they soon reaped the result, and a splendid



## FRENCH CANADIAN LOYALTY

result it was—the preservation of Canada for the British Crown.

The French Canadians have never ceased to make full return for the generosity of the mother-country in their regard: witness their conduct in 1812, when the Americans who had been barely checked in the West, saw their forces wholly defeated in the Province of Lower Canada. Some such facts of our history may be usefully recalled from time to time, for the benefit of certain persons whose prejudices and self-interest make them anxious to throw the veil of oblivion over things redounding to our credit.

27  
13

11  
12

17

10 1000

10 1000

10 10

10 10

10 10

## CHAPTER III

### THE PARLIAMENTARY RÉGIME

THE new constitution, which created only a legislative council appointed by the Crown, was welcomed with enthusiasm by England's new subjects, but it contained no provision enabling them to take part in public affairs. That it should, despite this shortcoming, have satisfied the aspirations of our ancestors need not surprise us in the least. Men do not always feel the privation of advantages which they have never enjoyed. Now, in 1774, the separation from France had existed but fourteen years, and the recollection of the absolute French régime, imparted to the English rule an appearance of comparative freedom. The principles of self-government did not form part of the mental outfit of the Canadian of that day, habituated as he was by monarchical tradition to look to the king for everything, and to await his commands as the child awaits his father's. Hence when the question was first mooted of creating a House of Assembly composed of representatives of the people, to act side by side with the legislative council and the governor, the project met with anything but a cordial reception on their part, for it was to them fraught with all the terrors of the unknown. We have

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

before us the text of the protest forwarded to London on the subject. Embodied in their petition is the following :—

“What we cling to most closely is our religion and the laws regulating our property and our personal freedom, and the Quebec Act of 1774 secured us all that. We dread the establishment of an assembly, in view of the possible consequences of the creation of such a body. Can we as Catholics hope to preserve in an assembly the same privileges as the Protestants? And must not the time come when the influence of the latter will preponderate over that of our descendants? If the proposed changes were carried out, should we ourselves, or should our descendants, enjoy the privileges afforded by the existing constitution? Moreover are we not justified in fearing that the taxes now levied on commerce and paid it is true, indirectly, by the inhabitants of the country, but only in proportion to individual consumption,—may be levied on our properties? Have we not reason to fear that this assembly of representatives may one day sow the germs of discord which would find a congenial soil in the intestinal animosities resulting from the conflicting interests of the old and new subjects of His Majesty?”

These objections to the creation of a representative chamber, manifest a degree of foresight and prescience on the part of those by whom they were formulated, which an English historian felt bound

## DEFECTS OF THE NEW SYSTEM

to notice. The Canadians of 1778, in view of the current of immigration into our country, which the American revolution had created, foresaw that the new comers—the Loyalists—would come into conflict with them on the very first contact. This protest of the Canadians made a certain impression in London, and instead of establishing but one assembly for the whole colony, in accordance with the first proposal, it was decided to divide Canada into two provinces, each having its legislature.

This constitution of 1791, with the governor and the ministry, the legislative council appointed by the Crown and the chamber of representatives, was to be in reality, in its working, but a prolongation of the Quebec Act. On the whole it promised much more than it gave. As a governmental instrument it lacked elasticity. Under its rule the country remained as before, subject to the personal control of the governor. While the assembly held certain powers, they were purely negative, the governor, supported by the legislative council filled with his own supporters, being always able to hold the popular branch under restraint. Deprived of all means of rendering service to the people, the members of the Lower House one day discovered the fact that they had been involuntarily allowed to retain the power of making themselves disagreeable and thwarting the action of the government; they ventured to use and in fact abuse that power.

While the constitution of 1791 wore a threaten-

ing aspect for the Canadians living under the paternal, and absolute régime of the Quebec Act, their successors, with that keenness of vision which seems to be a special quality of the French Canadian in matters political, soon foresaw all the advantages it would be possible for them to derive from a popular chamber endowed with the ordinary attributes of such an institution. Great was their disappointment when the absolutism of the governors made them feel that they were still living under a régime recalling the French *régime du bon plaisir*.<sup>1</sup>

The Canadians entertained for a time the hope of securing the means of wielding effective influence. Up to 1818, the English government provided the funds for the civil list of Quebec. It struck them that if they were entrusted with the payment of the government officials, they would have only to refuse the vote of supplies to the Crown, in order to bring everything to a standstill and compel the governor to respect the will of the assembly. It was an illusion. Yielding to their wishes, the English government granted the assembly, in 1818, the privilege of voting supplies to the Crown, which implied the cognate privilege of a refusal. This expedient did not prove a success, for when it was attempted the governor parried the blow by drawing

<sup>1</sup> The absolute government of Louis XIV. and of his successors knew no law but the king's will; hence the axiom of the old monarchy: *Si veut le roi, si veut la loi*—so wills the king, so wills the law. All the king's ordinances ended with these words: "*Car tel est notre bon plaisir.*"

## AN IRRESPONSIBLE MINISTRY

from the military chest the funds required for the public service. What was lacking in the government system of that day was a provision for points of contact between its several parts. Logically, the ministers should have sat in the chamber, in order to explain to the representatives of the people the policy of the governor, and when necessary, to defend it, and to open up more frequent intercourse between the supreme authority and the people; but there was no law compelling them to be elected; they were not responsible to the people and were accountable only to the colonial office that appointed them.

The difficulties of the situation would have been mitigated had the legislative council intervened as mediator between the assembly and the governor; but far from so doing, it undertook to fan the flame of discord, under the influence of the governor, who filled it with his own friends in order to use it as an ally against the assembly and as an instrument of obstruction.

All things considered, the Quebec Act would for a while have suited the country better. While it did not bestow upon the people self-government, it stated the fact without hesitation or circumlocution, whereas the régime of 1791 was but an arbitrary rule disguised under the features of popular government. The fatal defect of this system was that it yielded to the people a mere semblance of political rights, giving an impetus to the national representa-

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

tion and then tripping it up when it had entered upon its career. To this fatal defect was superadded the abuse of personal power in surrounding the governor with a multitude of courtiers overflowing with interested loyalty and the exclusive recipients of all honours and places of emolument. The same cause produced everywhere the same effects. In Upper Canada the family compact monopolized all the patronage. In our province there were no favours for any but the bureaucrats. But when the partisans of the system were asked to account for the deadlock which ensued, the answer in reference to the western province was "*It is the fault of the constitution,*" but as to Montreal and Quebec, Papineau and his friends were held responsible for the like trouble. Nova Scotia, which was placed under a régime identical with that of the two Canadas, succeeded no better. We need only mention that, in 1840, Lord Sydenham was compelled to proceed from Montreal to Halifax where the governor and the assembly were at loggerheads. Lord Sydenham refers to the subject as follows:—"As in Upper Canada, the population in Nova Scotia has gradually outgrown the monopoly of power in the hands of a few large families."

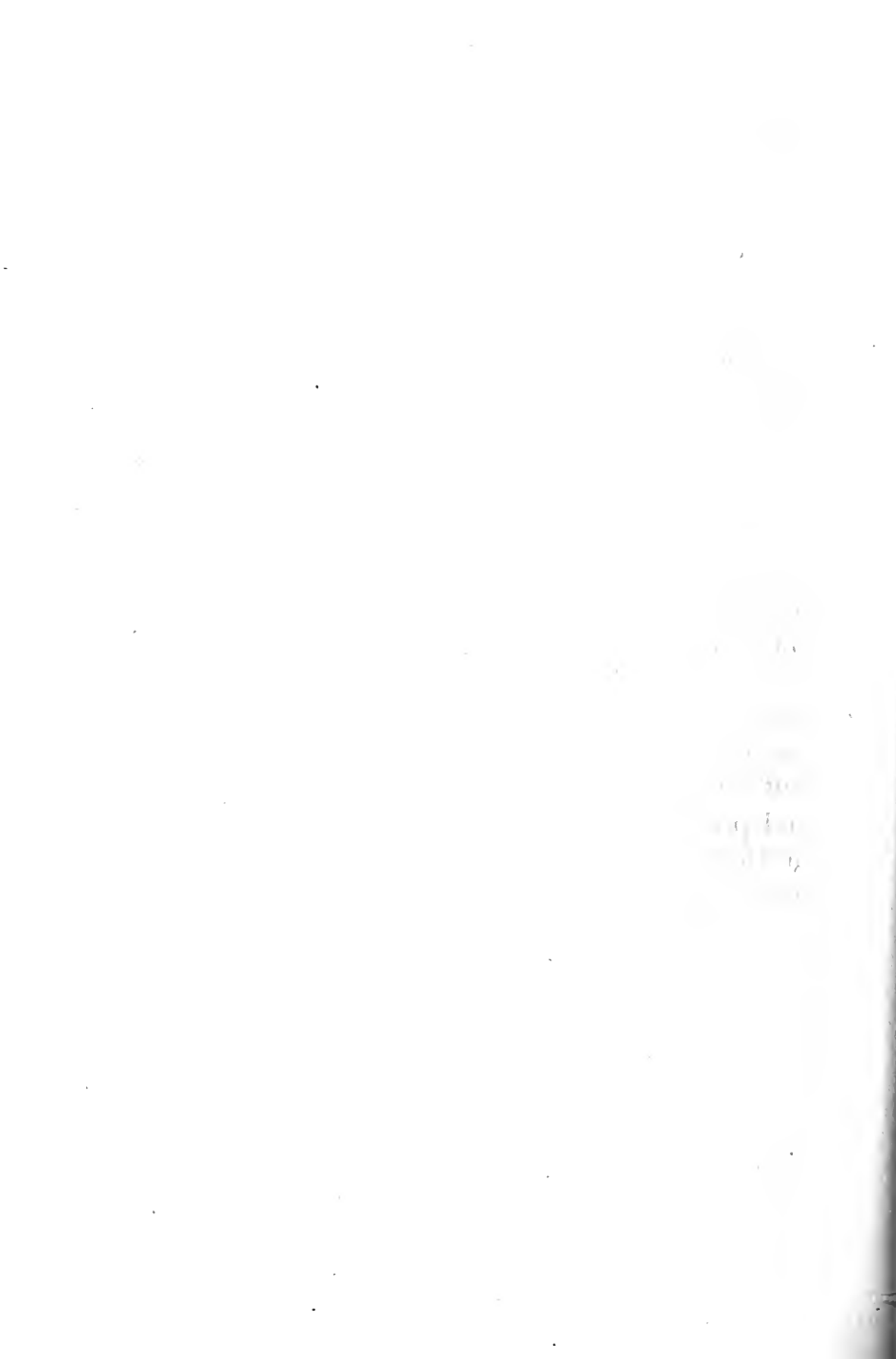
The remedy of the strained and dangerous situation created by the constitution of 1791, was in the hands of the government. Why not obey the dictates of logic which manifestly urged them to carry out their principles to a conclusion? The



## CAUSES OF AGITATION

creation of a representative chamber implied the presence in that body of the advisers of the Crown, responsible to the people for their conduct. The responsibility of ministers is a wonderful instrument of government. It brings into power, in turn, the leading men of the two parties, instead of condemning one party to perpetual opposition, as occurred here before 1837. This alternation of administrations acts as a safety-valve for the overflow of political strife, and affords the relaxation needed amid the extreme tension caused by party struggles.

For want of this mechanism, the faction hostile to the government in Lower Canada rushed into political agitation of a quasi revolutionary character, and dark days saddened the country. Those who had, so to speak, provoked the storm, suffered least from its effects, while the thunderbolt fell on the victims of a state of things for which the sufferers were in no sense responsible. The scaffold and proscription did their work after the uprising of 1837-38, and the constitution of 1791 was forthwith suspended.



## CHAPTER IV

### HIS FIRST STEPS IN POLITICS

WHEN the mind of young Papineau first awoke to political ideas, Lower Canada was passing through that violent crisis which our historians, with no slight degree of exaggeration, have designated the *reign of terror*. Sir James Craig was then governor, and, soldier that he was, administered affairs *manu militari*. Under the previous administration of Sir Robert S. Milnes, the intercourse between the French and English population of Quebec and Montreal had been embittered,—a state of things resulting from a discussion which should not have caused, it now seems, such bad blood. The merchants of those cities had suggested altering the mode of taxation by reducing customs duties and levying a tax on property. The proposed change met with a strenuous opposition in the House of Assembly at the hands of Pierre Bédard, who was a prominent figure in the politics of the day, leading, in fact, the French Canadians. He pointed out that a tax on property would not strike the merchants of the cities, by far the wealthiest class, whilst customs duties reached all consumers. His views prevailed, and hence the irritation of the commercial community which their organ, the

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

Quebec *Mercury*, expressed in a bitter and provoking manner:—"This province is already too French for a British colony. Whether we are at war or in peace, it is essential that we should strive by all means to oppose the increase of the French and of their influence. It is only fair that after a possession of forty-seven years the province should be English." Of course, this expression of opinion was not shared by all those for whom the *Mercury* pretended to speak. It was, however, under such provocation that Bédard, Panet, Blanchet and others, deemed it advisable to establish a paper with the symbolic name *Le Canadien* (1806), and bearing the motto, *Fiat justitia, ruat cœlum*. It was ably edited, and while expressing moderate views, vigorously defended French Canadians against the aspersions of the *Mercury*.

It was in these troubled times that Sir James Craig set foot in Canada, and suspicious as he was, he very naturally conceived the worst opinion of the king's new subjects. Ryland, his secretary and confidential adviser, the bitter enemy of the Canadians, poisoned his mind in regard to Bédard and his friends, and the governor was only too prone to look upon them as dangerous revolutionists. When, therefore, *Le Canadien* dared to criticize his policy mildly, he at once ordered the names of Panet, Taschereau and Blanchet to be struck off the militia list, on account of their supposed relations with that paper. When the assembly, following in the footsteps of the House of Commons, decided to dis-

## A HIGH-HANDED GOVERNOR

qualify the judges and public officers from sitting in parliament, he took a stand against the popular assembly; and when *Le Canadien* condemned his attitude in this connection, that paper was suppressed, and Bédard, Taschereau and Blanchet, its supposed contributors, were sent to jail. Not satisfied with these high-handed proceedings, he likened the conduct of Bédard and his friends to treason because they had asked that the province be allowed to defray the expenses of government. Still, when both these questions, the exclusion of judges from parliament, and defraying the expenses of civil government, were referred to the colonial office, they were decided in accordance with the views of the assembly. Taschereau and Blanchet were released, but Bédard would not leave the prison until the charge against him had been made public and tried before the court. A few months later he was set at liberty, with the understanding that no accusation stood against him.

This was government as it was understood by a governor, in 1810. It was found subsequently that he had not gone the full length of his intentions, for in one of his reports, he advises the English government to deprive the Bishop of Quebec of the appointing of parish priests and to confer that power on the governor; to suspend the constitution of 1791; to make but one province of Upper and Lower Canada, and to confiscate the estates of the Sulpicians.

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

It was also under the administration of this governor, who was naturally morose, and who was, moreover, suffering the ever increasing pangs of a loathsome disease, that the question of supplies is first heard of. Up to 1818, the British government, as we have just said, provided the funds for the expenses of the administration. In 1810, the assembly petitioned the king asking to be allowed to provide for that expenditure, representing that the prosperity of the province was such as to warrant their undertaking the charge. It is seldom that men, or bodies of men, of their own motion, invite the imposition of such a burden. And hence, Craig finds the petition of the Canadians anomalous and contrary to usage, and makes no secret of the vexation it has caused him, for he had a clear intuition of their intentions. It was impossible, however, to ignore or suppress the petition, and he had to forward it to the king, who intimated to the assembly that its request would be granted.

It was not until eight years later that the House was given the privilege of dealing with the budget, and even then, only in an imperfect and incomplete form. From this half measure grudgingly conceded by the government, sprang the long struggle which was not to end until 1837. The motive which impelled the assembly to claim the right to control the supplies—a right inherent in the English system, was in the first place the desire to possess that right, which naturally belonged to them, and then

## LACK OF COHESION

the determination so to use it as to curb the pride of the officials and to punish them for their insolence towards its members. Being under the pay of the executive, these functionaries availed themselves of their independence to cast aside all courtesy towards the representatives of the people.

This glance at the events of Craig's administration lets us into the secret of the policy of the period and of the years that followed, and gives the key to the political situation in the years intervening between 1800 and 1837. At the head of the state was a governor, responsible for his acts to his English superiors only, supported by an executive council devoted to him, and a legislative council made up of his own friends. Next to these powers stood a House of Assembly elected by the people. In any and every country, the essential condition of the normal working of the governmental machine is the existence of a good understanding between all its several parts. Now this condition was nearly always lacking in Lower Canada. The arbitrary character of the governor and the churlishness of the legislative council, with its eagerness to thwart the action of the assembly, produced in the latter body a degree of irritation and exasperation which betrayed its members into lapses such as calm reflection would have made them avoid.

With a man like Papineau, intelligent, proud, and conscious of his own strength, placed under

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

such circumstances as these and forced to give battle unceasingly against overwhelming odds, there could be but one result. Despite all possible efforts to maintain his self-control, under incessant pressure of unremedied abuses, his sense of irritation must grow daily stronger until at length, losing all idea of moderation, he will reject as insufficient, the offer of concessions which at the outset he would have deemed acceptable. Such was the case of Papineau.

He made his appearance in the assembly in 1812, amid the *éclat* of his father's renown, and himself already surrounded with the prestige of his precocious success at college. De Gaspé, a fellow student, tells us in his interesting *Memoirs* that "never within the memory of teacher or student had a voice so eloquent filled the halls of the seminary of Quebec." De Gaspé adds that it was chiefly in the assembly that he had heard Papineau, and that, strange to say, the eloquence of the tribune of the people had never stirred his feelings in the same degree as that of the youthful student. Papineau did not climb to fame by slow degrees. His *début* in the assembly was a masterly effort, and at one stroke won him the highest place.

Upon the advent of Sir George Prevost (1811) quiet was for a time restored to the province, for on the eve of the call to arms for the war of 1812, Papineau and his friends felt that intestinal struggles must be set aside. Following in the footsteps of his



## BECOMES SPEAKER

father, who in 1775 had rendered valuable service to the cause of England in America, Papineau entered the ranks of the militia and served throughout the campaign as captain. We are told that he was an accomplished soldier, as fearless under fire as he proved himself humane and generous after the fight. On one occasion, when escorting at the head of his company a number of American prisoners, he sternly reprimanded his men for taunting their victims by shouting in their ears the strains of "Yankee Doodle." Does not the mere fact that the two Papineaus served under the British flag prove clearly that their opposition was not directed primarily against the principle of loyalty, but against the arbitrary exercise of power and against the tyranny of the governor and his following, leagued together in hostility to the Canadians to prevent them from attaining power and to restrict them in the enjoyment of their rights?

In 1815, Papineau, notwithstanding his youth, was called to the speakership of the House of Assembly in succession to M. Panet. From that date up to 1820—the advent of Lord Dalhousie—we do not find him taking an active part in parliament. Confining himself to the discharge of his duties as speaker, he gave up his spare time to the study of history, mastered the spirit of constitutional law, and assimilated a vast store of knowledge from which he was enabled subsequently to draw at will without exhausting the supply when

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

he became the leader of his party and could no longer have recourse to his books. A perusal of what remains to us of his speeches, which abound with reminiscences, traits and allusions to things of the past, will convince the reader of his extended intellectual culture.

While leaving a free field to his friends in the assembly, he gave full vent to his energies outside. No sooner had his advocacy of the cause of the Canadians placed him in conflict with Lord Dalhousie than it became evident to all that his eloquence had already won for him the mastery of the people of his native province, from the highest in rank and birth to the humblest of her citizens. Men of note, such as de St. Ours, Debartzch, Cuthbert, Bishop Plessis and his clergy, eagerly followed in the wake of Papineau and accepted his leadership.

From 1815 to 1820, when in the full maturity of his powers, he still hoped for the removal of the abuses complained of. Nothing could be easier, he thought, if the government would but take the trouble to avail itself to the full of the advantages afforded by the constitution of 1791. For, strange to say, Papineau then looked upon that constitution as a nearly perfect instrument of government. The opinion he then formulated is worth recording. He pronounced it in Montreal, in 1820, in the course of an eloquent address, which we quote from the *Quebec Gazette*:—

## BENEFITS OF BRITISH RULE

“GENTLEMEN:—Not many days have elapsed since we assembled on this spot for the same purpose as that which now calls us together, the choice of representatives. The necessity of that choice being caused by the great national calamity, the decease of that beloved sovereign who had reigned over the inhabitants of this country since the day that they became British subjects, it is impossible not to express the feelings of gratitude for the many benefits received from him, and of sorrow for his loss, so deeply felt in this as in every other portion of his extensive dominions. And how could it be otherwise, when each year of his long reign has been marked by new favours bestowed upon this country? To enumerate these, and detail the history of this colony for so many years, would occupy more time than can be spared by those whom I have the honour to address. Suffice it then at a glance to compare our present happy situation with that of our fathers on the eve of the day when George the Third became their legitimate monarch. Suffice it to point out the fact that under the French government (both internally and externally, arbitrary and oppressive) the interests of this colony had been more frequently neglected and mal-administered than those of any other part of its dependencies.

“In my opinion Canada seems not to have been considered as a country which, from fertility of soil, salubrity of climate, and extent of territory, might

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

have been the peaceful abode of a numerous and happy population; but as a military post, whose feeble garrison was condemned to live in a state of perpetual warfare and insecurity, frequently suffering from famine, without trade—or with a trade monopolized by privileged companies, public and private property often pillaged, and personal liberty daily violated, when year after year the handful of inhabitants settled in this province were dragged from their homes and families, to shed their blood and carry murder and havoc from the shores of the Great Lakes, the Mississippi and the Ohio, to those of Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, and Hudson Bay. Such was the situation of our fathers; behold the change.

“George the Third, a sovereign revered for his moral character, attention to his kingly duties, and love of his subjects, succeeds to Louis the Fifteenth, a prince then deservedly despised for his debauchery, his inattention to the wants of his people, and his lavish profusion of the public monies upon favourites and mistresses. From that day the reign of the law succeeds to that of violence; from that day the treasures, the navy, and the armies of Great Britain are mustered to afford us an invincible protection against external danger; from that day the better part of her laws becomes ours, while our religion, property, and the laws by which they were governed, remain unaltered; soon after are granted to us the principles of its free constitution

## DUTIES OF REPRESENTATIVES

—an infallible pledge, when acted upon, of our internal prosperity. Now religious toleration ; trial by jury (that wisest of safeguards ever devised for the protection of innocence) ; security against arbitrary imprisonment by the privileges attached to the writ of *habeas corpus* ; legal and equal security afforded to all, in their person, honour, and property ; the right to obey no other laws than those of our own making and choice, expressed through our representatives ; all these advantages have become our birthright, and shall, I hope, be the lasting inheritance of our posterity.

“To secure them, let us only act as becomes British subjects and free men. Let us select as representatives men whose private interest is closely connected with that of the community ; who, warm friends to the country, will attentively examine its wants and make themselves thoroughly acquainted with its constitution ; for those who understand these privileges must value them, and valuing them must be steady friends to whatever may promote the general weal, and inflexible enemies to whatever may endanger it. They will contrive that good laws shall be framed and duly obeyed ; they will see that none shall rise above the laws ; that none shall ever consider themselves so great, or others so little, as to command an obedience not required by law, or to commit injustice with impunity. They will contrive that the administration of justice shall be pure, inexpensive, prompt, impartial, and honoured

by public confidence. They will grant a public revenue proportioned to the means of the country and the wants of the government, distributed with that wise economy which must refuse to solicit what should be reserved for the recompense of meritorious service; but such as will, at all times, enable the government to avail itself of the abilities of persons qualified to fulfil its duties. They will hold sacred the freedom of the press, that most powerful engine, the best support of every wise political institution, and best exciter and preserver of public spirit. They will multiply schools, well knowing that men are moral, industrious and free in proportion as their minds are enlightened. They will leave agriculture and the mechanic arts as exempt from burthens and unrestricted by regulations and privileges as may be expedient; aware that freedom and competition will generally ensure cheap, abundant and improved productions. In fine, they will know, love, and promote the general good of society."

How can we account for this eulogy of the constitution on the part of Papineau, a eulogy utterly at variance with his subsequent bitter criticisms of that same constitution? There is this, in the first place, to be said: had the constitution of 1791 been administered by men determined to be guided by its spirit rather than the mere letter, it would have fulfilled the legitimate aspirations of the country. It did not, as we have already stated, provide for

## CHANGED VIEWS

ministerial responsibility, but even without that most valuable feature, it was still sufficiently elastic and resourceful to form an excellent instrument of government. The essence of the parliamentary system is the power, vested in the representatives of the people, of voting on the levying of the taxes and of controlling the public expenditure. This in the main was what Papineau and his friends justly demanded. Did he hope after the administration of Prevost, during which the war with the Americans put a stop to all intestinal quarrels, and after the comparatively quiet rule of Sherbrooke and Richmond, a time of truce, as it were, in which a peaceful solution was sought for—did he hope to see their successor, Lord Dalhousie, adopt a policy of conciliation? Considered in the light of this hypothesis, Papineau's pronouncement does not clash so harshly as might be thought with his subsequent declarations. It moreover reflects the highest credit on himself and on his friends, for it goes to show that he was during several years neither an irreconcilable, nor an obstinate adversary of the government. If his mind one day succumbed to exasperation, it was after eight years of hostility persistently carried on against our people by Lord Dalhousie, with the evident design of crushing us; it succumbed during the administration of Lord Aylmer, who was still more aggressive than his predecessor, more determined to curb the House of Assembly, and to indulge in ceaseless provocation

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

with all the aggravating circumstances suggested by his determination to be unfair and arbitrary.

The *Lex talionis* for which there is no justification in political matters, seemed a perfectly legitimate weapon to a body of men who felt themselves to be persecuted in their aspirations and in their passionate efforts to secure for themselves all the liberties they were entitled to claim as British subjects. Stung to fury by their wrongs, they assumed the name of *Patriotes*. Their judgment became clouded under the breath of intolerance; they lost the true sense of the situation, and convinced that there was nothing more to be hoped for from the government, which had been so long deaf to their complaints, they one day went to the length of refusing to accept at its hands an ample remedial measure.



## CHAPTER V

### THE UNION SCHEME OF 1822

WITH the advent of Lord Dalhousie we enter upon the acute stage of Canadian politics. A man of distinction and taste and high intellectual culture, Lord Dalhousie was the founder of the Literary and Historical Society of Quebec. He it was also who caused to be erected in memory of Wolfe and Montcalm the well-known monument seemingly symbolical on his part of that spirit of conciliation, which was by no means apparent in his conduct towards the majority of the people of the province.

He lacked force of character and fell under the influence of the coterie who reigned at Château St. Louis and who, under cover of the governor, had ruled and exploited our province for forty years. Ryland, secretary to Craig, was the prototype of those gloomy, cold-blooded fanatics, who, under the pretext of safeguarding the interests of England, strove in every way to destroy the rights of the French Canadians. History will refuse to admit even the plea of sincerity in their behalf. Their contempt for our people who were so often made the victims of their overweening self-conceit, was probably not as genuine as it seemed to be. What

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

the coterie craved above all things was to retain power in their own hands with a view to the profits, honours and emoluments to be derived therefrom, and of which they availed themselves to the utmost limits of abuse.

With the first session of parliament called by the new governor (1820) the conflict between the council and the assembly burst forth more furiously than ever. Papineau having insisted on the budget being voted item by item, in order to ensure complete control of the public monies by the representatives of the people, the council rejected the bill, affirming its assumed right to participate in voting the supplies, and its resolve to reject the civil list divided into chapters. This amounted to a reprimand administered to the House, at which the latter took umbrage and made answer that the council could not dictate to it as to the manner of voting the supplies, which was its own exclusive privilege. Unfortunately, Lord Dalhousie took sides with the council instead of suggesting a compromise in order to put an end to the dead-lock from which there seemed to be no escape.

Did Dalhousie witness the conflict with a certain degree of satisfaction? A despatch from Lord Bathurst would seem to indicate that such was the case. The instructions of that minister to the new governor assume, when carefully examined, the features of a hideous machination devised to provoke an upheaval in the two chambers, which

## OFFICIAL ABUSES

might be used as a proof that all government was impossible in the province. In order to overcome the deadlock thus brought about, the union of Upper and Lower Canada would then be insisted on as the supreme and last means of restoring order. . . . Machiavelli himself could not have shown keener craft.

The struggle between the council and the assembly was not the only cause of irritation. All the abuses which absolutism fosters swarmed in the most aggravating form. Favouritism of a bare-faced character prevailed. Here was to be found a friend of the government who was at one and the same time a legislative councillor and a judge; a parliamentary official sitting on a magisterial bench; a lieutenant-governor, while living out of the country, in receipt of a salary without discharging the duties of his office; elsewhere, a judge, who was paid by the state, compelling litigants to pay him fees. Some of these abuses, which were made known to the governor, were of a character so outrageous that Dalhousie, in spite of his partiality, promised to provide a remedy.

While Papineau and his friends were clamouring for a reform of these evils, they learned with dismay and indignation that steps were being taken in London to strike a fatal blow at the life and liberties of their race. A bill had been introduced in the House of Commons, making a single province of Upper and Lower Canada, abolishing the use of

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

the French language, and giving an enormous preponderance to the representation of the English-speaking element in our parliament. The bill would have gone through all its several stages at Westminster but for the intervention of Mackintosh, Labouchère and Hume, who indignantly protested against the measure, and put its authors to shame by demonstrating the utter injustice of so gross an attempt on the liberties of British subjects, of men, they might have added, who on two occasions had saved Canada for England. The majority sided with our defenders, and called upon the government to defer the recording of our death sentence until the following session.

Prompt action now became a matter of urgent necessity in order to avert the danger which was upon the province. Forthwith, at Quebec, Montreal and Three Rivers, at Papineau's suggestion, committees were organized to secure the signing of a petition in opposition to the proposed union; within a few weeks the number of signatures had reached sixty thousand. Meantime the question as to the proper person to lay the monster petition at the foot of the throne was no sooner asked than one and the same answer fell from every lip: "Papineau!" He resisted the general wish for some time, but his great devotion to the public interests made him feel that he could not shirk the duty so clearly incumbent on him, in view of his position as leader of the Liberal party in the province.

## PRESENTING A PETITION

At this date (1822) Papineau had attained the culminating point of his power; his influence, everywhere acknowledged by all classes, held undisputed sway. Not only did the people look up to him as their leader, but the clergy, with Bishop Plessis at their head, proclaimed him the man of the hour. M. Charles de St. Ours, a man of great weight, the heir of a distinguished family, whose ancestors had won fame on many a battlefield, wrote to Papineau as follows :—"The Canadians must do their utmost to parry the blow with which the country is threatened, and it is to be hoped they may succeed in doing so, in spite of the intrigues of our enemies. I see with great satisfaction that all eyes are turned towards you, in the hope that you will present our petition in England. I know no one more worthy and more capable than yourself of undertaking that honourable mission." An eminent and influential ecclesiastic, a member of the faculty of the seminary of Quebec, Rev. Joseph Demers, also urged him strongly to proceed to England, saying :—"Let me beg and implore you not to abandon our poor country until we shall have conquered in the fearful struggle now upon us. I know it involves a great sacrifice on your part, but I know also that such sacrifices have long been nothing to you." Solicitations such as these poured in upon him from all parts of the country. There lived at that time, at St. Charles, on the Richelieu, a man of much wealth for that day, gifted with intellectual powers

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

of a high order, and wielding great influence throughout the whole region between Sorel, Montreal and St. Hyacinthe: this was M. Debartzch, brother-in-law of M. de St. Ours, and the father of young girls then renowned for their great beauty and mental gifts, and who subsequently became Mesdames Kierskowski, Rottermund, Drummond and Monk. He writes to Papineau as follows:—"I ought not to ask you again, but when I reflect on your great ability and your genuine patriotism, I feel constrained to do so, in spite of myself. Do accept this honourable mission, which you alone can worthily fulfil."

Papineau found allies also amongst the English-speaking citizens, several of them persons of high standing, who took sides with our people, as for instance: James Cuthbert of Berthier, a member of the council and proprietor of an important seigniory,—Leslie, and John Neilson, proprietor of the *Quebec Gazette*. The latter was also selected as a delegate to London. The flagrant injustice of the oligarchy that ruled the province had long excited the indignation of Neilson, and on every possible occasion, both in parliament and at public meetings, he took sides with the French Canadians. His sound judgment and moderation of character enabled him to give wise counsel to the *Patriotes* and to moderate the passions of the more violent amongst them. The proposed union measure of 1822 he looked upon as a peril to the country, and

## VOYAGE TO ENGLAND

he laboured as earnestly as Papineau to avert it. "The country," he writes, December 12th, 1822, "will not submit to the injustice planned against us by a handful of *intrigant* who want to sacrifice to their own ambition the happiness of the Canadian people. These men whom chance has made so great in this country, and who would have remained in obscurity anywhere else, might well have remained content with the numberless preferments they now enjoy, without undertaking to rob the people of our province of their rights. Blinded by the most unfounded and unreasonable prejudices against our most cherished institutions, and nourishing as they do, in their hearts, and even openly manifesting, utter contempt for the peculiar usages and manners of the Canadian people, they certainly are guilty of an abuse of power calculated to endanger the peace and tranquillity of the country." It is manifest from this that the excesses and insolence of the bureaucracy had excited the indignation of Neilson quite as much as that of Papineau and his friends. But who were the handful of *intrigant* to whom Neilson alludes? They were the merchants of Montreal and Quebec and the bureaucracy, who had suggested to Ellice, a resident of London, very influential with the colonial minister, and proprietor of the seigniory of Beauharnois, the idea of uniting the two Canadian provinces, with the avowed object of annihilating the influence of the French.

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

Papineau and Neilson took ship at New York for Liverpool in the month of January, 1822. On February 25th following, taking up their quarters at 28 Norfolk Street, Strand, they sent notice of their arrival to the secretary for the colonies, Lord Bathurst, craving an audience in order to submit to him the protest of the French Canadian people against the union, and also the petition of six thousand freeholders of Upper Canada in opposition to that measure.

Papineau produced a most favourable impression in London. His high intellectual culture, his ease and grace of manner and his imposing mien, insured him a cordial welcome in the political world. "Can this be," men seemed to ask themselves, "one of those who have been described to us as steeped in ignorance and more like savages than civilized beings in their mode of living?"

A more extended knowledge of Canada would have made it manifest to the leading minds in London that there were then in Quebec, Montreal, and every other centre of any importance in the province, men of high breeding and refined manners, who would not have been out of place in the best *salons* of Paris or London. Great refinement of manner and old-time courtesy were the characteristics of the Canadians of old, and these qualities were to be found not only among the seigniors and persons of education, such as the officials and merchants and the clergy, but among the simple



## THE BILL WITHDRAWN

*habitants* who tilled the soil. This it was that made Andrew Stuart declare, "The Canadians are a race of gentlemen."

During their residence in London the conspiracy against the French Canadians became manifest to Papineau and Neilson in all its hideous malice. The peril had not been exaggerated; on the contrary, they found that, at Ellice's suggestion, the ministry had resolved to push forward the Union Bill not by forced marches, but quietly throughout all its stages. A singular incident had revealed the plot. There was then in London a man named Parker, a personal enemy of Ellice, who had quarrelled with him about a matter of business. Parker, who was cognizant of Ellice's design, determined, for vengeance sake, to thwart it, and promptly revealed the plot to Sir James Mackintosh and Sir F. Burdett. The latter had no difficulty in demonstrating the infamous character of this attempt to alter the constitution of Canada, in order to punish the French Canadians for crimes imputed to them on charges which they had not been given an opportunity to disprove.

It was an easy task for our delegates to confound the calumniators of our people, and the ministry undertook to drop the bill, which was destined, in the minds and hopes of its promoters, to consolidate and perpetuate their own ascendancy. A letter of Papineau's gives us a portion of the petition of the partisans of the union in Montreal and Quebec.

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

The following extracts therefrom will not be found inappropriate. We venture to say that the fair-minded reader will be struck with the degree of audacity and blind passion which must have dominated in the minds of men who sought to enslave a whole people on such futile grounds and reasoning.

"The fertile source of all the evil complained of," said the petitioners, "is to be found in the Constitution of the Assembly. Hence the ever recurring difficulties between the several Branches of the legislature. Hence it is that the Powers of the Executive Government for the improvement of the Colony have been paralyzed; hence the extension of British settlement has been impeded; the increase of the British population . . . prevented . . . all commercial enterprise crippled . . . and the Country remains with all the foreign characteristics which it possessed at the time of the conquest. It is in all particulars, French. The adoption or rejection of the Union will determine whether, under the disguise of a British dependency for some time longer, it is to be forever French. . . . The unreasonable extent of political rights conceded to this population . . . with a sense of their growing strength, has already had the effect of realizing in the imagination of many of them their fancied existence as a separate nation, under the name of La Nation Canadienne. . . . A system of government which in its ulterior consequences must expose Great Britain to the mortification and disgrace of having

## IN FAVOUR OF UNION

at immense expense, reared to the maturity of independence, a foreign, conquered colony, to become the ally of a foreign nation and the scourge of its native subjects, ought not to be persisted in.

“The inhabitants of Upper Canada would imperceptibly be induced to form connections with their American neighbours, and, being unnaturally disjoined from Lower Canada, would seek to diminish the inconveniences thence resulting by a more intimate intercourse with the adjoining States, leading inevitably to a union with that country. The injury produced by the French character which now belongs to the Country, and the predominance of French principles . . . without a union of the provinces, must be aggravated by the augmented influence of those causes arising even from a recent Act of liberality on the part of the mother country. According to the colonial system recently adopted, a direct intercourse between Lower Canada and France is now permitted. The immediate effects of this will be to give increased strength to those national feelings and prejudices which, during sixty years of interdicted communication with France, have remained unabated, and to render more inveterate the causes of disunion between His Majesty's Subjects in Lower Canada.

“Notwithstanding the unlimited generosity which had been displayed toward the conquered, by confirming to them their laws and their religion, by admitting them to a participation in the Govern-

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

ment and in all the rights of British Subjects . . . no advance had been made in effecting a change in the principles, language, habits, and manners which characterize them as a foreign people. . . . The French Canadian population, for a short period of time after the adoption of the present constitution, partly from incapacity to exercise the political powers with which they had become invested, partly from some remaining deference for their English fellow-subjects, used their ascendancy with moderation, but this disposition soon yielded to the inveterate anti-British prejudices, and the English, with the exception of a small number who have been elected rather for the sake of appearances than from any regard for their qualifications, have been excluded from the House of Assembly. For many years hardly one-fourth of the representatives were English. At the present time, out of fifty members, only ten are English. . . . As illustrative of the spirit by which this body has been actuated . . . no person of British origin has ever been elected Speaker."

After quoting these extracts from the Unionist petition, Papineau exclaims:—"Are not these accents of rage and hatred? Are these the sentiments we might look for from brothers-in-arms with whom we have so recently striven (1812) to repulse a common enemy? Will the provincial government still refuse to sign the petition against the Union? Or will they, with their usual imbecility, when the whole country is crying out with indignation against

## ELLICE AND PAPINEAU

this infamous act of violence, isolate themselves and sever their interests from those of the country which it is their duty to govern and not to outrage?"

Ellice and Papineau met by accident, at the residence of Burdett. The former availed himself of the opportunity to question his political adversary as to whether the ministry had promised him to abandon this measure. Papineau replied in the affirmative, whereupon, Ellice became furiously angry and declared that they had broken their pledge to him, and that if they persisted in refusing to fulfil their undertaking, he would publicly denounce them.

In spite of Ellice's protests, the Union Bill was well and duly shelved in 1823, and filed away in the records of Downing street, whence it was to be brought forth eighteen years later. Ellice and the Montreal and Quebec merchants were to carry their point in the end, and conquer soon after their defeat.



## CHAPTER VI

### PAPINEAU RETURNS TO CANADA—AT WAR WITH LORD DALHOUSIE

ON his return to Canada in November, 1823, Papineau wrote forthwith to Neilson, who had been compelled by important business matters to return before him. Neilson had no sooner arrived than he became the object of a shabby persecution on the part of Lord Dalhousie, and was deprived by him of the government patronage. "I am much grieved," Papineau writes to his friend, "to find on my return home, that our wretched Administration, instead of appreciating the services which a man of your high integrity would be in a position to render to them, if their policy were just, have undertaken to persecute you. The first adventurer who is willing to-day to flatter an incapable such as the Governor, a vain creature such as the Chief Justice [Sewell], a contemner of all the rules of courtesy such as Richardson [a legislative councillor who had insulted the French Canadians], and some others of like character, will be received into the favour of these men—as they received Henry and other such knaves—in preference to men of high character, ability and influence, who would refuse to approve of their odious acts of usurpation."

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

Such was the spirit in which Papineau once more rushed forward to the assault against the crying abuses he had already so often attacked, and which owed their prolonged existence to the fact that so many individuals found profit in maintaining them.

It looked as though the government were playing into Papineau's hands. He had, time and again, pointed out the danger of not exercising control over the public expenditure, of not providing for responsibility on the part of public officials. These representations had hardly been uttered again on his return, when Lord Dalhousie was compelled to inform the House that the receiver-general, Caldwell, whose extravagance was a public scandal, had appropriated to his own use £96,000 of the public monies. Taking this enormous defalcation as the basis of his attack, Papineau, in the House, assailed the governor in a speech which, as we are told by the historian Bibaud, recalled to one's mind by its violence the Philippics of Demosthenes and the fierce invectives of Cicero against Catiline.

Violence of language is not argument, but does not the government at this time seem to have been acting in open defiance of decent public opinion, in allowing this unfaithful official, guilty of embezzlement and liable to imprisonment, to remain at liberty? It was an insult to the people, who had been audaciously robbed; an outrage to public morality, and a pilfering which recalled the crimes of Bigot, with the difference that the latter had



## THE FINANCES

been called to account before the courts by Louis XV., notwithstanding that that king was not himself overburdened with scruples. Time and again had the assembly denounced the incredible negligence of the government, in failing to require from Caldwell the ordinary security for the honest discharge of his duty. And yet, strange and incredible as it may appear, his successor was also appointed without being compelled to find sureties for the faithful administration of his office !

Naturally enough the conclusion of Papineau's address was an appeal to the House to refuse to grant supplies. Vallières, who had come to terms with the governor, argued against Papineau's motion and succeeded in defeating him. A rivalry thus sprang up between the two men, and they will thenceforth be found acting at times in antagonism. The supply bill was nevertheless rejected by the legislative council on the ground that it reduced the vote for salaries to civil servants by twenty-five per cent. This was an additional fault to be scored against the Upper Chamber.

The eternal question of the finances held the first place during Dalhousie's term, in the councils of the French Canadians. Appeal after appeal was heard in London in relation thereto ; but in every instance these were decided unfavourably to Papineau, whose temper must have been sharply tried by such a reply as this from the secretary of state for the colonies :—"The claims of the House of Assembly

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

are unreasonable ; it is the proper term to apply to them, for they are contrary to the law, and that body has violated a principle of constitutional law by refusing to appropriate any portion whatever of the large revenue it controls, unless the permanent revenue of the Crown be given up." This was going too far, and Downing street exaggerated the shortcomings of the House of Assembly. A written constitution is a very elastic instrument of government and in the hands of a man of ability may be made to adapt itself to the exigencies of the situation. At the period herein dealt with, Nova Scotia regulated her expenditure as she thought proper, without the intervention of the executive. Papineau writing to Sir James Mackintosh informs him that in an interview with Lord Dalhousie he said to the governor:—"When you were governor of Nova Scotia, you allowed the assembly to vote the supplies item by item, while you refuse to tolerate this procedure here." His Lordship said in reply: "I was about to alter that system when I was called to Quebec." This explanation of the governor's was a pitiful subterfuge which shows clearly that he was not actuated by principle but simply and solely by the wish to keep the reins of power in the grasp of the coterie who had so long profited by its abuse.

What the assembly sought to attain by securing control of the supplies was the removal of the abuses which prevailed from top to bottom in every department of the government, the cumulation of

## OFFICIAL ABUSES

offices, the sinecures—such as the lieutenant-governorship of Gaspé the incumbent of which was out of the country, and the post of lieutenant-governor of Lower Canada.

In the executive council consisting of ten members, there sat seven members of the legislative council, the attorney-general and two clerks of the legislative council. The president of the executive council, Jonathan Sewell, also wore the ermine of the chief justice and president of the court of appeal. Beside this body strutted a swarm of sinecurists, including two lieutenant-governors whose faces had never been seen by those they were supposed to govern. Of the members of the executive council, but one was a native of the province of Lower Canada, the others hailed from the neighbouring provinces.

No responsibility attached to their acts in the colony, for their instructions came from the king. This permanent body was in point of fact the embodiment of authority, for it possessed the covert but absolute control of the finances. No sooner did a new governor arrive than he fell as a matter of course into the hands of the executive councillors, who so influenced and indoctrinated him as to make him an instrument in their hands. Full of prejudice against the French Canadians and puffed up with pride and self-conceit, they constantly treated with scorn and contempt men superior to themselves in intellect and often in birth.

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

The legislative councillors followed in the footsteps of the members of the executive in their deplorable work. Thus it is that we find that legislative body on one occasion in their anxiety to please the executive uttering with full solemnity the constitutional heresy embodied in the following resolution :

“Resolved that the Resolution of the Assembly in the words following :—‘*Resolved, that this House will hold personally responsible His Majesty’s Receiver-General and every other person or persons concerned, for all monies levied on His Majesty’s subjects in this Province, which may legally come into his or their hands and be paid over by him or them under any authority whatsoever, unless such payments be or shall be authorized by an express provision of law,*’ is an attempt to raise their separate vote above the law by dictating to an officer who is constitutionally bound to act according to his instructions from the *Executive Government* and not from either of the two Houses of the Legislature.”

It was for a moment hoped that an understanding had been arrived at on this vexed question. In 1825, Lord Dalhousie being in England, Sir Francis Burton, lieutenant-governor, laid before the House a budget prepared in accordance with its wishes. This was promptly voted amidst the applause of the whole country. “At last,” people exclaimed, “here is the question which has caused so much discord and excited so much angry feeling, banished from the political arena.”

## CONTINUED STRIFE

This satisfaction was of short duration; our people had forgotten the hostility of the colonial office, and Lord Dalhousie, in the session of 1826, intimated that Sir Francis Burton had exceeded the limits of his power and that the House must recur to the system it had so often refused to accept. To withdraw a concession once made, even though made in error, is an act of bad policy, dangerous, and fraught with provocation. As a matter of fact it would have been extremely difficult to point out a single abuse consequent on the budget of 1825. The governor's course was a challenge and a defiance, and the House expressed its indignation by a fresh refusal to comply with his wishes as to the mode of voting the monies required for the ends of the government.

At the session of 1827 the national party entered the House stronger than ever; the general elections held in the previous July had added to the number of Papineau's followers. He stood forward as the avowed adversary of Lord Dalhousie, and the struggle between the two men assumed the character of a personal war. Hence, when the House elected Papineau speaker, the governor refused to confirm the election. The members refused to cancel the election, and the governor dissolved parliament in a speech filled with bitter reproaches addressed to the House of Assembly.

"I come to close this session of the Provincial parliament, convinced by the state of your proceed-

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

ings, that nothing likely to promote the public interest can be now expected from your deliberations. Gentlemen of the legislative assembly, it is painful to me that I cannot speak my sentiments to you in terms of approbation and thanks. I have seen seven years pass away without any conclusive adjustment of the public accounts. I have seen the measures of the government directly applicable to the wants of the province thrown aside, the forms of parliament utterly disregarded; and in the session, a positive assumption of executive authority instead of that of legislative, which last is alone your share in the constitution of the state."

Papineau's spirit revolted against these reproaches which assumed, in his mind, the character of so many insults offered to his country in the person of her representatives. Stirred by his eloquent words the whole province was aroused, and an outburst of indignation answered his appeal. Resolutions condemning the governor were adopted and petitions addressed to the English government were signed. As in 1822, it was Papineau who directed the great national protest. The petitions set forth the grievances we have just described, but they dwelt more strongly on certain abuses. Thus, while complaining of the usurpation of authority by Lord Dalhousie in spending the public monies without the authorization of the House, the petitioners pointed out to His Majesty that more than one half of the revenue was absorbed in paying the

## ANOTHER APPEAL

salaries of the officials, and that the expenditure under that head was increasing in face of a declining revenue. At that time, moreover, public instruction was cramped and paralysed, and money was needed in order to place the system on a proper footing. For thirty years the assembly had striven to secure the revenue derived from the estates of the Jesuits. "The properties confiscated from the Order had been granted to them by the kings of France for the purposes of education; let these estates be devoted to the purpose for which they were originally granted." Such were the reasonable demands of the petitioners. As a matter of course, the petitions are filled with violent attacks on the legislative council, "that body composed for the majority of men who are dependent for their own and their families' support on salaries attached to their positions, which they hold only at the governor's good pleasure." John Neilson was again selected to bear the complaints of the French Canadians to London. They relied upon his experience and his moderation and upon the fact that he was a Scotsman, sharing the opinions of the French Canadians, and could not be suspected of race prejudice. M. Cuvillier and D. B. Viger accompanied him. Our delegates found their mission an arduous task and a cruel ordeal, struggling as they did against indifference, contempt, or ill-concealed hostility. By dint of persistent pleading, however, they succeeded in putting a committee of the House of

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

Commons in possession of the facts of our case; and that committee after considering the grievances complained of, declared: "That the French Canadians must not in any way be disturbed in the exercise and enjoyment of their religion, their laws, and their privileges; that although the right to appropriate the revenue collected under the Act of 1774 belonged to the Crown, the committee were of opinion that the true interests of the provinces would be best promoted by placing the collection and expenditure of all public revenues under the control of the House of Assembly; that the majority of those composing the legislative council should not consist of persons holding office at the good pleasure of the government; and that as regards the judges, excepting the chief justice only, it would have been better that they should not have taken part in the affairs of the House."

The ministry did not press the adoption of this report in the House of Commons. It did not help our delegates much, except as eliciting a mild expression of opinion. It settled nothing and left matters in *statu quo*. True the government put an end to Lord Dalhousie's administration, but the mere removal of the official head was of no avail, so long as the abuses continued to exist. It was not the governors that needed changing, but the spirit by which they were animated and which had its inspiration in London.



## CHAPTER VII

### PAPINEAU'S TROUBLES WITH HIS FRIENDS

AS Papineau became more deeply involved in the struggle undertaken against the governor, the executive council, and the legislative council, difficulties, sufficient, one would think, to exasperate him and drive him to despair, sprang up on every hand. His enemies grouped together in solid phalanx, presented an unbroken front to his attack, while his friends wavered in their allegiance, and the result of division and jealousy became manifest in their ranks.

Quebec and Montreal were almost at loggerheads. As early as 1822 this tendency to a scattering of forces had appeared. The selection of Papineau and Neilson as delegates to treat with the English government, had not found approval in Quebec. On this subject, M. Jérôme Demers, an ecclesiastic, writes to him from Quebec: "I am by no means pleased to learn that you have been selected to take the address to England. All your Quebec friends are filled with anxiety about you. All are, of course, convinced that the interests of the Province could not be entrusted to better hands, nor would they have ever thought of others had you not been Speaker of the House. They

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

cannot conceive how you could desert your post without the Consent of the House. They think you will probably on reaching England find there letters from Canada blaming you for your so-called desertion."

So much for his friends, but the envious had also to be dealt with, and these were the chief cause of anxiety to M. Demers. But let us further quote his letter. He says: "Another Speaker must be chosen, and this election will be the apple of discord cast into the arena of the Assembly. There are ambitious men amongst us whom we do not know well enough. An unhappy selection might become fatal to us. But even though the choice be a judicious one and the election be quite irrespective of passion or personal feeling, would the Executive give its approval? We have bickering and cavilling enough already without creating additional cause of strife. What I dread most is division in our ranks—division would destroy everything. I wish you were here for a moment amongst your Quebec friends. I feel certain that you would remain if you heard their arguments."

It is evident from this confidential letter that as early as 1822 Papineau's policy did not commend itself to all the members of his party. Whether through weariness or fear of consequences, these symptoms had become still more marked in 1828; and there had been here and there outbursts of revolt against Papineau's absolute rule.

## HIS RELATIONS WITH NEILSON

The successful conduct of a campaign such as he was leading demands abundant energy, and skill in the handling of men—a knowledge of when to restrain and when to stimulate their energies, and how to crush the vacillation and discontent which engender discouragement. Papineau was well fitted for this work, and his active intellect enabled him to accomplish the many calls upon his energy. We find him dispensing unstinted praise on his leading lieutenants, such as Neilson of Quebec, whom he seems to have held in highest esteem among them. He congratulates him on his successful efforts, and wishes he but had a host of such friends. To Neilson he unbosomed himself when in ill-humour, to that friend he opened his heart in the dark hours which come to all who are charged with the management of other men. On January 9th, 1827, he writes to him:—"The injustice done to my country revolts me, and so perturbs my mind that I am not always in a condition to take counsel of an enlightened patriotism, but rather inclined to give away to anger and hatred of our oppressors."

He is not gentle with those of his party with whom he feels bound to find fault, or with those who seem to him to be striving to counteract his plans. His policy leads him to bear with the latter as long as possible, and to crush them as soon as he loses all hope of bringing them once more into line. In the elections of 1834 we find him slaughtering certain former adherents whose zeal had grown cold

in view of his revolutionary tendencies. The difficulties of his position left no room for pity. Napoleon, with what has been called his contempt for the lives of other men, said that in a battle minutes are everything and soldiers nothing. Papineau seemed to think that, in a political struggle in parliament, individualities are nothing and votes everything. Thus it was, with seeming cruelty, that he sacrificed friends whose votes he could not calculate upon as absolutely safe for his cause. The vacillating conduct of the *Patriotes* in Quebec who had undertaken the preparation of the petition against Lord Dalhousie excited his wrath.<sup>1</sup> The protest made by the Montreal committee seemed to them too severe, and they decided to prepare one to suit their own views. Papineau awaited the result of their deliberation, and when several days had passed without news, gave vent to his anger in the following letter to Neilson, dated at Montreal, October 8th, 1827: "I share in the annoyance you must feel at the sluggishness and hesitations of your committee in reporting resolutions and the draft of an address to

<sup>1</sup> During Papineau's struggle his friends assumed the name of *Patriotes* and their opponents were called *Bureaucrats*. He referred to the men in power as *l'oligarchie*. As to those of the French Canadians who sided with the *Bureaucrats* and *l'oligarchie*, they were dubbed *Chouayens*. The origin of this word is thus explained: At the taking of Oswego, called Chouagen, by the French led by Montcalm, some militiamen deserted, and were afterwards called *Chouayens* with a slight deflection in the word. Étienne Parent was the first to apply this soubriquet to those pusillanimous or cowardly countrymen of his who refused to follow Papineau.

## A LETTER TO NEILSON

the King, or to Parliament, setting forth the numberless grievances chargeable to the present government. You will share in our disappointment here when you learn that all our efforts, so far, have been confined to the task of restraining the eagerness of the people, who are impatiently calling for a public meeting where their charges may be formulated against Lord Dalhousie. Your committee is responsible for the false position in which we now stand. Had the two cities acted in full concert, the county committees would have followed suit; and such a combined expression of the wishes of the country would have more weight than a number of varying addresses, and best of all, would secure more prompt action in the matter. We have found it difficult to induce the people of Montreal to wait with patience, and I now learn that your people have only got to the length of talking and speech-making without coming to any conclusion. A letter just received informs me that our friend M. Berthelot thinks it may be better simply to send over an agent without any petition, to ask that he be followed by another agent and that M. Vallières is pouring forth strings of high-sounding elegant phrases to show that much may be said both for and against the policy of petitioning the King. Heavens, what a deluge of words! And it is not for lack of brains, but simply lack of character. Does he feel his silk robe so stuck to his skin that he cannot lose it without losing strips of flesh and

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

enduring unbearable torture? Does he hope to retain it—can he honourably do so in view of the affront offered him by his Lordship, in dismissing him from his position in the militia on account of his vote in Parliament? To no other man but yourself would I say thus freely what I think of M. Vallières, but I cannot help giving vent to my grief and vexation when I see him prostituting the talents with which nature endowed him, at the feet of a man whom he cannot but hold in contempt.”

Amidst all these bickerings and hesitations, Papineau and his friends must have felt a momentary satisfaction when the bearers of the petition accomplished the decapitation of Lord Dalhousie. It was a personal success for him—a sentimental victory it is true for his self-love—but still a victory. He did not, however, exult in it in the slightest degree, and, as we find afterwards, he is quite as wrathful as before and hopeless of getting justice from England, in view of the fact that her parliament did not adopt the report of the committee as above stated.

After the departure of Lord Dalhousie, Sir James Kempt took the reins of power, and there is then a lull in public affairs, such as that which characterized the brief administration of Sir Francis Burton, who was acting-governor during the absence of Lord Dalhousie, in 1825. Kempt was a man of seemingly moderate and conciliatory character and Canadians augured well of his administration. But the publication of a report made by him

## KEMPT'S REPORT

in 1829 on the state of the province, once more upset everything. The minister having asked for his views as to the expediency of so modifying the composition of the executive and legislative councils as to give satisfaction to those forming the majority of the people of the province, his recommendation in reply fell short of the demands of the assembly. Hence, he soon became unpopular and ere long retired from his position. Nevertheless, his reply to the home government embodied the open and undisguised avowal that reforms were needed in the direction suggested by the minister. A change was required, he said, in the composition of the legislative council, consisting as it did of twenty-three members, of whom twelve were office-holders and only seven of the twenty-three Catholics; and also in the executive council, which contained but one minister who was independent of the Crown and one single Catholic. After these admissions, Kempt erred in recommending but little change. He must, nevertheless, be credited with having suggested to the minister the policy of taking members of the legislative assembly into the executive council. This representation would have had the effect of giving the people a more direct force in the administration of the affairs of the country, and also of placing the government in closer contact with the assembly, where matters might have been discussed in a more practical manner between the rival parties. Some are inclined to think that the

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

presence of one or two ministers in the House of Assembly was ministerial responsibility in embryo, and that the full responsibility would have promptly resulted therefrom. Such was also the opinion of Cartier expressed in parliament in 1854, when he blamed Papineau and his friends for having expelled from the assembly Dominique Mondelet who had been called to the governor's council.

We know that Papineau was called to the executive council in 1822 and refused the honour. Did he see in the proposal a plot to destroy his ascendancy in the House, while leaving him without influence, standing alone in the midst of his political opponents? It is evident that his presence in the council might have produced excellent results, had the elements with which he had to deal been amenable to his influence; but it was far otherwise. Nor must we forget that Papineau was the leader of a party and that his party would have been but a headless trunk, had he entered the council. There would have been a manifest incompatibility between the two positions. Finding himself in a like alternative, in 1841, LaFontaine refused to enter the Draper ministry at the request of Lord Sydenham, on the ground that the interests of the French Canadians would have been inadequately represented.

The same grounds could not be urged against the presence in the ministry of Dominique Mondelet. He was not a leader, and in the House and in the



## PARTY SPIRIT

council his services might have been of use, but party spirit ran so high at the time, that his appointment suggested a betrayal. It was one of the paradoxes of the period: our *Patriotes* never ceased complaining of the fact that all the remunerative posts were given to the English, and yet no sooner did a godsend of the kind fall to the lot of one of their own men, than they raised the cry of "Treason!"



## CHAPTER VIII

### LORD AYLMER IN THE PATH OF DALHOUSIE

**W**E have now reached the year 1830. Papineau had been in parliament for eighteen years, and from the hour of his distinguished début in the legislative assembly, he had not ceased to prosecute the claim of his countrymen to enjoy the liberties and privileges to which they were entitled as British subjects. At the close of the eighteen years of pleading and claiming, he had won nothing but promises never fulfilled, and that with endless bickerings and personal insults. Is it to be wondered at, that under the constant renewal of his hopeless struggle, his temper should have become embittered, and that he should have lost confidence in the spirit of justice of the colonial office where he had so often applied for redress ; and when Lord Goderich, a minister of broad views and rational grasp of the situation, offered him concessions, is it to be wondered at that he refused to believe in the sincerity of his advances ; or is it surprising that he should fail to believe in the apparent good-will manifested by Lord Aylmer on his arrival ? During the session of 1830, after perusing the list of grievances complained of by the Canadians, the governor expressed his astonishment at their number and their im-

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

portance, and then, with a degree of frankness hardly to have been expected from a diplomatist, but quite natural from a soldier, begged of the House to say whether the list was quite complete, and urged them to make diligent search for any further wrongs that might exist. "For," he said, "we must put an end to them once for all, and leave no cause of complaint unremoved."

This conciliatory spirit manifested, at least in appearance, by the governor on his arrival, was not exhibited in the relations between the legislative council and the assembly. With an intensity greater than ever these two bodies, between whom it was so desirable that harmonious relations should prevail, looked upon and treated each other as enemies, and each watched for opportunities to counteract the plans of the other. Their mutual hostility was bringing affairs to a crisis. In this session of 1831, the assembly having sent to the Upper House a bill excluding judges from the executive and legislative council, the latter threw out the measure, as it had thrown out the supply bill the year before.

In the midst of these dissensions the important despatch from Lord Goderich, offering to Papineau and his friends a most acceptable compromise in relation to the financial question, was received in Quebec. The minister for the colonies declared that the English government was prepared to give to the assembly the absolute control of the expenditure, save as to the casual and the Domaine

## GROWING IRRITATION

revenue, in exchange for a provision of a civil list of £19,000, during the lifetime of the king. In the second session of 1831, Papineau, with the help of Bourdages, who was also an advocate of extreme action, succeeded in defeating the motion for the adoption of the measure proposed by Lord Goderich. This was an error much to be regretted on the part of Papineau. Garneau, the historian, who was himself a participant in the events of the period, and who will hardly be charged with partiality for the assembly, condemns the conduct of Papineau and his friends. "Never," he says, "did the House commit so serious a blunder. But it was already evident that some fatal influence was hurrying it beyond the bounds of prudence."<sup>1</sup>

The irritation which raged in parliament and in the executive council at length communicated itself to Lord Aylmer, who in 1832 was at open war with

<sup>1</sup> Strange to say, Lord Durham in his famous report on Canadian affairs, finds extenuating circumstances to Papineau's conduct in refusing to accept full control of the revenue in exchange for the civil list, because this arrangement would still have left the civil service independent of the assembly.

"The assembly, after it had obtained entire control over the public revenues," said Durham, "still found itself deprived of all voice in the choice or even designation of the persons in whose administration of affairs it could feel confidence. All the administrative power of government remained entirely free from its influence; and though Mr. Papineau appears from his own conduct to have deprived himself of that influence in the government which he might have acquired, I must attribute the refusal of a civil list to the determination of the assembly not to give up its only means of subjecting the functionaries of government to any responsibility."

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

the assembly and no longer made a secret of his antipathy. His *entourage* fanned the flame of his displeasure, and did not fail to remind him exultingly that on his first arriving they had told him how intractable the French Canadians were. Thenceforth we have but the record of a succession of unfortunate and unpardonable blunders. Aimless discussions take place from day to day, and instead of seeking to come to an understanding, each party spends its energies in an effort to inflict annoyance on the other.

In refusing to accept the concession of Lord Goderich, Papineau and his friends had departed from the rule of action of the English system, which is averse to the absolute, and proceeds only by compromise and mutual concessions. Every concession, however small it may be, must be accepted and in its turn made the basis of further demands. But the long and fruitless struggle seemed to have exhausted the patience of the most hopeful, when we find such men as LaFontaine, Morin and Bleury, who subsequently proved themselves, under all circumstances, moderate in their views and opposed to every form of violence, joining the ranks of the followers of Papineau. The fault committed by the English government was that it waited until 1834 to offer what the Canadians had been claiming since 1810. It is wise to make concessions to the people, but they should be granted in due season, and in such a manner that what is granted freely

## AN ELECTIVE COUNCIL

and willingly may not appear to be given under compulsion. Had Louis XVI. and his advisers but met halfway the men of 1789, who demanded constitutional changes which had become necessary, perhaps they might have escaped the men of 1791 and 1793. Lord Goderich made his generous proposal at the moment when Papineau, in the height of the struggle between the assembly and the council, was making desperate efforts to secure another reform, to his mind the one, indispensable reform, and calculated to bring with it all the others: the reform of the legislative council. "An elective council" was the new battle-cry of 1834, and invectives were showered on the partisans of the *vieillards malfaisants* (malevolent old men) as the creatures of the government were denominated.

Addressing the electors of Montreal on November 1st, 1834, Papineau, in a three hours' speech, attacked the legislative council, and summed up his grievances against his irreconcilable enemy as follows: "I solemnly declare that no harmony whatever can exist in this country, or between the several branches of the legislature, until the elective principle shall have been applied to every part of the administration; it must above all be applied to the legislative council, where a pack of old men paralyse by their ceaseless opposition all the efforts of the representatives of the people. This opinion is not mine alone, it is shared by the leading statesmen of England. The people will therefore support those

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

who call for a reform of the council, and they are sure to succeed. O'Connell, the great friend of the human race, has promised us that we shall secure this reform if we only persist in our demands.

"Permit me now," he added, "to refute certain false charges made against us by the council, and to point out the lack of logic and independence which characterizes the conduct of that body. Thus they gave currency to the statement that the assembly was opposed to any immigration into this country. Nothing could be more contrary to the truth. We have done everything possible to encourage and promote it; in the first place by giving to foreigners every facility for securing naturalization, then by taking steps to protect the immigrants against ill-treatment on the part of masters of vessels, and by providing them with assistance on their arrival in the country when they happen to be in distress. But what happened? Will it be credited, the legislative council threw out the measure making provision for the accomplishment of those objects, and the subsequent conduct of that body shows clearly the spirit by which its members were actuated. On the morrow of the day on which the bill was rejected, there came a ministerial despatch from England recommending the levy of a tax in order to provide means of assisting immigrants. We then had the strange spectacle of seeing the same council reconsider the bill they had thrown out two days before, and give it their



## AGAINST THE LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL

sanction, as though to prove to the whole world their subserviency to the will of the English minister. We have seen them refuse to grant to persons charged with crime the British privilege of being defended by counsel; we saw them refusing to allow an action for felony to be entered against the receiver-general, who had appropriated to his own uses £100,000 of the monies of the province, and attempting to justify such refusal by the childish objection that he was a legislative councillor.

“Let us now speak of another abuse, which, however, does not seem to be one in the eyes of that body. We know that the sheriffs of Montreal and Quebec receive a fee of two and a half per cent. on the proceeds of the sales they make under the authority of the law. We may form some idea of the enormous profits they derive in this way when we consider that the seigniori of Terrebonne sold for £20,000 and that the fee of two and a half per cent. was paid on that sum. The assembly wanted to put a stop to this abuse, but the council opposed their views in this matter, because the sheriff of Montreal is a legislative councillor and because the son of the sheriff of Quebec is also a member of that body.

“A bill had been passed,” added Papineau, “by the House of Assembly providing for the printing of the statutes, and it went to council for approval. The latter amended it and, inasmuch as it was a bill dealing with money, the assembly could not

consent to any alterations being made therein by the council, any such procedure being contrary to the principles of the constitution. Nevertheless, rather than see the bill lost, the assembly adopted another measure embodying the amendment proposed by the council, and sent it to the latter body. What are we to think of the council when we find that they thereupon threw out the bill embodying their own amendment! Such conduct as this has no parallel unless we take that of the tyrant Nero who had his laws inscribed in such small characters and hung up so high, that nobody could read them, and yet inflicted torture and death on the man who was found ignorant of the law or who disobeyed any of its enactments."

But, a truce to quotations; we might refer to many of the grievances chargeable to the council, which body one day incurred the censure of Lord Stanley; but the latter was not then minister of the colonies, a position in which he showed himself the cruel and pitiless enemy of the Canadians. Was not Papineau's proposal to make the council elective an error in tactics? Could the English government accede to his wishes? To make the council elective would have been to create alongside of the assembly another body in which the French element would predominate, thus giving to that race the ascendancy and supremacy in the administrative system. There would thus have been once more a rupture in the equilibrium of the forces. In theory, Papineau

## THE MINORITY CASE

seems to us unassailable, for the Canadians, being subjects of His Majesty by the same right as the others, it was utterly unjust to consider their origin a blemish. That they would have used the power concentrated in their hands in such a manner as to satisfy the aspirations of all classes of the population, there is no reason whatever to doubt; subsequent experience has demonstrated this clearly. But then, was Papineau justified, before the experiment, in expecting for a moment that the British statesmen of the colonial office, men subject like most men to prejudices of race and religion, would consent to place those of their own nationality at the mercy of a French majority—looked upon as hostile to the English element?

Many of our writers who have studied this period have considered its issues as though French interests alone had been at stake. Now, if it be admitted that the election of the members of the legislative council by the people would virtually annihilate the power of the English minority, it is unreasonable to suppose that this minority would readily permit itself to be thus stripped of political influence. Papineau should have felt that it was impossible to comply with the demands; and he probably did feel it. Why then did he persist with such violent obstinacy in urging them? His very natural exasperation had, in the end, rendered him intractable and he could no longer control himself when he saw his opponents ceaselessly plotting, as he writes

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

to Neilson, "in order that the minority may rule the majority without being annoyed by the complaints of their victims. It is odious," he adds, "to see every office and position closed against our people when the laws do not exclude them; to see them contributing nine-tenths of the revenue and receiving but one-tenth, and to feel that the possession of influence in this country is a passport to persecution." Simply because the Canadians then claimed their share of patronage, certain persons have ventured to conclude that, after all, the chief cause of the agitation was a struggle for place and position, in which the Canadians were disappointed. To deal with the question in this way is to look at it through the wrong end of the glass, to debase it to the level of vulgar interest, when the disinterestedness of Papineau should place him high above such contemptible insinuation. Had he been willing to accept the offers of Lord Dalhousie, it is clearly manifest that his fortune was made.

The insinuation is not worthy of consideration. No doubt the question of patronage was a factor, and rightly a factor, in the claims of the Canadians, since they contributed nine-tenths of the revenue. That the holding of places was of importance, the adversaries of Papineau could not deny, as they themselves made such efforts to monopolize them. What it was worth their while to grasp and cling to with might and main, the others might surely be allowed to seek and to share in.

## CHAPTER IX

### THE NINETY-TWO RESOLUTIONS

**W**HEN about to rush into the throes of revolution, men feel it needful to pause and reflect before venturing into the hazards of the fateful struggle. In 1774 the representatives of the English colonies assembled in Philadelphia declared their independence. This defiance hurled at England was couched in forcible language, setting forth the grievances which Virginia and her neighbours complained of, and formulating the principles which, from the standpoint of the malcontents, underlie the liberties inherent to humanity. These grievances numbered twenty-seven. The men of 1789 in France, in order to show their fealty to tradition, put forth their famous declaration of the rights of man, which has since furnished the theme of many an eloquent piece of declamation. Papineau and his friends formulated their grievances in the shape of ninety-two resolutions, the drafting of which is attributed to Morin, the ablest political writer of the day. The inspiration is, of course, from Papineau, and there are to be found throughout the lengthy indictment violent outbursts but little in harmony with the indolent character of the gentle Morin, which doubtless are retouchings

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

from the hand of Papineau. One recognizes here and there the lion's claws.

The statesman requires as a quality of temperament a degree of patience and good humour, which Papineau lacked at this period of his career. "We must take all things seriously and nothing tragically," said Thiers to Jules Favre, when the latter spoke despondently during the negotiations with Bismarck for the treaty of 1871. Papineau's state of exasperation in and about 1834 caused him to take everything *au tragique*: the sayings and doings of the governor, the uncompromising attitude of the legislative council, etc. When Lord Aylmer says a word of remonstrance to the assembly for persistently refusing the supplies, the censure forthwith becomes a national insult. Papineau's young friends, LaFontaine and Morin, and his lieutenant, O'Callaghan (of *The Vindicator*), elected in the wholly French county of Richelieu by will of the chief, were not shocked by the violence of his language, while moderate men, such as Neilson, Cuvillier, Quesnel and Debartzch, withdrew from his camp. Meantime, the press devoted to the cause of the *Patriotes* poured hot shot into the ranks of the common enemy. The attacks are no longer confined to the provincial authorities, but include also the British government. The intemperance and license of language verges on sedition. Such is the exasperation of the *Patriotes*, and so distorted is their mental vision by

## RIOT AND BLOODSHED

passion that they fancy they see conspirators everywhere, and when gathered in conclave in their committee-room they hear footsteps in the wall and dread of treason haunts them on every hand.

There occurred in 1831 certain untoward events which brought to a climax the bitterness of the strife between the parties to the struggle. It is easy to fancy, in view of the exasperation of mind which prevailed, the acrimony with which the electoral contests must have been fought out in the towns where the English and the Canadians looked upon each other as deadly enemies. They were carried on amid scenes of wrangling and fighting; sticks and stones and blows took the place of argument and discussion. During the election which took place in Montreal in May, 1831, violence so ruled that it became necessary to call out the soldiers of the garrison to put an end to a serious riot. They were ordered to fire on the rioters, and three citizens were shot. Colonel Mackintosh, the commander of the troops, was branded as a murderer by the press, and Papineau called upon Lord Aylmer to come from Quebec to Montreal and deal with this deplorable affair. Lord Aylmer disregarded the summons, and his adversaries strove to make him responsible for the loss of life.

As though this unfortunate affair had not already sufficiently exasperated national animosity in the province, the Asiatic cholera, imported into the country by immigrants, scattered death, mourning

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

and consternation in Montreal and Quebec, and the enemies of the governor and his *entourage* did not hesitate to denounce them before the public as the first cause of the ravages of the dread scourge. It was, they declared, their culpable negligence or their guilty subserviency to the merchants of Montreal who opposed the preventive measure of a quarantine, that left the country unprotected against the entrance of the disease.

In 1834, on the second appearance of the cholera, and following the precedent of 1832, the national party again sought to hold Lord Aylmer responsible for the ravages of the scourge. "It was he," they declared, "who refused to shut it out by closing the gate of the St. Lawrence; he it was who enticed the sick immigrants into the country, in order to decimate the ranks of the French Canadians." The more moderate simply charged him with having, as before, refused, in deference to the merchants, whose interests would have been affected by the quarantine regulations, to stop the infected vessels below Quebec.

At a meeting of the constitutional committee held at Montreal on November 3rd, 1834, at which were present Papineau, LaFontaine, D. B. Viger, Joseph Cardinal and A. N. Morin, it was resolved to appoint a committee "to enquire into the ravages caused last summer by that cruel disease the Asiatic cholera; into the causes of its introduction, and the participation therein, whether by act or omission,



## THE RESOLUTIONS

culpable and voluntary, of the present Governor-General and the Provincial Executive." As a matter of course, this forms one of the grievances set forth in the ninety-two resolutions. It is difficult to believe that sensible men could commit themselves to so glaring an exaggeration. But we must remember that in times of excitement the mind often becomes disturbed and loses its sense of proportion. A thing, which in ordinary times passes unnoticed, then assumes gigantic importance. In such an atmosphere of excitement the ninety-two resolutions were conceived, calculated as they were to produce an effect contrary to what must have been the expectations of their framers.

Couched in the pompous, grandiloquent language of the period, they embody, together with the enumeration of the grievances so often complained of, a number of things entirely out of place, if the *Patriotes* were anxious to secure the reform of the abuses complained of. Nothing was gained by saying to the king, to whom the resolutions are addressed: "We are in no wise disposed to admit the excellence of the present constitution of Canada, although the present colonial secretary unseasonably and erroneously asserts that the said constitution has conferred on the two Canadas the institutions of Great Britain." Were such criticisms calculated to win over the minds of those from whom the reforms were to come? Hardly less of a blunder was the declaration of democratic principles

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

forming the basis of the thirty-seventh resolution. Any one who reads that declaration of radical principles will see what a deplorable effect it must have produced in London: "Your Majesty cannot fail to observe that the political world in Europe is at this moment agitated by two great parties, who in different countries appear under the several names of Serviles, Royalists, Tories, and Conservatives, on the one side, and of Liberals, Constitutionalists, Republicans, Whigs, Reformers, Radicals, and similar appellations on the other; that the former party is, on the American Continent, without any weight or influence except what it derives from its European supporters, and from a trifling number of persons who become their dependents for the sake of personal gain, and of others who from age or habit cling to opinions which are not partaken by any numerous class, while the second party overspreads all America. We are, then, certain that we shall not be misunderstood with regard to the independence which it is our wish to see given to the Legislative Council, when we say that Your Majesty's Secretary of State is mistaken if he believes that the exclusion of a few salaried Officers would suffice to make that body harmonize with the wants, wishes and opinions of the People, as long as the Colonial Governors retain the power of preserving in it a majority of Members rendered servile by their antipathy to every liberal idea."

Now what possible accession of strength could

## DEMOCRATIC IDEALS

this democratic profession of faith afford to the just claims of the French Canadians? To our mind it is a strangely discordant episode, and more injurious than helpful to the cause. But let us not forget that great popular movements are always a fruitful field for declamation. Full of the subject, thinking of nothing but their own cause, Papineau and his adherents sought the means of attaining liberty; their aspirations towards an ideal of justice, seldom realized, took complete control of their minds, and impelled them to give full vent to their sentiments at every possible opportunity. Nor must we overlook the fact that the great current of the romantic school, with all its exuberance of language and its grandiloquence, which pervaded France in 1830, was then overrunning the world with its high-sounding periods. But how flat this vehement contrast of American democracy with European monarchism must have fallen upon English ears!

The next resolution is couched in a strain still more objectionable, with its preface that no threat is intended, and then proceeding in a comminatory tone throughout: "With regard to the following expressions in one of the Despatches before mentioned from the Colonial Secretary: 'Should events unhappily force upon Parliament the exercise of its supreme authority to compose the internal dissensions of the Colonies, it would be my object and my duty as a Servant of the Crown, to submit

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

‘to Parliament such modifications of the Charter of  
‘the Canadas as should tend, not to the introduction  
‘of Institutions inconsistent with Monarchical Gov-  
‘ernment, but to maintaining and strengthening  
‘the connection with the Mother Country, by a  
‘close adherence to the spirit of the British Consti-  
‘tution, and by preserving in their proper place,  
‘and within due limits, the mutual rights and  
‘privileges of all classes of His Majesty’s Subjects’  
—if they are to be understood as containing a threat  
to introduce into the constitution any other modi-  
fications than such as are asked for by the majority  
of the people of the Province, whose sentiments  
cannot be legitimately expressed by any other  
authority than its representatives—this House would  
esteem itself wanting in candour to Your Majesty,  
if it hesitated to call Your Majesty’s attention  
to the fact, that in less than twenty years the popu-  
lation of the United States of America will be  
greater than that of Great Britain, and that of  
British America will be greater than that of the  
former English Colonies, when the latter deemed  
that the time was come to decide that the inappre-  
ciable advantage of being self-governed, ought to  
engage them to repudiate a system of Colonial  
government which was, generally speaking, much  
better than that of British America now is. Your  
Majesty will doubtless do Your Majesty’s faithful  
Subjects sufficient justice not to construe into a  
threat this prediction founded on the past, of a fact

## OFFENSIVE REFERENCES

which from its nature cannot be prevented. We are, on the contrary, convinced that the just appreciation of this fact by Your Majesty will prevent those misfortunes which none could deplore more deeply than we should do, and which would be equally fatal to Your Majesty's Government, and to the People of these Provinces. And it is perhaps here that we ought to represent with the same frankness, that the fidelity of the People and the protection of the Government are correlative obligations, of which the one cannot long subsist without the other; and that, nevertheless, by reason of the defects which exist in the Laws and Constitution of this Province, and of the manner in which those Laws and that Constitution have been administered, Your Majesty's faithful Canadian subjects are not sufficiently protected in their lives, their property and their honour."

One would think from the offensive tone of this untimely and disagreeable reference to the American revolution, which is made with such apparent relish, that the House wanted to defy the English government. There is nothing more about imploring a redress of grievances, but a warning that unless justice be quickly done, comfort will be sought in Washington. Such was the singular blindness with which the serious part of the ninety-two resolutions was prefaced with threats, with the evocation of past events full of unpleasant memories for the British government, and with a reference to

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

the progress of the Americans, which could not mean anything else in this instance but that the House would in the end seek their assistance. This was a poor way of conciliating those to whose sense of justice an appeal was made for a fair consideration of the claims of the Canadians, and was a foolish playing into the hands of the unionists, who unceasingly charged Papineau and his friends with disloyalty. These unfortunate episodes were the more to be regretted from the fact that the real grievances are afterwards set forth in the manifesto with a degree of force and clearness which demonstrates their seriousness.

Some of the resolutions are truly to the point; when, for example, attention is called to the fact that the executive government has, for a great number of years, contrary to the rights of the House and the constitution, set up claims to the control over and power of appropriating a great part of the revenue raised in this province; that it has sold the waste lands of the Crown to create for itself a revenue; that the result of the secret and unlawful distribution of a large portion of the revenue has been that the provincial government has considered itself bound to account for the public money to the commissioner of the treasury in England, and not to the House; that the abuses aforesaid have taken from the House even the shadow of control over the expenditure of the province, and rendered it impossible to ascertain at any time the amount of revenue

## CHARGES AGAINST AYLMER

collected, the disposable amount of the same, and the sums required for the public service.

The arraignment of the legislative council in the ninety-two resolutions is still more severe than that of the executive. We must remember here that if under Lord Dalhousie the battle cry was, "Give us control of the supplies," during Lord Aylmer's régime, the *Patriotes* wrote on their banner, "Reform of the Legislative Council." This body was the arch-enemy whose members were held up to public contempt as *vieillards malfaisants*. The past history of the legislative council is recalled in violent terms, and in its present situation it is depicted as a body composed of sinecurists, largely paid by emoluments from the Crown, whose devotees they were. It was thought by Papineau that an elective council would strike existing abuses at their root, that is, give the assembly control of the finances. Lord Aylmer is also bitterly attacked in the resolutions. Parliament is asked to impeach him "for having recomposed the legislative council so as to increase the dissensions which rend the colony; for having disposed of public money without the consent of the House," and on other grounds, ten in number. One would have expected to find the Canadians, instead of demanding a reform of the legislative council by making its members elective, pointing to a still surer means of obtaining justice. Why did not Papineau claim ministerial responsibility? There is no reference to it in the petition embodying the

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

ninety-two resolutions. And yet, as far back as 1808, Pierre Bédard, as Papineau well knew, had moved in the House of Assembly a resolution to the effect that the House would gladly see its benches occupied by ministers holding office in virtue of the suffrages of the representatives of the people. Ministerial responsibility did not exist at Washington, and Papineau looked only in that direction for his ideal of government.

Following Papineau's manifesto—the ninety-two resolutions—the press of the day never wearied of publishing comparisons between the English system of government and the American. Whether from policy or from sincerity there was an attempt to convince Downing street that the *Patriotes* borrowed their political ideas from the United States. And, in fact, ever since that day, it has been the fashion, whenever things go wrong in Canada, to hold up annexation as the panacea for all the evils complained of. In 1848, our leading politicians advocated annexation as a means of bringing prosperity to Canada, and since confederation sporadic demonstrations of annexationist sentiment have broken out in several of our provinces, occasioned by depression of trade or vague dissatisfaction with the new system.

A study of Papineau's manifesto, and a general examination of the ideas current at that time have convinced us that the non-fulfilment in the past of the oft-repeated promises of reform made by the British authorities had long since destroyed



## AN AVOWED ANNEXATIONIST

in his mind all hope of ever obtaining justice at their hands. Distrust took possession of him once and for all. Moreover, a fresh influence had imperceptibly begun to exert its power over the tribune of the people with the effect of urging him to advance more resolutely on the new lines. The breach between Papineau and Neilson, so long his trusted mentor, had thrown the former into the hands of a group of young and ardent men, including O'Callaghan, who saw no salvation for Canada but in a union with the great republic. The endless delays of the colonial office, the tyranny of the governor, the contemptuous attitude assumed by the *entourage* of that official towards the Canadians, and the hostility of the legislative council had made Papineau an annexationist.

100

101

102

103

104

105

106

107

108

## CHAPTER X

### "LA CONVENTION"

THE vehement protest known as the "Ninety-Two Resolutions," which voiced the complaints and indignation of half a million of people, was apparently to fall flat and bring no result. Did Lord Stanley, the colonial minister, intend to treat the Canadian people with silent contempt? Papineau soon gave him to understand that he was not the man to accept scornful silence in place of a serious answer. No sooner was the House called together than the storm raging within his breast burst forth with fury. The sittings of February 23rd and 24th, 1835, when Papineau and his lieutenants gave vent to their pent-up wrath, were days to be remembered in the annals of parliament. They resembled the revolutionary scenes of the *Convention* of 1792; the importance of the interests at stake, the violence of language, and the theatrical attitude, recall, on a reduced scale of course, the memorable debates wherein the lives of the speakers were at stake. This tragic side is lacking in the case of the assembly, but in the perspective of the future, we have a glimpse of the executions of 1838.

In the foreground of this struggle, playing the

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

two-fold and contradictory part of speaker of the House and party leader, is Papineau. His duty as speaker is to soothe the angry passions which, as generalissimo of the *Patriotes*, he himself has aroused, and this duty he carefully refrains from doing. With his fierce voice, his real or simulated bursts of anger, the prestige of his eloquence, his manly head well set upon his stalwart frame, is not he another Danton, but a Danton without his cruelty? Words can give no idea of the violence of his outbursts of passion, and of the agitation produced in the House, when, addressing Lord Aylmer personally, he held him responsible for the death of the three Canadians shot down by the soldiers during the Montreal election in 1831. "Craig," he exclaimed, "merely cast the people into prison, but Aylmer slaughters them." One remarkable feature amongst many others of the session of 1835 is the attacks upon the governor. In our day the governor reigns but does not govern, and in all his acts he is shielded by his ministers. It is understood by all that his person is to remain outside, and that he is to be excluded from all discussion. In striking contrast with this modern usage was the practice in Papineau's day. The governor was then the chief object of attack, and we find the tribune furiously assailing "Mathew, Lord Aylmer," and calling upon the English government to impeach him.

Morin opened fire. This worthy citizen, who, from and after 1840, seems to have been a model

## MORIN AS A PATRIOTE

of moderation, serenity, and reserve, has always seemed to us to have been out of place in the character of an agitator. The future cabinet minister (of the MacNab-Morin government) and judge of the court of appeal was not, however, averse to the use of strong language if he be the author of certain articles in *La Minerve* of that day, articles which were absolutely seditious. We must not judge Papineau's lieutenants by their subsequent demeanour and conduct; for it is manifest that prior to 1838 they thought and acted wholly under the spell of their leader who had imparted to them something of his own fierce spirit. While not up to the standard of Papineau's discourses for vivacity or sentiment, the address in which Morin presented his motion to take into consideration the state of the province contains passages of such animation and vigour as to surprise us coming from him,—for example his opening words: "I rise to move that the House do now go into committee of the whole to consider the state of the province, a step which I hold to be necessary in order that we may ascertain whether we are to be governed in accordance with the laws and the rights of British subjects, and whether we are to enjoy in very truth the advantages of constitutional liberty, or to grow beneath the yoke of the tyranny which now oppresses us, and which is spreading its infection amongst us under the most odious form."

Conrad Augustus Gugsy, a noted personage of

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

the period, undertook to defend the government. A shrewd advocate and a well seasoned debater, he was now the only man fit to break a lance with Papineau, for Neilson, the Stuarts, Cuvillier, and Quesnel had lost their seats in parliament as the penalty for opposing the ninety-two resolutions. He was not master of the higher order of eloquence, but how skilfully he wields the blade of irony and sarcasm! His mode of fighting was precisely that best calculated to exasperate Papineau, and cause him to lose all self-control.

In order to take things in their proper order, let us point out that Morin's motion was moved on the first day of the session, before the consideration of the governor's speech which, according to constitutional usage, is the first matter to be dealt with by parliament. This departure from established usage elicited the following remarks from Gagy: "It seems to me we are going very fast. We have only just heard His Excellency's speech, and we are already calling for a committee on the state of the province! The governor tells us that he has received despatches, and we do not know whether he has not received orders to remedy the grievances of which the majority complained last year, and yet we are already calling for a committee. This is going faster still than I expected. I have not opposed the appointment of this committee because I had not the faintest hope of succeeding. But, according to my view, it would have been natural

## GUGY'S DEFENCE

to hope for a removal of the grievances and to wait for it."

Gugy then enters into the pith of the subject, and deals with the grievances of the Canadians. In a bantering tone and in the presence of the popular tribune, who was so deeply sensible of the greatness of his own mission, and who had complained that the abuses set forth in the ninety-two resolutions were still in a most active existence, Gugy undertakes to belittle the cause of the *Patriotes*: "After all is said and done," he declared, "the whole thing is a mere hunt for offices, which positions are claimed without any attempt to inquire whether there are to be found a sufficient number of educated Canadians to fill them." Papineau and his friends, with their threats against England and against the governors, are in Gugy's eyes simply revolutionists and followers of Robespierre and Danton. He compares the House to the French *Convention* and charges it with driving the country into civil war, a prediction too soon to be realized, but which at the time raised a laugh at the expense of the speaker.

Papineau in his reply began by pleasantly chaffing the "military" member. Gugy was a major in the militia, and we shall find him in 1837 serving with the English soldiers, and notably with Colborne at St. Eustache, where he was one of the first to enter the church after the defeat of Chenier's party. "Mr. Gugy," says Papineau, "has talked to us

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

again about an outbreak and civil war—a ridiculous bugbear which is regularly revived every time the House protests against these abuses, as it was under Craig, under Dalhousie, and still more persistently under the present governor; the honourable gentleman, no doubt, having studied military tactics as a lieutenant in the militia—I do not say as a major, for he has been a major only for the purposes of the parade ground and the ballroom—is quite competent, perhaps, to judge of the results of a civil war and of the forces of the country, but he need not fancy that he can frighten us by hinting to us that he will fight in the ranks of the enemy. All his threats are futile, and his fears but the creatures of imagination. Our constitution has been meted out to us by a champion of aristocratic privileges, an enemy of liberal institutions, by Mr. Pitt, whose political system has revolutionized Europe, and who has delayed reform in England, and who has shown himself not a whit more favourable to liberty for Canada than for England itself; and when we ask for an amendment of this imperfect and faulty Constitutional Act, from the very authority which enacted it, the English parliament, we do not expect that our claim shall be considered revolutionary, or calculated to create a rebellion in the land. But the men who make these charges call themselves Reformers! This it was that made Mr. Hume say recently in his address to his constituents: *The name of Reformer has become a term of*



## A REFERENCE TO AYLMER

*reproach since the Tories, the most tenacious upholders of abuses, have usurped it.* Now in this country our so-called Reformers talk of *Revolution* when we ask for reforms."

After he had thus disposed of Gugy's charges, Papineau dealt with the subject of the motion in relation to the consideration of the state of the province: "The objections raised by the honourable gentleman [Mr. Gugy], to this motion," he said, "are based on no other arguments but these: *you are going too fast; the thing is new and unusual.* He is quite satisfied with things as they are, and is perfectly calm and undisturbed amidst the complaints and sufferings of a whole people. In these unhappy times, under the rule of an administration daily guilty of fresh errors and fresh blunders, it is absurd to set up the pretext of mere forms and usages in order to prevent us from considering the state of the province. But is it necessary that M. Morin's petition should be dealt with by the House and adopted by vote? This must be the wish of all who desire that wheresoever the power of England rules, there also English liberty may prevail. Under the rule of a soldier [Aylmer] who is governing us with ignorance, passion, and partiality for the military to the extent of shielding them when they have slaughtered our fellow-citizens, it is necessary that we should once more address the English parliament. This petition sets forth the grievances which have cropped up since last year under this

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

military governor. The honourable member for Sherbrooke [Mr. Gagy] says that the governor has received despatches, and that probably these despatches shall fill our hearts with joy and happiness. But happiness cannot come to us through those who have inflicted on us so many evils. The greatest happiness of all would be the removal from amongst us of the men who have been the scourge of this colony. The institutions we have complained of, the injuries, the injustice, the flagrant abuses are still the same, nay, they have increased and multiplied in an appalling manner ! Shall we hesitate to declare that we are ruled by a corrupt faction ? ”

Throughout the session of 1835, a very short one, the debates were all characterized by this excited strain. The year before, on the adoption of the ninety-two resolutions, Lord Aylmer had taken upon himself, in dismissing the House, to assert that these obnoxious resolutions were so far removed from the normal moderation and urbanity of the French Canadians, that persons unaware of the true state of things would find it difficult to believe that they were not the result of an extraordinary public fermentation, notwithstanding that the utmost tranquillity prevailed without. This characterization of the ninety-two resolutions, Papineau caused at the present session to be erased from the journals of the assembly, and declared discourteous and unconstitutional, in spite of the protestations of some of the *Patriotes*, who were astounded by

## AGAINST THE GOVERNOR

Papineau's way of acting. The fact was that he loved to act with authority where he felt himself to be the stronger, even at the expense of offending some of his weak-kneed followers.

Let us now see how Papineau answered Lord Aylmer's reprimand. His reply is quite the most virulent speech he uttered during the session: "Mr. Morin has told us that he would not submit to the committee any other matters but this petition. Many other questions might be dealt with, but I venture to refer specially to one matter of great importance, which also requires the attention of this committee, namely, the uncalled for and insulting speech delivered by Mathew, Lord Aylmer, at the close of the last session. Nothing could be more debasing and indiscreet than this discourse. A man with a certain dignity to maintain should not debase and degrade himself to the extent of taking pleasure in offering insult. His speech to the members of this House was addressed to the people. The insult is offered to them as well as to us, their representatives. It is futile to object that the speech was directed against the former House, for we are bound to avenge an insult cast at the whole nation.

"As to the grievances set out in this petition [a new statement of grievances addressed to the king], I shall confine myself to the declaration that the country is suffering under the worst possible evils, and that grief and affliction prevail through-

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

out the land. Complaints and discontent are widespread. Men ask what is the meaning of a representative government, when its officials think they have the right to do and dare everything. Convinced of the existence of this state of things, and well aware of the sentiments of our people, I will strive my utmost against a government whom it would be a crime not to denounce, sustained as it is by one branch of the legislature, which has the bare-faced effrontery to call itself the protector of the minority. The English minority are untrue to their citizenship when they segregate themselves from their fellow-subjects in order to secure privileges for themselves only; and thenceforth they are no longer entitled to the protection of the laws, unless the people of this country are so far demoralized as to lie down submissively at the feet of the few, which I do not believe. But our opponents say to us: 'Let us be brothers!' I am perfectly willing for my part, but you want all the power, all the places, and all the pay, and still you complain more than we do. This is something we cannot put up with. We demand political institutions in keeping with the state of society in which we live, and which have rendered the former colonies of England far happier than we are. These reforms would completely change and alter for the better the very men who, as members of the council, feel that they have a mission to do evil. They crept in by the portal of flattery, and they maintain their position

## LAFONTAINE AND THE STRUGGLE

by the exercise of oppression. Hence, not a day should be lost in the effort to secure the good results we have in view. I recommend also that the speech at the close of the session be considered as embodying a censure of this House, of which an instance occurs in the speech of General Craig in 1810. Craig, I may remind the House, confined himself to inflicting only imprisonment on our people, whereas the present man shoots them down. Speeches such as this have always been discussed, and that of the last session must not be passed over in silence."

It is needless to add that the obnoxious speech was struck off the journals of the House. Everything went through with a rush, in these memorable sittings of the year 1835. And whenever some weak-kneed member begged for time to look into the question submitted for consideration, he was rudely and promptly snubbed by the high-handed leader himself, or by Morin or LaFontaine. The latter often took part in the debates, speaking with a degree of vehemence, probably factitious, which he never manifested after the great crisis of the period. He was, as a rule, cold and extremely abrupt when he spoke. We never find him indulging in the simplest flight of the imagination, and he gave his hearers nothing but logic stripped of every ornament. There was nothing in his style or manner to suggest a recurrence to the type of the French *Convention*, and while some of his speeches in 1835

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

are of a violent character, it is because he was under the spell of Papineau's eloquence, and simply the echo of his domineering leader.

It was during this session of 1835 that the great agitator broke away forever from the English government and parliament, for he had as little confidence now in the Whigs as in the Tories. "When reform ministries," he said, in addressing the House on February 24th, 1835, "who called themselves our friends, have been deaf to our complaints, can we hope that a Tory ministry [Peel's], the enemy of Reform, will give us a better hearing? We have nothing to expect from the Tories unless we can inspire them with fear or worry them by ceaseless importunity." The irreconcilable spirit manifested by Papineau in the foregoing declaration inevitably forced him into conflict with the new governor, Lord Gosford, who being entrusted with a mission of conciliation by the English government, and full of pacific intentions on his own behalf, came forward with the olive branch of peace in his hand.

## CHAPTER XI

### LORD GOSFORD: NEARING THE DÉNOUEMENT

CONSIDERING the fact that the quarrel between Lord Aylmer and Papineau was steadily assuming a more aggravated character, the colonial office put an end to his administration in the fall of 1835, and sent out in his place Lord Gosford, in the two-fold capacity of governor and royal commissioner, appointed with two colleagues, Sir Charles Grey and Sir George Gipps, to inquire into the condition of the province, with a view to finding a solution of the serious problem which had then absorbed public attention for thirty years.

By character and temperament, Lord Gosford was a man of moderation. Hence, no sooner had he reached Quebec than he sought to win the confidence of the Canadians. He presided unceasingly at all their entertainments, attended the distribution of premiums at the Quebec Seminary, and gave a ball on the feast of Sainte Catharine. He went so far in his efforts to please the people in every possible way, that the official class and the legislative council party showed signs of taking umbrage. Doctor Henry, surgeon to a regiment then in garrison at Quebec, expressed the views of his associates on Lord Gosford's way of acting, in a

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

letter addressed to the governor through the press, and couched in the following words: "My Lord, I have observed the kindness of your nature shown in many ways, I have witnessed your urbanity and affability to all, and you will, I hope, pardon me for adding that I have also been cognisant of your extensive private charities. You have undertaken the task of reconciling conflicting interests, passions and prejudices, and you have thrown into the endeavour all the cordiality of a generous Irishman. Would to God that your praiseworthy attempts to calm the waters of political strife may not all be thrown away! Yet I am deeply pained, fearing, as I do fear, that you are in fact and truth deceiving yourself in the honesty and generosity of your heart. My Lord, I fear that you are expending political courtesies and private convivialities with a lavish hand, and 'coining your cheek to smiles,' in vain. There is one fatal and insuperable obstacle in your way. There is one man, Papineau, whom you cannot convert, because he is absolutely unconvertible. . . . By a wrong-headed and melancholy alchemy, he will transmute every public concession into a demand for more, in a ratio equal to its extent; whilst his disordered moral palate, beneath the blindest smile and the softest language, will turn your Burgundy into vinegar."

Papineau, it is true, occasionally accepted Lord Gosford's invitations, and the latter subsequently (1847) asserted that if he had known the popular



## LORD GOSFORD

tribune better, he might have come to terms with him. But an unfortunate incident put an end to the seeming harmony which now began to dawn; we say *seeming*, for it may be that Papineau went to government house simply to ascertain, in his intercourse with Lord Gosford, what were the real views of the colonial office. The idea of seeking in annexation the freedom which Downing street persistently refused to grant us, had then a strong hold on his mind. Nevertheless, is it not to be presumed that, in view of the vast responsibility he was assuming, he may have felt some hesitation about going to extremes, and may thus have been led to lend an ear to the governor's proposals? On the other hand, it might be argued that his position was strengthened by this apparent attempt at conciliation, for he was thenceforth in a position to declare that he had not crossed the Rubicon until every road by which he might return was closed behind him.

Lord Gosford summoned parliament in October, 1835, and in a speech characterized by great moderation, made a touching appeal to the spirit of conciliation of both parties, representing "the Canadians and the English as sprung from the two leading nations of the world." Many of the members were inclined to listen with favour to the kindly representations of the governor, when suddenly the publication in Toronto of the secret instructions given to Gosford renewed the ill-feeling. These instructions seemed

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

to the more ardent spirits of the national party to be a complete repudiation of the advances made by the governor, which had given grounds to hope for a removal of the grievances. Now the secret instructions from Downing street to Lord Gosford were to the effect that no concessions whatever were to be made to the Canadians, except on one point, a possible repeal of the Land Act, an iniquitous measure passed by the English parliament, which had enabled certain speculators to grasp a million acres of our best lands.

After this incident, the last ray of hope for a reconciliation, which the moderate conduct of Gosford had led a few to expect, vanished, and it looked as though some evil genius had cast into the already superheated atmosphere, fresh elements of conflict and agitation. What answer had the mother country made to the ninety-two resolutions? Nothing had come from London but vague and evasive promises, which led O'Connell to exclaim in parliament: "If this is what you mean by justice, Canada will soon have no reason to be jealous of Ireland. The admission made by the honourable minister for the colonies is a proof of the abuses committed by those who are governing Canada. For, with a population three-fourths French Canadian, only one-fourth of the public offices is awarded to that element. The composition of the legislative council is also defective, since some of its members are either ministers of the Crown, or

## THE SESSION OF 1836

judges, or public officials of some kind, which gives a two-fold advantage to the government."

In the midst of passionate excitement on the part of some and anxiety and fear on that of others, the governor called parliament together for the autumn session of 1836. The speech from the throne manifested his uneasiness and alarm. The governor strove to remove the deplorable impression created by the extracts from the secret instructions which, he declared, "when the full text is examined, do not bear out the interpretation put upon them." He then stated that his sole object in calling parliament together was to ask them to vote the supplies. Once more, therefore, the eternal question of the supplies, which for twenty years had been the apple of discord for parliament, had come to the front. At the previous session, Papineau had consented to vote the monies required for the public service, but for six months only. But now, as the grievances still existed, with aggravated circumstances, he intimated to the government that this time the House would decline to take any initiative whatsoever, and would remain absolutely inactive, so long as their representations remained unheeded. In modern parlance, the House was "on strike." In replying to the speech from the throne, the assembly said: "We have not deemed it necessary to enter into detail upon the consideration of the various subjects adverted to by Your Excellency until such time as, according to promise, you

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

shall have more fully communicated to the House the reasons which have caused the convocation of parliament." This occurred on September 24th, and inasmuch as, up to October 4th following, Papineau and his friends persisted in their determination, the governor dismissed them. "There being no longer," he said, "any prospect of a good result from the message I communicated a few days ago, I hasten to put an end to this session."

Thenceforward nothing could avert the cataclysm which approached with giant strides, and the agitation became more intense from day to day. The clergy, who as early as 1834 had broken off from Papineau, in view of his revolutionary tendencies and the exaggerated ideas set forth in the ninety-two resolutions, now vainly strove to restrain the popular madness. Some of Papineau's lieutenants, going beyond his instructions, openly preached rebellion, resistance to England, and annexation to the United States, "which will deliver," they insinuated, "the people of the country from the seigniorial tenure and the obligation to pay tithes to the clergy." These appeals to popular passion, coupled with the highly provocative attitude of Papineau, created alarm in the minds of a host of French citizens, who forthwith took sides with the governor. Some signs of revolt even in the ranks of the popular party in the House, who the previous year were unanimous in supporting Papineau, now became apparent. This defection had taken hold of nearly

## DEFECTIONS FROM THE PATRIOTES

all the representatives from the district of Quebec. Elzéar Bédard was one of the first to flinch from unyielding opposition to the government, and yet it was he who had moved the ninety-two resolutions the year before. It was hinted at the time that Papineau had selected him to perform that honourable task in order to retain him within the camp, and that even in 1834 there was doubt as to the soundness of his principles. Was he about to follow Neilson, Cuvillier, Debartzch, and Quesnel, everyone then asked? And when Gosford appointed him in succession to Judge Kerr, Papineau's scathing invectives pursued him beneath the ermine on the bench.

Étienne Parent, who was one of the most popular journalists of the period, a man of well-balanced mind, of whom the Canadian people may well be proud, also withdrew from the ranks of the men of violence, and advocated moderation, while still calling for redress of the grievances. This second defection, a justifiable one to our mind, left Papineau completely under the influence of certain extremists who were inclined to resort to the most violent measures.

The year 1837 opened under the most gloomy auspices, and amid the effervescence of political passions created and fostered by the agitator, came the astounding intelligence that Lord John Russell, far from granting the demands of the Canadians, had just submitted to the House of Commons

resolutions empowering the governor to expend the monies of the province without the authorization of the House. This blow struck at the constitution, and this unexpected answer to the ninety-two resolutions and the many petitions asking for a wider application of the parliamentary régime, created widespread dissatisfaction throughout the country; far from being extended, the privileges of the House were now to be further restricted. In justification of this measure, Lord Russell pointed out that ever since 1832, the House had persistently refused to vote the necessary supplies. It was expedient, no doubt, to put an end to this anomalous state of things, but was it reasonable to make the legislative assembly alone responsible for this calamity, which was brought about by Papineau and his friends on the one hand, and on the other by the legislative council and the colonial office? Considering the condition of the public mind at the time, was not this stroke of authority a great blunder; did it not go to justify Papineau's contention that there was no justice to be expected from the English parliament?

Papineau did not fail to avail himself of the errors committed by his adversaries, and to use their blunders for the advancement of his cause, which was a desperate one indeed; for the support of the other provinces, all of them with cognate grievances against the colonial office, had failed him shortly before this, all along the line. For several

## SEDITIONOUS APPEALS

years, with great energy and ability, Papineau had laboured to combine the malcontents of Upper Canada, New Brunswick and Nova Scotia under his own guidance, in order that they might make common cause with Lower Canada. At one time the opposition in those provinces had become quite strong, but in the end the government had in all of them recovered its ascendancy, so that Papineau and his party were left to struggle alone in Lower Canada.

The more desperate the situation, however, the more daring did Papineau and his lieutenants become in their wild exaltation, and now we find them opening a campaign for the purpose of denouncing the Russell resolutions. Papineau always repudiated the charge of having entertained the idea of taking up arms. But the language then used by him at the various meetings he attended, breathed nothing but sedition and was fraught with appeals to violence sufficient to justify his arrest for high treason. Thus he advocates smuggling, urges his friends to apply to the American congress for redress of the grievances they complain of, and eulogizes the men who effected the American revolution of 1774. At St. Ours, on May 7th, 1837, he had carried a resolution declaring: "That we cannot but consider a government which has recourse to injustice, to force, and to a violation of the social contract, anything else than an oppressive government, a government by force, for which the measure

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

of our submission should henceforth be simply the measure of our numerical strength, in combination with the sympathy we may find elsewhere." Did Papineau not raise the flag of revolt at St. Laurent on May 14th, 1837, when he said: "The Russell resolutions are a foul stain; the people should not and will not submit to them; the people must transmit their just rights to their posterity, even though it cost them their property and their lives to do so"?

Then he continues in the same key: "We are fighting the old enemies of the country, the governor, the two councils, the judges and the bulk of the officials, whom your representatives have long denounced as forming a corrupt faction hostile to the rights of the people, and bound by self-interest alone to maintain a vicious system of government. . . . This faction is still quite as eager to do harm, but it no longer has the same power to do it; it is still the savage beast ready to bite and to tear its prey, but it can now only roar and howl, for you have drawn its fangs; times have changed for these people. In 1810, a bad governor cast your representatives into prison; since then your representatives have driven away the bad governors. Some years ago, in order to be able to govern, and in order to shield from the effect of the charges laid by the assembly, the low courtiers, his accomplices, the tyrant Craig was compelled to show himself far more wicked than he was in reality. He did not, however, succeed



## INVECTIVES AGAINST THE GOVERNOR

in frightening any one ; the people laughed at him and at the royal proclamations, and even at the inopportune *mandements* and sermons, extorted by surprise and in order to strike terror into the people. To-day, in order to govern and in order to shelter the low courtiers, his accomplices, from the punishment justly inflicted on them by the assembly, the governor is compelled to show himself shedding tears in order to excite pity and to try to appear far better than he is in reality. He has become humble and caressing in order to deceive. . . . But the evil work has not been accomplished, and his artifices are worn out. . . . He can no longer purchase traitors, patriots are no longer to be deceived. And inasmuch as, in an honest population, the number of cowards up for sale and ready to be auctioned to the highest bidder, cannot be large, they are not to be feared."

Recollections of the history of the United States were constantly in the minds of Papineau and the *Patriotes*. They found in the example of the men of the revolution of 1774 motives to induce them to follow up their own struggle, and reasons to hope for its happy issue. Indeed their whole course of action is moulded on that of the companions of Washington. Do not the resolutions of the meetings at St. Charles recall to the reader's mind the Declaration of Independence? The Americans had resolved that they would purchase no more English merchandise, and following the lead of their proto-

types, the *Patriotes* of '37 swear to replace the cotton goods and cloths of Manchester with the products of home industry. The short session of 1837 (August 18th to 26th) afforded the peculiar spectacle of nearly all the members of the House clad in Canadian frieze.<sup>1</sup> Our *Patriotes*, in fact, went a step beyond the policy of American examples, for they urged their supporters to take to smuggling as a highly meritorious calling. The rebels of 1774 had their "Sons of Liberty," and in Montreal, in November, 1837, our "*Fils de la Liberté*" exchanged blows and even shots with members of the rival Doric Club, the sworn enemies of Papineau. *La Minerve* and *The Vindicator*, the only journals advocating the cause of the *Patriotes*, became more violent with every issue,

<sup>1</sup> Referring to this, the Quebec *Mercury* laughed at their expense in the following:—"A number of Her Majesty's lieges of this city—ourselves among the number—are still suffering from 'pains in the sides,' occasioned by their cachinatory powers having been cruelly overrated and worked upon yesterday about noon, by a number of individuals who arrived from Montreal in the steamer *Canada*. These were no others than members of the House of Assembly attired in the *étouffe du pays*, conformably to general orders lately issued from smuggling headquarters.

"Mr. Rodier's dress excited the greatest attention, being unique with the exception of a pair of Berlin gloves, viz. : frock coat of granite colored *étouffe du pays*; inexpressibles and vest of the same material, striped blue and white; straw hat, and beef shoes, with a pair of home-made socks, completed the *outré* attire. Mr. Rodier, it was remarked, had no shirt on, having doubtless been unable to smuggle or manufacture one.

"Dr. O'Callaghan's 'rig out' was second only to that of Mr. Rodier, being complete with the exception of hat, boots, gloves, and shirt (he had a shirt!), and spectacles.

## THE ST. LAURENT SPEECH

the former going so far as to say on one occasion: "Our only hope is to elect our governor ourselves, or, in other words, to cease to belong to the British empire." Meetings also were held in Lower Canada, and notably at Quebec and Yamaska, at which Papineau and his lieutenants were denounced. *La Minerve* meantime thunders with incredible rage and fury against *Les Chouayens* and the bureaucrats opposed to Papineau; against M. Étienne Parent, whom it denounced as a traitor because he counselled moderation, and against the ecclesiastical authorities for preaching prudence and forbearance, and warning the people against the spirit of revolution.

The government and the authorities might well feel alarmed when they were confronted with this other part of Papineau's speech at St. Laurent: "A member of the British parliament, a man of vast

"Mr. Perrault.—Smalls and waistcoat of the prevailing material; remainder of attire composed of real British duty-paying articles.

"Mr. Viger (*Beau Viger*).—Vest only, as far as we could ascertain, of *étouffe*.

"Mr. Meilleur, Mr. De Witt, Mr. Cherrier, and Mr. Duvernay.—Same as Mr. Perrault.

"Mr. Jobin.—Complete with the exception of boots, shirt and spectacles.

"Dr. Côte.—A full suit of linsey-woolsey, viz.: grey frock coat trimmed with black; unmentionables and vest of the same material, striped blue and white; 'a shocking bad hat,' so worn that it was impossible to distinguish any traces by which the country in which it was manufactured could be ascertained. Dr. Côte stumbled upon the block avoided by Mr. Rodier, and sported hose, shirt, spectacles, shoes, etc., of vile British manufacture and materials.

"Mr. LaFontaine.—Same as *Beau Viger*."

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

wealth, eminent for his great ability and high principles, and, best of all, a man devoted to the cause of the people, to the love of justice and to the liberty of Canada, has said in the presence of the ministers themselves: 'If you mean to complete your work of iniquity, the Canadians are morally bound to resist you; yes, if the same blood ran in their veins as that which produced the Washingtons, the Franklins, and the Jeffersons, they would drive you out of their country as you were justly driven out of your former colonies.' There have been meetings held in London in which the people have re-echoed these energetic denunciations of a guilty ministry, this kindly expression of sympathy for our sufferings, and friendly warning that it is both our duty and our interest to meet violence with violence. I must say, however—and it is neither fear nor scruple that makes me do so—that the day has not yet come for us to respond to that appeal. It is not fear, for if it became a matter of necessity, the strength of the country in its remoteness from England and its proximity to the United States, would enable us to accomplish the object in view. It is not scruple . . . for it would, so to speak, associate us with the renown of the greatest and purest of men were we to advance successfully in the path traced out for us by the patriots of '74. The situation of the two countries is different, and our friends in England do not understand it when they think us deserving of blame, or consider us an

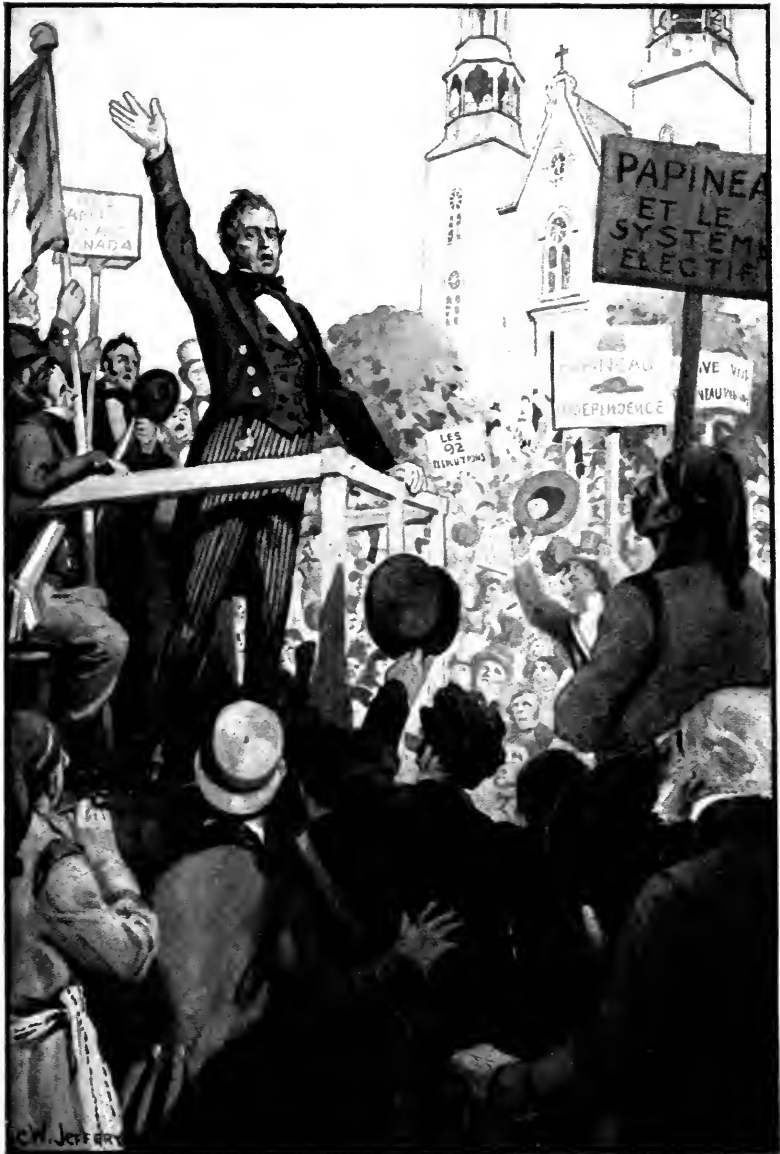
## THE MEETING AT ST. CHARLES

inferior race, if we do not resist forthwith. . . . Must we strike down or is it not better to bear a bad government?"

Mgr. Lartigue, then Bishop of Montreal, could not remain indifferent in view of the dangerous movement which daily assumed more formidable proportions in his diocese. A first warning addressed to his clergy in the month of July, urging them to keep the people within the path of duty, was followed in October by a pastoral letter exhorting them to mistrust the men who were hurrying them into rebellion. It was the meeting at St. Charles, the last of the series and the most important of them all, that brought about the intervention of the church authorities. In view of the declaration formulated at that meeting, and the men who took part in it, it stands as the most serious of all the demonstrations made in the summer and autumn of 1837; it was, so to speak, the forerunner of the explosion which followed a month later. Papineau was once more the central figure, surrounded by Nelson, Viger, Lacoste, Côte, Brown and Girod, Canadians and outsiders being represented in the number.

Unusual preparations had been made to render the proceedings impressive. The ceremony of planting the tree of liberty was carried out amid the acclamations of a host of *Patriotes* from the six neighbouring counties, whose eyes were greeted everywhere by the highly significant mottoes:

"Papineau and the Elective System!" "Independence!" "Our Upper Canadian friends," etc. The men of action, such as Nelson and Brown, on this occasion took the lead more markedly than ever before, over those who wanted to use only constitutional means in striving for redress of their grievances. This was so evident that Papineau became alarmed. His speech reflected something of the perturbation of his mind, and was considered too moderate. While he deprecated any recourse to arms, and advised his hearers simply to refrain from purchasing English goods, in order to starve out the government, Nelson exclaimed, it is said: "Let us have no petty expedients, the time has come to melt our spoons into bullets!" A month later we find Nelson and Brown at St. Charles and St. Denis amid the crash of musketry and the whistling of bullets, to which these *generals* had then appealed, to their own destruction and that of so many deluded *Patriotes*.







## CHAPTER XII

### TO ARMS!

**B**LUNDER after blunder on the one hand, and outbursts of violent language, provoked if not justified thereby, on the other—such is the record of the sayings and doings which followed the publication of the Russell resolutions, and which involved in a sanguinary conflict the rival forces, now reckless under the stress of violent and over-excited passion. In the month of November, 1837, preparations for a general stampede were hastily made in Montreal, the central point of the agitation; combats broke out in the streets on the seventh of the month between the Constitutionals of the Doric Club and the *Fils de la Liberté*, followed by the sacking of the offices of *The Vindicator*, and an attack on the residence of Papineau. In deference to the wishes of a priest, his personal friend, who urged him to leave the city, "because his presence in Montreal was a cause of disorder," Papineau set out for St. Hyacinthe; and the authorities who had so long been dozing and indifferent, suddenly, at last awoke with staring eyes which magnified and distorted out of all proportion every object offered to their vision, and made up their minds that the popular leader had set out to organize an armed revolt. Thereupon,

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

without further reflection, they charged Papineau and O'Callaghan with high treason, and took out warrants for their arrest. This was going too fast and too far. Had Gosford, at the time of the first meeting in the month of May, taken steps to maintain order, there would have been no disturbance in the autumn. At the period we have now reached, the middle of November, matters were rapidly coming to a head. Men no longer controlled events; events rather swept away those who sought to control them, and guns were soon to go off spontaneously, so to speak, as though some mysterious hand discharged them. Meantime orders were given for the arrest at St. Johns of Demaray and Davignon, who, according to rumour, were fomenting disorder. A company of the Montreal Volunteer Cavalry, by whom they were escorted, was attacked on the march from Chambly to Longueuil, and forced to surrender their prisoners into the hands of Bonaventure Viger, who had prepared this *coup de main* with a small party of *Patriotes*. The fight between the *Fils de la Liberté* and the Doric Club, and the rescuing of Demaray and Davignon were the opening skirmishes for the more serious affairs on the Richelieu River.

The improvised generals, Wolfred Nelson and Storrow Brown, had gathered together at St. Denis and at St. Charles some hundreds of *Patriotes*, determined to resist the arrest of Papineau and O'Callaghan. Colonel Gore, a Waterloo veteran, was

## COLONEL LYSONS'S NARRATIVE

entrusted with the task of dispersing these "rebels," and arresting their leaders. Gore was to proceed to Sorel and thence to ascend the Richelieu as far as St. Denis, while Colonel Wetherall advanced in the opposite direction in order to attack St. Charles. Colonel Lysons, then a lieutenant, an officer who accompanied Gore, has left us a description of the former expedition. We quote a few passages from his narrative:

"Lieutenant-Colonel Wetherall, with six companies of infantry and two light six-pounder field guns, was to cross the Richelieu at Chambly, and move by night down the right bank of the river on St. Charles, a distance of about nineteen miles; Lieutenant-Colonel Hughes, of the 24th Regiment, with five companies and a twelve-pounder howitzer, was to move from Sorel up the right bank of the river on St. Denis, which was not supposed to be strongly held, a distance of about twenty-one miles, also by night, the two forces to appear simultaneously before their respective destinations. Colonel Hughes was then to push on to St. Charles. Colonel the Honourable Charles Gore was named to take command of the whole expedition, but he was to accompany Lieutenant-Colonel Hughes's force. I went with him.

"At ten o'clock on the night of November 21st, the troops of Colonel Hughes's column turned out in the barrack square at Sorel; the rain was pouring down in torrents, and the night was as dark as

pitch. We were to move by the road called the Pot-au-beurre road, in order to avoid passing through St. Ours, which was held by the rebels. I got a lantern, fastened it to the top of a pole, and had it carried in front of the column; but what with horses and men sinking in the mud, harness breaking, wading through water and winding through woods, the little force soon got separated, those in the rear lost sight of the light, and great delays and difficulties were experienced. Towards morning the rain changed into snow, it became very cold, and daybreak found the unfortunate column still floundering in the half-frozen mud four miles from St. Denis.

"It soon became evident that the rebels were on the alert; the church bells were heard in the distance ringing the alarm, and parties of skirmishers appeared on our left flank. As the column approached nearer to St. Denis, we found all the bridges broken up. Without much delay I managed to reconstruct them strong enough to bear the howitzer, and the column continued to advance, Captain Markham leading. On reaching the outskirts of the village the rebels opened a brisk fire on us. Markham pushed on, taking house after house, until his progress was arrested by a stockade across the road, and a large fortified brick house well flanked on all sides.

"Captain Crompton, with a company of the 66th, and Captain Maitland, with a company of the 24th,

## THE AFFAIR AT ST. DENIS

were then brought up, and the howitzer came into action. The engagement was kept up until a late hour in the afternoon; the enemy had a very strong position, and appeared to increase in numbers. Captain Markham succeeded in taking one of the flanking-houses, but in doing so he was severely wounded, receiving two balls in the neck and a wound across the knee. Several of his men also were hit. At length, as the men had had nothing to eat since the previous day, and the ammunition had fallen short, Colonel Gore deemed it necessary to withdraw his force. We had no ambulance or transport of any kind, so we were obliged to leave our wounded behind; there were seventeen of them, their wounds had been dressed, and they were put in beds in one house. Six men had been killed. Markham's men were first withdrawn from the flanking-house. They brought away their favourite captain with them under a heavy fire from the fortified house. On his way back he was again shot through the calf of the leg, and one of the men (a corporal) carrying him was wounded in the foot. The other bearer was a sergeant. They had to come across a rough ploughed field frozen hard. As soon as they got near the road we ran out and lifted them over the fence; we then placed poor Markham on the only cart which remained with the column, and sent him to the rear.

“We retreated for a short distance along the road we had advanced by, and then crossed over a

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

bridge to the left in order to march by the front road. Lieutenant-Colonel Hughes, conducting the rear guard with great coolness and determination, soon stopped the rebels who were following us. Night came on, and it continued to freeze very hard. After we had crossed the bridge the gun-horses completely broke down. Lieutenant Newcoman, R.A., assisted by Colonel Hughes's rear guard, did everything in their power to save the howitzer. I got Crompton's horse and put it in with my own as leader, doing driver myself. We then succeeded in moving the gun a short distance, but it stuck fast again and got frozen firm into the ground. At last the ammunition that remained was thrown into the river, and the howitzer was spiked and abandoned."

Here we have to deal with a painful incident. On the eve of the fight Papineau left St. Denis at the request of Dr. Nelson, who seems to have said to him: "Do not expose yourself uselessly, you will be of more service to us after the fight than here." Papineau submitted, but at a subsequent period, in 1849, when political events had divided the two men, Nelson denied having advised Papineau to depart. The latter is fairly entitled to the benefit of the doubt, if any there be, on this point, and we must conclude that Nelson did in truth tell him to go. But we venture to think that had he declined the advice, posterity would have thought none the worse of him for doing so.

## THE ENGAGEMENT AT ST. CHARLES

Wetherall, who had been prevented by the bad weather from marching on St. Charles on the 22nd, the day of his departure from Chambly, as it had been settled, went forward on the 25th, and reached St. Charles the same day. With troops well equipped and provided with some pieces of artillery, he was expected to make short work of the undisciplined bands of men under Brown, with their wooden cannon and their old-fashioned muskets. In his report on the affair at St. Charles, Brown declares that the number of guns he had at the disposal of his men was one hundred and nine. About two o'clock Wetherall approached within a short distance of the village and opened fire on its best fortified point, a part of the place which was enclosed by a palisade, and as the besieged, whom he hoped to dislodge with his artillery, showed no signs of stirring, he gave the signal for an assault. A fearful carnage ensued. An eye-witness asserts that he counted one hundred and fifty dead, and all the houses, except that of M. Debartzch, were committed to the flames.

It was said at the time, that Brown took to flight before the action. He answered this charge in a letter to Nelson in 1851, in which he says that, having gone forward to reconnoitre, he had been forced to retreat with his men, whom he strove in vain to control, but "finding after a long trial, my strength and authority insufficient, I considered my command gone, turned my horse and rode

to meet you at St. Denis, where I arrived at midnight."

After the affair at St. Charles, quiet and a sense of terror prevailed on the Richelieu, but Colborne deemed it expedient to make a fresh demonstration. On November 30th, under his orders, Gore set out anew for St. Denis by way of Sorel; the same day he halted at St. Ours, and reached St. Denis on December 1st. Near that village his men discovered the body of Lieutenant Weir, a young man of much distinction and greatly esteemed, who had fallen into the hands of the *Patriotes* before the fight. He was mercilessly cut down, on his attempting to escape, by the rebels to whose care he had been committed by Nelson. Gore's men were excited to fury by the sight of poor Weir's mangled body, and in spite of their commander, sacked the village of St. Denis and committed every dwelling to the flames. There was no real justification for the slaughtering of this officer, and the deed was mercilessly avenged at St. Denis and elsewhere, as we shall see later on. If men, before acting, would only reflect on the probable consequences of their proposed actions, what calamities would be avoided! But with popular commotions, wisdom and reflection have little to do.

The disastrous occurrence on the Richelieu River should have opened the eyes of the infatuated *Patriotes* in the other sections of the country, but unfortunately, reason had no hold on certain fire-



## ST. EUSTACHE

brands of St. Eustache where Amury Girod, a self-appointed general, headed a band of excited and misguided peasants. This Girod was a Swiss—and it may be here remarked, as in the case of the two Nelsons and Storrow Brown, a stranger to the people under his command. Colborne, with artillery, horse and foot, an imposing army when compared to the rabble to be put down, marched on St. Eustache and met Dr. Chenier, who had replaced Girod; the latter, on hearing of the approach of the English troops, had fled, and fearing vengeance at the hands of the people, had committed suicide. Colborne reached St. Eustache on December 14th. What then occurred will be better told by one who took part in the action, Lieutenant Lysons, from whose narrative we have already quoted:

“When approaching the village, one brigade with the Field-Battery continued to advance on the road running parallel to the river; the other brigade turned off to the right and went across to the end of the street leading down the centre of the village, at right angles to the river. Lines of skirmishers from the village met the riverside brigade and opened fire on them, but soon retired. The field-battery then opened fire on the church and stone buildings around it; but there was no reply; so Sir John Colborne, seeing that the houses were empty and that everything was quiet, thought the rebels had retired and abandoned the place. He therefore sent Brigade-Major Dickson and his aide-de-camp

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

down the main street, facing the great stone church, with orders to bring round the other brigade into the village. As soon as they got down near the church a rattling fire was opened on them, and they narrowly escaped with their lives. It was now evident that there was yet to be a fight.

“One of the howitzers was brought round into the main street, and an attempt was made to batter in the big doors of the church, but this failed. Ned Wetherall of the Royals then managed to creep round behind the houses and get into a large stone house that was at right angles to the front of the church and to windward of it; he there upset the burning stove on the floor, and pulled every inflammable thing he could find over it. In a few minutes the whole house was on fire, and volumes of smoke mantled the front of the church. Colonel Wetherall took advantage of this and advanced his regiment under cover of the smoke at the double down the street. I jumped off my horse and went on with them. We got round to the back of the church and found a small door leading into the sacristy, which we battered in, and Ormsby and I rushed in, followed by some of our men. We then turned to our left and went into the main body of the church, which appeared quite dark, the windows being barricaded; here the rebels began firing down on our heads. We could not get up to them for the staircases were broken down, so Ormsby lighted a fire behind the altar and got his men out.

## THE QUIET OF DESPAIR

"The firing from the church windows then ceased, and the rebels began running out from some low windows, apparently of a crypt or cellar. Our men formed up on one side of the church, and the 32nd and 83rd on the other. Some of the rebels ran out and fired at the troops, then threw down their arms and begged for quarter. Our officers tried to save the Canadians, but the men shouted 'Remember Jack Weir,' and numbers of these poor deluded fellows were shot down."

After crushing the *Patriotes* at St. Eustache, to the cry of "Remember Jack Weir," Colborne's soldiers shot down without mercy the unfortunate companions of Chenier, and the country once more became quiet; but it was the gloomy quiet of despair, for the situation was even more disheartening than that which ensued after the capitulation of Quebec and Montreal. With the constitution suspended and their leaders in prison or in exile, what was to become of the Canadian people left to the mercy of a triumphant government, wielding the strong arm of undisputed power? No man ventured to answer this portentous question, which was present in the minds of all.

On December 5th, Lord Gosford proclaimed martial law in the district of Montreal, and set a price on the heads of Papineau, Nelson and the more noted of their followers. Nelson fell into the hands of the enemy, but Papineau had made good his escape. After the fight at St. Charles

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

he betook himself to St. Hyacinthe, and thence to the United States. His journey into exile was performed under circumstances of extreme misery and hardship, in the most severe weather of the year. Often suffering for lack of food, half frozen, and compelled to struggle forward in the dark nights of a Canadian winter, he was more than once reduced to the utmost extremity by cold, hunger and exhaustion. But, coupled with his bodily pains, was the mental anguish which he must have then felt and continued to endure for many a long day. How could he banish for a moment from his mind the memory of the arena wherein, for over twenty years, he had with so much *éclat* and amid scenes of such thrilling excitement, steadily held the first place, and the recollection of his native province, for which he had dreamt so glorious a destiny, and which he now saw sinking into a slough of despond amid the ruins of its shattered hopes?

In February, 1838, Gosford returned to England, to be succeeded first by Colborne and then by Lord Durham, High Commissioner, clad with extensive powers. The latter found the prisons crowded with *Patriotes*, who had been taken with arms in their hands. In place of sending them to trial and the scaffold, he simply exiled some of them to Bermuda, amongst them being Wolfred Nelson and R. S. M. Bouchette. His clemency did not meet the approval of the English parliament, and the ordinance dealing with the political prisoners was vetoed by the

## THE SECOND OUTBREAK

Melbourne government. Durham's pride would not allow him to submit to this rebuke, and he resigned his position. Undefined and extensive as they were, his powers could not justify the sending into exile, without any trial, of the eight Bermuda prisoners. It was an act in direct contravention of British procedure in criminal matters, and one which parliament could not condone. Durham smarted under the censure passed on his conduct, and issued, before leaving Quebec, a proclamation which was a defence of his action, and which drew down upon him from the *Times* the epithet of "Lord High Seditious." When accused of having violated the constitution, he retorted: "Where was the law in a country where the executive took it upon themselves to spend public money without the consent of the people?"

History has not given credit to Durham for the humanitarian sentiments which inspired his conduct in dealing with the insurgents. The penalty appointed by law for the crime of high treason is death, and from motives of humanity the high commissioner wanted to save from the scaffold Nelson, Bouchette and many others who had been arrested in open rebellion.

Colborne returned to power, and the task once more devolved upon him of crushing an outbreak, that of 1838,—the second with which he had to deal. Anything more crazy than this wretched expedition headed by Robert Nelson and Dr. Côte, of Napier-

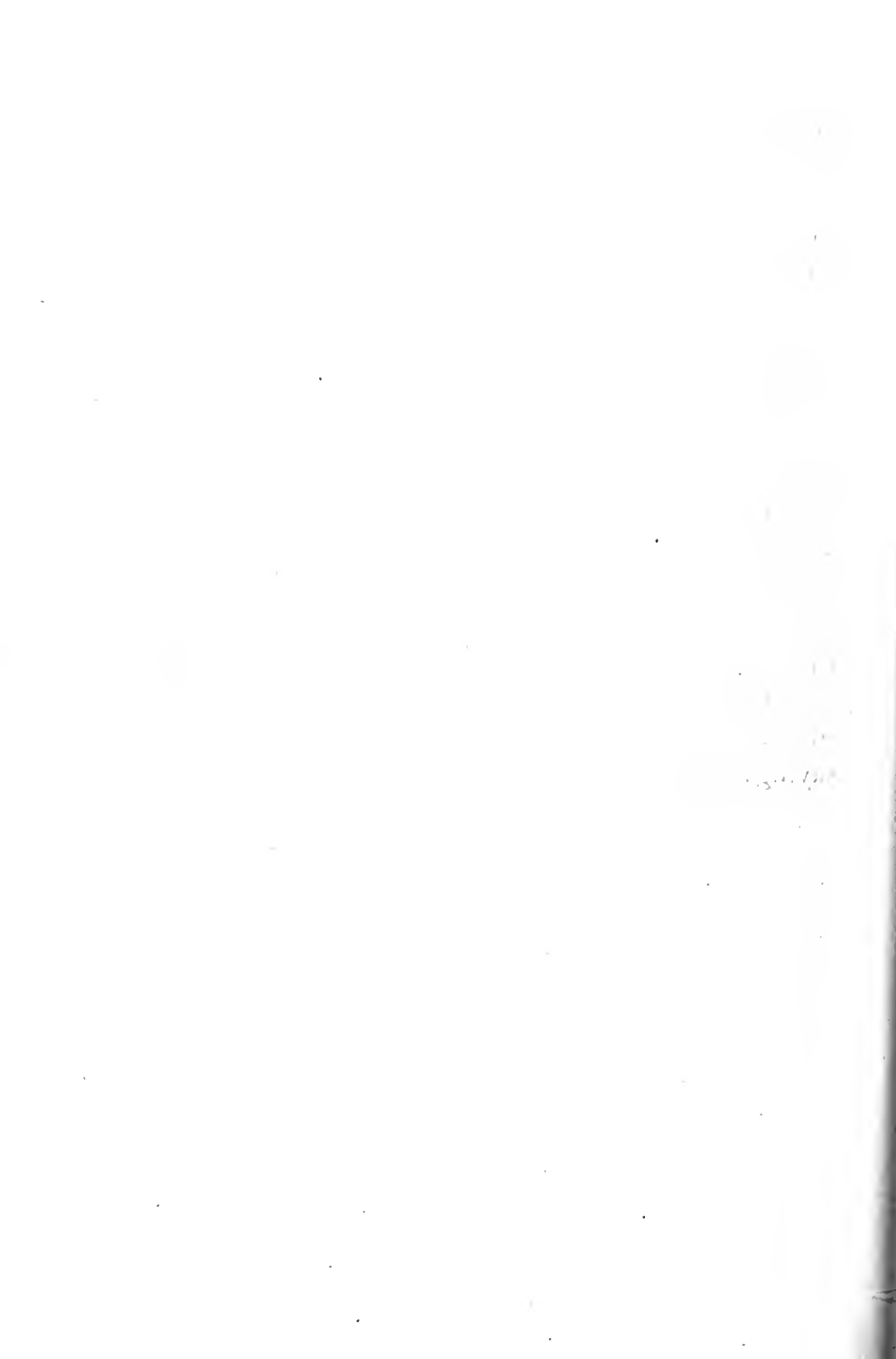
## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

ville, it would be difficult indeed to imagine. There was no prospect whatever of a successful issue to the attempt, and it was manifest to the simplest understanding that it must involve in certain destruction the deluded victims of men who were themselves carried away by some unaccountable hallucination. Defeated at Lacolle and Odelltown, Nelson returned to Vermont after the collapse of his unfortunate invasion, covered with the ridicule he had richly earned by his proclamation of a Canadian Republic and his own election as president, and loaded with the awful responsibility of having caused the loss of many lives, besides helping to hurry to the scaffold or into exile men who had been duped by his fallacious representations.

Sentiments of humanity and a horror of bloodshed had no place in the breast of a soldier such as Colborne, the old "Firebrand," as he was called, who set fire to so many villages that in some districts the sky became, as it were, a sea of fire from the reflection of the fateful flames. All the insurgents confined in the prison at Montreal were tried by courtmartial, and ninety-nine of the most deeply involved were sentenced to death; twelve were executed and the remainder transported to Australia, that far land of exile where most of them had nothing to expect but a death more lingering but no less certain than that of the scaffold. The punishment exceeded the magnitude of the offence, and it would have been quite sufficient for the ends of

## HOMO HOMINI LUPUS

justice and sound policy had the chastisement been limited to the chief offenders only. Complaints as to the severity of repression come, it is true, with a bad grace from men who undertake a revolt; but humanity never loses its rights. Colborne, who was severe and implacable unto cruelty towards the Canadians, was a prodigy of clemency in the eyes of the bureaucrats. Note the fact that only twelve executions out of ninety-nine death sentences gratified the thirst for blood of those who, with the *Herald*, in the fall of 1838, called for a general slaughter of the prisoners on the score of economy: "Why winter them over, why fatten them for the gibbet?" Such was the pitch to which racial animosity had excited the minds of certain men in those terrible days. In times of revolution and civil war, the spirit of savagery latent in the hearts of men is easily roused to action. Leibnitz was right in saying: *Homo homini lupus*.





## CHAPTER XIII

### THE REBELLION AND ITS CAUSES

ON the morrow of some great revolution, disaster or defeat, men naturally discuss the causes of the event, and strive to place the responsibility where it is due. For long years, historians debated the question whether it was Grouchy's disobedience to the emperor's orders, or a blunder of Napoleon himself, that gave the victory to Wellington on the field at Waterloo. In Canada the question is still asked whether it was precipitation on the part of Montcalm or the inaction of Vaudreuil that made it such an easy task for Wolfe to win the day beneath the walls of Quebec. In like manner the apportionment of the responsibility for bringing about the sad events of 1837 rests with the tribunal of posterity. Did Papineau advise a recourse to violence, or was it O'Callaghan and Nelson who organized the fatal rising of the Canadians? Before as well as after the crisis, Papineau invariably repudiated the charge of having sought to wrest by violence the reforms which the English government refused to grant in compliance with his constitutional remonstrances. "O'Connell," he declared, "is my model, and like him I will employ for the attainment of my ends those peaceful means

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

which the English constitution places at my disposal." If such were his intentions, it must be admitted that his own words often belied them, for there is no mistaking the bellicose nature of his furious orations. It is not in the public arena that we must seek for proof of his real designs. His letters show no trace of warlike intentions, but merely indications of a wavering spirit, which leave on the mind the impression that had he seen his way he would have followed the example of the English colonies in 1774; nor do the minutes of the "Comité Constitutionnel" of Montreal, whose proceedings were conducted in secrecy, throw any light on Papineau's views. In November, 1834, after the Montreal election which had involved the death of three Canadians shot down by the troops, Papineau dictated the following for his friends in Quebec: "The *Patriotes* of this city would have avenged this massacre, but they were so poor and so badly organized that they were not fit to meet regular troops." He then goes on to ask them whether they considered it advisable to prepare for an armed resistance. Writing in 1844 to Christie, Papineau said: "The overt acts of 1837 were sudden and unpremeditated, and they imperilled the position of England more seriously than is commonly thought. The smallest success at Toronto or Montreal would have induced the American government, in spite of the president, to support the movement." This declaration is calculated to give the impression that Papineau was,

## WHO WAS RESPONSIBLE ?

at the time, negotiating with friends in the United States. The passage quoted can hardly be explained otherwise.

Nelson, who was in command at St. Denis, repudiated the primary responsibility for the unfortunate conflict. "The whole initiative," he says, "came from Papineau. I was his assistant, his subaltern, and not his superior. I acted entirely in obedience to his orders and to his suggestions." It is but fair to state that when Nelson made this declaration (in 1849) he had quarrelled with his former friend.

Dr. O'Callaghan, who left Montreal at the same time with Papineau in order to accompany him to St. Hyacinthe and St. Marc, states, in writing to Garneau in 1852, that there was nothing premeditated in the rising of 1837; that it was a spontaneous explosion provoked by the order for the arrest of Papineau and Nelson. O'Callaghan, an Irishman who had joined Papineau through hatred of the British government, and who was elected for Yamaska by the influence of the great tribune, was a born conspirator himself, and, of course, saw conspiracies in everything done by his enemies. To his mind the events of 1837 were simply the application to Canada of the methods adopted in Ireland, where the English government provoked uprisings which they were prepared in advance to crush; and this for the purpose of justifying afterwards the extreme measures of repression inflicted

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

on that unhappy country. Gosford, according to O'Callaghan, had forced a crisis upon the Canadians in order to render unavoidable a suspension of the constitution of 1791. His letter is, nevertheless, well worth quoting:

"I do not agree with your logic as regards the movement of '37. You say '*je le blâme puisqu'il n'a pas réussi, et qu'il a eu de si tristes conséquences pour nous.*' This is a *post hoc, ergo propter hoc*, which is not authorized by the school. My dear Sir, if you will look carefully through Lord Gosford's despatches of 1836, as well as those of the colonial secretary of that and preceding and subsequent years, you will find that Gosford recommended the suspension of your constitution more than a year before there was any shadow of an outbreak.

"The truth is, the government both in Quebec and Downing street determined on abolishing the Lower Canada assembly, and only sought a pretext to justify its violence. Debartzch, who was Gosford's 'confidence man,' came to coax or browbeat me in '36 into voting for the supplies, and when he found me *inébranlable*, he very plainly told me that the result would be, that Papineau and I would be hanged! About that time Gosford recommended that the Lower Canada assembly should be abolished. Debartzch no doubt was in the secret, saw the consequences and founded his prophecy or threat or warning on the knowledge he had of the programme.

## O'CALLAGHAN TO GARNEAU

"It was Castlereagh and the Irish Union over again. Goad the people into violence and when they fall victims to the snares, abolish their constitutional rights. Read the history of Ireland and its legislative union with England, and you will see, as in a mirror, the plot of 1836-7 against Canadian liberty.

"The movement of '37, as far as I had any knowledge, was the movement of the government against peaceable citizens in order to hurry the latter in an indignant resistance of personal violence. When they dragged and isolated poor peasants, in the early part of 1837, from the Lake of Two Mountains into Montreal jail for assault, which they call treason, where was the movement? When they pulled down *The Vindicator* office, where was the movement? When they dragged Davignon and his friend, tied with ropes, from St. Johns through Chambly to Longueuil, to irritate the *habitants*—then peaceable and quiet—where was the movement?

"The truth is, the whole was a settled plan of Gosford, Ogden and Debartzch to goad and drive individuals into a resistance to personal violence so as to make out a case with which the minister might be able to go down to parliament and ask for the destruction of the act of 1791. And lest that should not suffice, Colborne backed it up by saying in one of his despatches, months before any opposition had been offered, that Papineau was drilling troops

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

somewhere near Three Rivers. This is as far as my memory serves me, for I have not the despatch by me. It was written somewhere in 1837, and you can probably turn to it. I recollect well calling Mr. Papineau's attention to it, at the time, and suggesting to him the propriety of contradicting it, for I was personally cognizant of the falsehood of the statement—but as is his wont and habit too often, he treated the thing with contempt—for it was the most atrocious lie I ever saw in print.

“I saw as clearly as I now see that the country was not prepared. But you might as well whistle to a tornado, as endeavour to contend against the deep and damnable conspiracy that was prepared and had burst forth against the rights and liberties of the people.

“The immediate *fons et origo* of the whole matter was the refusing of the supplies in 1836. The government thereupon set about bringing a collision *à la Castlereagh en Irlande*. They called out and armed volunteers, issued warrants *à tort et à travers*, and when they had the people maddened by insult they called it a rebellion. If you are to blame the movement, blame, then, those who plotted and contrived it, and who are to be held in history responsible for it. We, my friend, were the victims, not the conspirators, and were I on my death-bed, I could declare before heaven that I had no more idea of a movement or resistance when I left Montreal and went to the Richelieu River

## BOUCHETTE'S EVIDENCE

with Papineau than I have now of being bishop of Quebec. And I also know that Mr. Papineau and I secreted ourselves for some time in a farmer's house in the Parish of St. Marc, lest our presence might alarm that country and be made a pretext for rashness. The issuing of warrants and the arrest of Davignon, followed by the affair at Longueuil, came on shortly after, and matters were beyond the control of any individuals. The movement, therefore was begun in the Castle St. Lewis, and we were like straws, hurried away by the torrent and the *débâcle*."

Let us take again the evidence of another of the actors in the drama of 1837—Robert S. M. Bouchette, who subsequently was for many years commissioner of customs at Ottawa. His word will have the more weight from the fact that, owing to his social standing and his tastes, he was far more closely connected with the governor's party than with that of the French Canadians. When Lord Russell's resolutions became known in Quebec, he considered them to be a violation of the privileges of the House, took sides with Papineau and placed himself at the disposal of Nelson. Having been taken prisoner at Moore's Corners, he was sent to Montreal. During his imprisonment, Colonel Dundas, a personal friend, wrote to him expressing regret at seeing him in so unfortunate a position, and deploring especially having learned that he had been arrested as a rebel. Bouchette

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

replied in forcible and eloquent terms, as may be seen by the following quotation from his very able letter:

“At this period (1834) and under the circumstances adverted to, commenced my political career. The side I took in the questions at issue was in accordance with my convictions, though it was at variance with my tastes, for it tended to alienate from me many of my friends, most of whom stood in the ranks of my political opponents. Nevertheless, I resigned myself to the sacrifice, and did so the more readily owing to the prevalence in my mind of that lethargy of social feeling that makes one alike indifferent to the frowns as to the blandishment of society. My professional pursuits and the rights of the people henceforward divided and altogether engrossed my whole attention. When I say the rights of the people, I do not mean those abstract or extravagant rights for which some contend, but which are not generally compatible with an organized state of society, but I mean those cardinal rights which are inherent to British subjects, and which, as such, ought not to be denied to the inhabitants of any section of the empire, however remote.

“A thorough knowledge that these rights were denied to the Canadian people, in practice, that we had the shadow and not the substance of the British constitution, that the wheels of government were clogged by corruption, that the most unworthy partiality poisoned the fountains of trust, of office



## BOUCHETTE'S LETTER

and power, that irresponsibility pervaded every department of the local government, in fact that the colony was the devoted nursery of mere home patronage; a thorough knowledge, I say, of these grievances nerved my advocacy of the cause and lent new vigour to my exertions as an individual, to obtain a reform of these odious abuses and the more general introduction of elective institutions which I conceived to be the only effective remedy against existing evils.

“Since 1834 the political horizon had gradually darkened; the legislative assembly boldly resorted to its constitutional privilege of withholding the supplies—the breach hence became wider. In 1837, Lord John Russell proposed and parliament passed his famous Canadian Resolutions—resolutions more impolitic if possible than they were despotic. Well might Sir Robert Peel in the debates on the Canada question, charge the ministry with want of foresight in not sending out an army to Canada with the resolutions, for they must have anticipated that no set of freemen boasting of the title of British subjects could tamely submit to the political degradation they comported. Lord John Russell’s measure provoked universal indignation. Meetings were held in all the most popular counties of the province, and the people boldly declared those resolutions to be a flagrant violation of their constitutional rights. Their language was strong—excitement ran high—and that excitement was greatly

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

enhanced by the virulence of the opposite party, who called themselves the *Constitutionals*, or conservative party, *i.e.*, the conservators of existing abuses.

“The meetings alluded to were held through the summer. In October last the famous meeting of the five (strictly, six) counties was held at St. Charles. The proceedings of this meeting, though by no means more demonstrative of the state of public feeling than the resolutions adopted at previous public meetings, were nevertheless made, sometime subsequently, the groundwork of a series of arrests comprising all the leading public men of the colony, to the number of forty or fifty. It was this violent and ill-advised measure of the executive government that forced the people into resistance; and this brings me to the consideration of an expression of yours which I am sure you will think unmerited when the circumstances are made known—I mean the words ‘gratuitous revolt.’

“Indeed, I trust I have already said enough to convince you that if there was a revolt at all, it was anything but gratuitous. I don’t think that you, the people of the British Isles, would calmly stand by and see your warmest and ablest friends and supporters arrested, and the liberties of the people thus jeopardized! Bolingbroke would have blushed for the country which in such a conjuncture had not boldly stood forward in defence of Liberty. This was absolutely the position of Lower Canada

## BOUCHETTE'S LETTER CONTINUED

after the adoption of the debasing resolutions of Lord John Russell.

“The Canadians rallied around their assembly and asserted its constitutional rights, and for thus doing they were deemed traitorous and seditious. As well might one deem the popular meetings of London or Birmingham subversive of the king and constitution. But in truth, in the strict acceptation of the term, there was no definitely planned revolt, but the people spontaneously, and without concert, determined upon protecting their leaders. This put numbers in arms and gave to the country an appearance of pre-concerted rebellion, but there was no such thing, and if proof were requisite it could be found in the unprepared state of the people in point of armament, there being generally two or three pitch-forks and as many scythes and flails to one fowling piece, and this not always of the best.

“Had a decided revolt been meditated it must have been easy to procure from the adjacent States such munitions of war as would have efficiently armed the whole Canadian population. But the immediate aim of the country was not the overthrow of British dominion, it was a movement of self-protection against an arbitrary exercise of ministerial and judicial power, and the resistance was in some instances the more desperate from the apprehension entertained that the government had designated several victims.”

The events of 1837 were the inevitable outcome

of various causes imputable primarily to the successive ministers of the colonies, who were quite indifferent about Canadian affairs and ill-informed as to the real intentions of our people and as to the plans of their opponents. In 1791, the province was given a constitution, liberal in its letter but too susceptible of being diverted from its object. From the first day it went into operation, the Canadians saw that the government was striving to restrict its advantages. And when they made complaint the answer was, to bear in mind that they were the descendants of Frenchmen who had been deprived of all participation in public affairs, and should, therefore, not be so anxious to obtain from the British government what they did not enjoy under the French régime. With a constitution which allowed the executive to govern as it pleased, were we not still under the arbitrary régime so justly condemned? "See the splendid constitution the king has given you," our adversaries seemed to say, "it is a noble instrument; but you are not to use it." Under the law, our ancestors were British subjects, but that noble quality of citizenship, good though it might be in theory, practically meant nothing for them; they could claim nothing on that score, except of course in times of danger to the state, when they might shed their blood in defence of the country like ordinary British subjects.

Such was the initial error of the colonial office. Had the Canadians been given forthwith the full

## ARBITRARY POWER

privileges of citizenship, how much trouble would have been avoided! It is useless to object that to have admitted them to the executive and to the legislative council would have been to subordinate the English element to the French, and that the latter would have abused their ascendancy. That evil forecast has not stood the impartial test of history as it evolves itself from day to day in the province. At any rate, it would have been only fair to make the experiment, particularly in view of the fact that the home government and the governor were in a position to see that no injustice should be inflicted on the English speaking element.

The chief fault of the Act of 1791, which, in the hands of right-minded men, would have met all the needs of the country, was that it left too much scope for the exercise of arbitrary power. So great is man's infirmity that he is ever prone to commit abuses, and any and all power placed in his hands should be coupled with a counterpoise. This the wisdom of the fathers of the American constitution enabled them thoroughly to understand and apply in their great work, in which the liberty of the individual stands surrounded with safeguards. There is nothing of the kind in the constitution of 1791, which places no restraint whatever on the action of the executive, save its responsibility to the colonial office. Finding that this system of government put no check whatever on the encroachments of the governor and his friends, the legislative

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

assembly, led by Papineau, undertook to erect barricades around the government. For six years the Crown was without supplies, an abnormal state of things, which the government met by drawing from the military chest; it was a condition of permanent anarchy and illegality.

What was to be done to put an end to this deadlock? Papineau felt that he could not surrender without the sacrifice of hopes which he held sacred, and submission to conditions which permanency would render intolerable. But the wiser course would surely have been to refrain from adopting the extreme course of perpetually refusing the supplies, and to persist in claiming redress of grievances from the home government. This mode of proceeding would have taken more time, but in the end it would have brought about the triumph of right.

As the lessons of history are generally lost on the people, and men in power acquire wisdom only under the pressure of calamity, the government forgot the lesson of the American revolution, then so recent and so striking. Not only in Quebec, but in each and all of the colonies, the men of Downing street held on to the reins until the people threatened to take them from their hands. Let us see, for instance, what occurred in Australia. It was not until 1824 that the colony was granted a semblance of a government, which was somewhat improved in 1842. This colony was not definitely endowed with

## LORD DURHAM'S VIEW

the privilege of dealing with its own affairs until 1856; after thirty years of persistent claiming of its rights. Up to that date all the officials in the country were appointed in London. It is not difficult to imagine the result of such a system, especially in a province such as ours, where a racial question presented itself, over and above the abuses common to all the colonies, and rendered the problem more complicated. "When we examine into the system of government in these colonies," remarks Lord Durham in his report, "it would almost seem as if the object of those by whom it was established had been the combining of apparently popular institutions with an utter absence of all efficient control of the people over their rulers."

As above stated, the government refused to recognize the Canadians as British subjects on the same footing with the other inhabitants of Canada. The governor and his *entourage* looked upon them as a conquered people of inferior race, who were to be kept under, as it were, by the fear of the sword of Brennus. That feeling had taken possession of what constituted "society," in those days, in Montreal and Quebec. In this pseudo aristocratic circle reigned a spirit of hostility towards the French Canadians, who were carefully excluded from its ranks. No opportunity was lost of slighting and insulting them. This select circle included the official class, the bureaucracy, the whole of the

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

governor's party—the Château clique—so called, and the officers of the regiments then in Canada. All these people really believed that they were made of different clay from the descendants of the old colonists, and looked down upon them from the height of their own insolent snobbishness. They considered that the country belonged to them by right of conquest and that they were entitled to use it and exploit it for their own exclusive advantage, and they had no scruple in doing so. There were amongst them what might be called official dynasties, which had come to consider their positions as hereditary for their special benefit. Writing to Dominick Daly, provincial secretary, in 1847, Lord Gosford, than whom no one had had better opportunities to know them, called the clique “a domineering faction, which could be satisfied with nothing short of absolute power, and this ought to have been resisted and suppressed by a steady, uniform, and undeviating regard for the interest of the majority of the people.”

“They hold the chief offices of the state,” said a contemporary writer, “possess what were then considered large incomes, make constantly a great display and set the fashion. When the military first come amongst us they find certain persons high in office to whom they deem it wise to pay their court. . . . The whole Canadian population constitutes the object of the hatred of this ruling class, and that portion living in the country, which chance



## HUMILIATION

brings into town, are subjected to their special contempt and ill-treatment."<sup>1</sup>

These contemptible insults cannot justify a rebellion, but it is, nevertheless, manifest that this unceasing assumption of disdain was not of a nature to permit a mingling of the two elements whose true interest it was to come to a mutual understanding. In social life, under any circumstances, a wound to self-love creates eternal ill-will; but national self-love is still more susceptible, and any slight to that sentiment involves a degree of humiliation which can hardly be overlooked. Behind these wretched annoyances, which may seem insignificant to one who is not himself subjected to them, loomed up the conviction, only too strikingly confirmed by the conduct of successive incumbents of the colonial office, that the object of the English government was to crush the French Canadians.

As far back as 1808, had not Craig entertained the idea of uniting Lower Canada with the neighbouring province, for the purpose of denationalizing our people? Was not the entrusting of the public instruction in the province to the Royal Institution (an English Protestant institution) an attempt to lay hands on our Canadian youth? The union scheme of 1822 was, it is true, put aside, but with the secret determination to revive it sooner or later. Being fully cognizant of the views current in

<sup>1</sup> "A Political and Historical Account of Lower Canada," by a Canadian, London, 1830.

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

England in our regard, what possible reliance could Papineau place on promises of reform which were constantly broken? Distrust in the long run became his habitual mood, until it culminated in utter exasperation, often the source of reckless deeds.

In "The Life of Cartier" it is pointed out that the whole movement prior to 1837, was not of a popular character. Papineau had not embodied in his statement of grievances any of those burning questions which go to the hearts of a people, such as religious persecution, or direct attempts to destroy their language. The privileges of the House of Assembly, the voting of the supplies by the representatives of the people, the encroachment on the rights of the other chamber, were all, so far as the good *habitants* of Lower Canada knew, so many abstract questions, about which they understood nothing whatever. Owing to atavistic influence the governor's arbitrary rule was not for them an unbearable yoke. Happy in the peaceful possession of their farms, in the free practice of their religion, and the use of the French language, they led a quasi patriarchal existence. What more was needed to satisfy their simple, frugal tastes? Finding in the farm the wherewithal to feed and clothe themselves, and having, therefore, but a trifle to pay in the shape of indirect taxes—and the customs duties were in fact very low—they were self-supporting and in an enviable state of independence. The Canadian settler was therefore inclined to remain indifferent as

## PAPINEAU'S INFLUENCE

regards political agitation, and nothing short of the trumpet tones of Papineau could have roused him from his lethargy and brought him into line. He felt that he had grievances to complain of, because Papineau told him so; he believed, though he could not see.

But does not the admission that such was the state of mind of so large a section of the Canadian people force us to admit that Papineau's complaints were groundless? Not at all! Quite a large proportion of the Canadian population had a full sense of their position, and were well aware that the abuses they then complained of and combated, were fraught with evil results for the future. Besides, is it not manifest that the commission of an act of injustice towards a single individual constitutes a menace to the whole? That is a truth of experience demonstrated by the political history of England.

100

100

100

100

100

100

100

100

100

100

100

100

100

100

## CHAPTER XIV

### EXILE AND RETURN TO CANADA

**B**ANISHMENT from one's country is one of those great afflictions for which nothing can afford consolation, and the more it is prolonged the more its bitterness increases. It was peculiarly painful for Papineau, who saw his country plunged in mourning and misfortune, instead of enjoying all the advantages he had striven to secure for it. Proscription wounded him to the heart, for throughout all his past struggles he had found no rest or happiness but in the bosom of his family and in the midst of his friends, for whom he was ever full of affection and tenderness. After his flight from St. Hyacinthe he proceeded to Albany, where he was joined by his wife and children. But the latter were soon compelled to return to Canada, with the exception of his eldest son, who accompanied him to France in order to study for the medical profession. This separation was most painful for Papineau, and it was rendered more poignant still by the anguish he endured from the spectacle, ever present in his mind, of his country groaning under the weight of calamities for which he himself was in some quarters held to be responsible.

"You well know, my dear Benjamin," he writes

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

to his brother (Paris, November 23rd, 1843) "that my separation from my wife and my children, my brothers and my sisters, and their families, and from so many other relatives, friends and fellow-countrymen who are dear to me, and to whom the best and longest part of my life has been devoted, is a daily and hourly source of grief and sorrow to me. I would cheerfully bear all this, however, to the very last hour of my existence, rather than humble myself in the least before our persecutors." He could have returned to Canada as early as 1842, under the amnesty which LaFontaine had obtained specially for Papineau from Sir Charles Bagot. But reasons of a political and personal character prevented his return, and he prolonged his stay in France up to 1845. In the isolation of exile, he needed an occupation sufficiently absorbing to divert him from his gloomy ponderings; he found it in his love of study, and he was naturally led to take up historical research, to which, while in Paris, he devoted the best part of his time. In that atmosphere which the great libraries have impregnated, so to speak, with science and learning, his mind soon imbibed comfort and nourishment from the restful influence of books, and his letters of that period show that he was to some extent consoled by the delight he found in his new occupation. It seemed for a time to imbue him with a loathing for politics. "In your letters," he says in writing to his brother, "you speak of nothing

## LIFE IN PARIS

but politics. Why do you not tell about something else?" Then returning to his literary work, he continues: "I have been given free access to the archives. I find them far richer in historical and legal matter than I expected, in relation to the history of Canada. Access to these archives had previously been denied to Lord Durham. . . . If I could afford it I would secure help to copy documents which will sooner or later be popular in our country, that is to say, when the taste for mental culture becomes stronger and more widely diffused than up to the present time."

But it was not so easy for him as he fancied to give up politics—the old fascination seized him once more and swayed him beyond all reason. It was political animus that wrenched from him in 1839 the first part of his history of the insurrection, in which virulent recrimination takes up more space than the narration of events, and which he did well not to complete. There are, nevertheless, scattered throughout the fiery pages of this pamphlet important statements to be noted, such as that in which he asserts that he never intended to extort by violent means the reforms he wanted: "I defy the government to contradict me when I assert that none of us had ever organized, desired, or even anticipated armed resistance . . . . not that an insurrection would not have been legitimate, but we had resolved not to resort to it as yet."

In 1845, Papineau returned to Canada. His

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

fellow-countrymen welcomed him heartily, feeling that his services had more than expiated his faults, and forgot everything but the memory of his splendid past. The exile of 1837 came back stronger than ever before, and crowned with a halo of glory, the whole population manifesting their sympathy for the returned exile. Public curiosity was manifested as to his intentions for the future, but, assuming the mantle of reticence and discretion, he kept silent on the subject, and retired to his estate of La Petite Nation, where he shut himself up in the dignity of retirement until 1847. Would that, for the glory of his own name, he had never left his quiet retreat to tread once more the political arena, wherein having in former times taken the lead for thirty years, he could not play a subordinate part without lowering himself and bringing trouble on his friends!

Eager to wield once more the influence he exercised in former days, or it may be, hoping for an opportunity to take revenge on England, he again entered parliament; and we must certainly acknowledge that this second stage in his career, which terminated in 1854, added nothing to his fame as a statesman. Eight years of absence from the country had put him out of touch with the political ideas of his countrymen. A new mode of looking at events and dealing with things political had supplanted the views held by Papineau, who was still firmly grappled to the opinions of



## HIS NEW IDEALS

the stormy days of the period from 1820 to 1837. Coming in contact during his life in Paris with the advanced spirits of the period, such as Lamennais, Louis Blanc and Béranger, his liberalism had become deeply tinged with radicalism, and this produced a fresh element of severance between him and his former friends. The bitterness of defeat drove him to fits of anger which he vainly strove to control, and which often paralyzed his momentary good resolutions. Thus when accepting the representation of the county of St. Maurice, in 1847, he promised to support LaFontaine. "It is only," he declared in his address, "to give the Liberal government an opportunity of showing that they are able, as they are undoubtedly willing, to render good service." Reason then had the upper hand with him, but it was soon to lose all semblance of control over his mind.

It was evidently impossible for Papineau to coöperate with LaFontaine, who had, it was well known, become convinced that the union could be made to work so as to render full justice to the French Canadians. The former refused to put the smallest faith in responsible government, and demanded: "The repeal of the Act of 1840, and the independence of Canada; for the Canadians need never expect justice from England. To submit to her would be an eternal disgrace and a signing of their own death warrant; independence, on the contrary, would be a principle of resurrection

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

and national life." On his return to Canada, his hatred for England was coupled in his mind with a real horror of monarchical institutions. Aristocracy in all its forms was, he considered, the real enemy of good government and the foundation of despotism; as if the representative assembly of a democracy could not become despotic! As if a collective body, even when the offspring of universal suffrage, did not sometimes become oppressive!

Was it possible for a man entertaining such ideas to remain a supporter of the Liberal administration under LaFontaine and Baldwin, which had just taken the place of the Draper government? The violence of his sentiments was certain to separate him completely from the ranks of those with whom he had associated in the past, and from whom he, at first, did not dare to part. His attitude in the House very soon assumed the character of a mild opposition, and culminated ere long in avowed hostility. There is no standing still on a slope, in politics as in other matters, and under the stimulating influence of the human passions of hatred and disappointed ambition, Papineau soon became an unflinching enemy. He quickly confessed that the Tories were not so black as he had thought them to be, nor the Liberals so white as he had deemed them. He depreciated the claims of the latter, and lauded the former, in order to justify his own hostility towards LaFontaine. The fact is that the great agitator was now utterly blinded by his

## STANDING ALONE

hatred of British institutions, and denounced in unmeasured terms all those who upheld them. Moreover, he was never over-generous to those of his associates who ceased to share his views. One after another, Vallières, Neilson and Debartzch, when they had differed with him, became the objects of his scathing sarcasms. In 1849, LaFontaine is "a mere simpleton, kicked and cuffed and deceived by his confederates; a bloated corruptionist." Blake and Drummond are two "shameless Irishmen who insult the memory of O'Connell and the sufferings of Ireland." He was carried beyond all bounds of reason by political passion.

Papineau's temperament was evidently wholly cast for opposition, and a ceaseless and unflinching criticism of the acts of his adversaries. Habit had imparted to his mind, during the long years of his struggle with Dalhousie, a decided bent impossible to remove. To find fault seemed a part of his nature, and in 1849, when he could see no enemies to attack, he vented his wrath on his friends, the Liberals. Indeed he probably depicted in a pleasant way the natural bent of his own mind when, in answer to his brother who, on his arrival from France, blamed him for having delayed one day in his coming from Montreal to Quebec, he said, "I waited to take an Opposition boat."

The sentiments ruling his mind were such as to involve him inevitably in a hand-to-hand encounter with LaFontaine. Hence, in the session of 1849, we

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

find him engaged in a merciless attack on his former lieutenant. This was a struggle between two adversaries richly endowed with mental powers of a high order, but of diametrically opposite character; the one with the prestige of a brilliant past career and the halo surrounding his reputation as the most eloquent speaker in the country, a splendid voice which age had in no way affected, and a bad cause; the other, a cool-blooded advocate, with perfect self-control in argument, a master of trenchant logic, appealing to reason alone in defence of his impregnable position, and a good cause.

Papineau rushed to the assault with his old-time fervour and energy, and for ten hours held forth against his former friend, who had now become his enemy, because he had not broken with England, and had finally accepted the union of 1840, against which he had at first protested. Such was the scope of his lengthy indictment which, sad to say, was not free from malicious insinuations calculated to impugn the honour of the prime minister.

At the period of the union the whole Canadian people had protested against Lord Durham's scheme, which had been prepared as a means of disposing once for all of the French question in Canada. Papineau, recurring to this popular pronouncement, taunted LaFontaine with having accepted the new régime, which had at first seemed to him an abomination. As to himself, he said, he had not changed, and the union of the two

## ATTACK ON LAFONTAINE

Canadas was in his eyes a vassalage, a servitude, which must be forthwith put an end to. "LaFontaine's attitude is simply cowardice, for the union has produced for us nothing but deplorable results, and can only lead to our enslavement." "For my part," he continued, "I see nothing in it but treachery and iniquity, a law of proscription and of tyranny against our people. That Liberals such as LaFontaine should accept this régime is something I cannot understand. Hence it is that I am opposed to a government which is putting the finishing touch on Lord Sydenham's work. This ministry has no capacity for good, but much for evil, much for the enslaving of those over whom it holds sway." In the stormy rush of his feelings he had come to hate the Liberals more than the Tories, his former foes. He does not express this sentiment in plain words, but it is quite clear that such was the fact. "I must say, nevertheless, that this Draper Tory government, of which I had so poor an opinion, and the present ministry, from which I expected such great things, have both alike disappointed my hopes and my fears. The moment I began to know our Liberal ministry, I began to see that nothing good was to be expected from it." Then reviewing LaFontaine's programme, he found it "teeming throughout with subject matter deserving of condemnation and reproach." In matters of finance and political economy, everything must, he declared, be recast. A great deal of attention was even then devoted to the ques-

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

tion of means of communication and transportation, and he pronounced the plans of the government in relation thereto to be hazardous and extravagant. The scheme of enabling sea-going vessels to reach the great lakes by means of canals he considered ridiculous. But Papineau lived long enough to see how mistaken he had been in underestimating the resources of the country, and how little foundation there was for the following forecasts: "It was a mistake to build these canals of such dimensions as to serve for ostentation rather than for utility. It is folly to think that European vessels will ever, through our canals, penetrate so far into the country. The currents and the winds will prove an obstacle, and render the voyage too long and too costly, and the idea of undertaking the construction of canals of such vast dimensions in order to enable European vessels to reach the lakes is nothing but a dream. No, that will never take place; I assert it without hesitation, for everything shows me that it is impossible. The extension of our navigation to Kingston can never thus be profitably realized, and all the expenditure incurred to that end has been incurred to no purpose. But England has been no wiser than our government; she applauded our folly, and urged us on to it by promising us a protection which she is now withdrawing."

LaFontaine had no difficulty in proving the injustice of his opponent's attack, and in demolishing his whole argument. In his opening remarks,

## LAFONTAINE'S REPLY

after reminding Papineau that he had obtained an amnesty in his behalf, he said: "If I committed a fault in entering the government, he is the one who has reaped the benefit, for were it not for that error of mine, he himself would not be in this House to-day, pouring phials of wrath and contumely on the heads of his old-time political comrades and friends. He would still be pining in exile."

Casting a retrospective glance at the working of the new constitution from 1841 to 1849, LaFontaine undertook to show that it had been possible for him, without logical inconsistency, to accept it, and join in the task of bringing it into operation, much to the advantage of his French Canadian fellow-citizens. It was not he who had changed, but the Union Act itself. The clause proscribing the French language had been struck out, and the Act had been the means of giving them responsible government, which embodies all the privileges claimed by the Canadian people prior to 1837. "I felt constrained," he continued, "to yield to the solicitations of my colleagues, with a deep sense of the responsibility then resting upon me. And when I consider the immense advantages my fellow-countrymen have derived from this measure, I see no reason to regret the course I took. My country has approved of it, and the honourable member himself, on the eve of the general election, in the county of St. Maurice, said that he approved of it! With what degree of sincerity and for what purpose he made that declar-

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

ation in his too celebrated manifesto, I leave it to this House and to his electors to say. In flat contradiction with that statement, which his electors at the time must have taken to be sincere, the honourable member tells us, to-day, that it was a fault and a crime for a French Canadian to take office in 1842. He has told us what, according to his view, was the line of conduct, the system of opposition, we should have adopted at that period and followed steadily ever since. He draws a contrast between that system and ours. From that point of view I accept the challenge with pleasure, and have no anxiety as to the result. The question being so put, let us see what have been the consequences of our system for the French Canadian people, and what would have resulted from that of the honourable member.

“It will not, I think, be unjust to the honourable member to qualify his system as a system of opposition *to the bitter end*; he himself so qualified it on several occasions. I leave to the honourable member the full benefit of a declaration which I have often made and which I now repeat: The idea of the governor who suggested, the idea of the man who had drafted the Act, was that the union of the two provinces would crush the French Canadians. Has that object been attained? Has Lord Sydenham’s idea been realized? All my fellow-countrymen, except the honourable member, will answer with one unanimous voice: No! But they will also admit, as every



## LAFONTAINE'S REPLY CONTINUED

honest man will admit, that had the system of opposition to the bitter end, upheld by the honourable member, been adopted, it would have brought about, ere now, the aim of Lord Sydenham: the French Canadians would have been crushed! That is what the honourable member's system would have brought us to, and what it would bring us to to-morrow, if the representatives of the people were so ill-advised as to adopt it.

“The protest of 1841 has a scope and bearing which it behooves us to bear well in mind to-day; but, to my mind, the refusal of the government and the majority of the legislature of Upper Canada to accede to that protest had a far greater significance. That refusal demonstrates absolutely that the Act of Union had not made of the two Canadas one single province, but that it simply united under the action of one single legislature two provinces theretofore distinct and separate, and which were to continue to be so, for all other purposes whatsoever; in short, there had been effected, as in the case of our neighbours, a confederation of two provinces, of two states. It was in accordance with this view of the facts, based on the operation of the Act of Union, as it was interpreted by Upper Canada itself, when the province was invited to do so by the Lower Canada Liberals, in their protest of 1841, that I regulated my political course in 1842. And relying upon the principle that the Act of Union is only a confederation of the two provinces, as Upper Canada

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

itself declared it to be in 1841, I now solemnly declare that I will never consent that one of the sections of the province shall have in this House a larger number of members than the other, whatever may be the figure of its population."<sup>1</sup>

In this great debate Papineau's eloquence carried all before it as a piece of art, but cool reason gave the victory to LaFontaine. The tribune had fought with great courage, and he needed a good stock of energy to carry on the fight alone, and with the memory in his mind of the days in the old assembly when he spoke as a master, when all things yielded to the charm and authority of his voice. His position now was a false one, and he fell into the grave error of not perceiving it. All was changed since 1837; the political world had marched forward in the light of new ideas, effecting its evolutions in virtue of principles contrary to those of the past. Papineau stood alone, entrenched in his old position, and hurled defiance at his new enemies as though he had still to cross swords with Dalhousie, Aylmer or Gosford.

Prior to 1837, the French Canadians carried on the struggle for power against the English anent racial questions, ever a most exciting and enervating subject of debate. An essential characteristic of such struggles is that they become aggravated with the lapse of time, and develop passions which so

<sup>1</sup> Papineau had, in the debate referred to, expressed himself as favourable to representation based on population.

## HIS UNCOMPROMISING ATTITUDE

obliterate all sense of justice and injustice as to close the door to the possibility of mutual concession and compromise. After the union, the alliance of the LaFontaine Liberals with the Baldwin Reformers operated as a salutary diversion, by affording fresh channels for forces which up to that time were constantly rushing into conflicts fraught with danger. It then became possible to deal with the material interests of the country which had so long suffered from neglect. The solution presented by LaFontaine of the political problem commended itself to the people generally; for, bearing in mind the sad experience of 1837, they dreaded the idea of straying after perilous illusions by following in the wake of Papineau. To renew the former agitation would be, they considered, to open afresh the wounds by which their country had so long been exhausted. Many reforms were of course still required, but it was hoped that the ministry when once in full possession of the means of action provided by the constitution, would promptly find suitable remedies. Inflexible in his principles, Papineau held in abhorrence the idea of mutual concessions, or compromise of any kind, which are of the essence of a constitutional system. Disdainful in his isolation, and boldly facing his enemies, his bearing and attitude seemed to express undying hostility, and his lips might well have phrased the unbending words: *Etiam si vos omnes, ego non!* His attitude was a proud one, but was it more reason-

able than that of his opponents? However that may be, one feels inclined even while giving a verdict against him, to bow before the strength and power of conviction with which he urged his views. If Papineau felt himself isolated on the floor of the House, he found without, a certain number of friends and adherents, irreconcilables like himself, who refused to believe that England, victorious on the battle-field of the insurrection, had given up, after her defeat in the political arena, the idea of putting an end to French influence in Canada. From this group of refractory patriots, whose ranks had been augmented by the accession of a number of young men (who had been attracted by their admiration for Papineau, and afterwards became his disciples) issued, in 1849, *Le parti démocratique*—a party deeply influenced by the revolution of 1848 in France.

The leading men of the new organization were the two Dorions, Rodolphe Laflamme, Dessaulles, (a nephew of Papineau), Labrèche-Viger, and J. Daoust, with *l'Avenir*, and *Le Canadien*, for a short time, as their representative newspapers. They all took their cue from Papineau, sought their inspiration in his speeches and joined in a programme reflecting his ideas. The articles forming the creed of the democratic party included the repeal of the Act of Union, the annexation of Canada to the United States, and, pending the absolute severance of the colonial link, the intro-

## LAFONTAINE'S RETIREMENT

duction of the elective principle into every branch of the administration, and the selection, through that mode, of public officials, magistrates and members of the legislative council.

The French Canadian Liberal party—up to that time solidly united—split up into two factions; and this break up of the national forces affected LaFontaine so deeply, that he resolved to retire from public life after the session of 1851. Speaking at a banquet tendered to him by his friends on the occasion of his retirement, LaFontaine, who was then but forty-three, having referred with some feeling to the rapidity with which the struggles of political life wear out its votaries, continued as follows: "And I beg to assure you that, in retiring from public life, I cannot but regret to witness the efforts being made to create division in the ranks of the French population of this country. But I have had sufficient experience to enable me to tell you with perfect confidence that these efforts cannot succeed. Our people are gifted with sufficient strong common sense to see clearly that, if they divide their forces, they will be powerless, and their fate will be that predicted by a member of the Tory party some years ago in these words: 'The Canadians are fated to be led always by men of another race.' For my part, I despise the efforts now being made to divide the Canadians, and they will not succeed."

LaFontaine's predictions were ill-founded, as was

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

shown by the result of the elections in 1854, when quite a number of Papineau's adherents were elected to parliament. Moreover, the disunion had already taken effect in 1849, on the foundation of *Le club démocratique*. LaFontaine feigned — we do not know for what purpose—to be unaware of the existence of this division, which was, as his friends tell us, the chief cause of his retirement, and to which he makes allusion when in his speech he speaks of the disgust inspired by politics.

Papineau retired into private life three years after his rival, wearied and disappointed, but full of hope in the future of democracy and its final triumph in Canada. Living in retirement at La Petite Nation, he never wholly ceased to take an interest in public affairs. In spite of himself his ardent and active spirit continually haunted the arena which he had so long filled with his presence.

A keen observer of men and things, he studied our institutions in contrast with those of the United States, which on every occasion he used as a subject of comparison and as a criterion in support of his opinions. An examination of the Constitutional Act of 1840, in contrast with Washington's great work, led to his inditing in a letter to Christie<sup>1</sup> some singular comments on that charter. Strange to say,

<sup>1</sup> This letter bears the date of November, 1854. At that time Papineau had become reconciled with Christie, his old opponent, whom he had caused to be expelled four times from the House, on the charge of having advised Dalhousie to dissolve parliament.

## HIS OPINION OF THE UNION ACT

he finds it too liberal, and one asks himself whether it was really Papineau who wrote this: "The country has entered upon a new phase. The democratic element has suddenly become dominant in a dangerous degree, and there is no counterpoise. In the United States the peculiar position given to the Senate, is in itself a counterpoise to the tendency to over-acceleration in the action of the representative body; but the most effectual of all is the Supreme Court, whose decisions suspend the execution of laws contrary to the rules of justice established by the constitution of each State. Here the legislative assembly alone makes the law, because it can, through the selections it has made of the ministers, judges and councillors, convert into a statute any ephemeral whim of the hour. The powerful aristocracy of England is so essentially conservative that there is no danger in admitting, as a constitutional principle, that parliament is omnipotent as to legislation. New men will succeed one another so quickly at each general election in Canada, that the result will certainly be legislation of a precipitate and violent character. Reforms suddenly carried to extremity, after an obstinate resistance extending through many long years—in place of a moderate and gradual concession of wise measures—will do as much harm as England did in the past by wrongfully maintaining the excessive preponderance conferred on the executive. England has now no clearer apprehension of the social needs of the country

than she had in the past, because she cannot conceive of the existence of a state of society other than her own. We are, I fear, falling into a state of legislative anarchy, because each parliament, in turn, will destroy the reputation of the ministers by whom it is led. Beginning with a majority, they will end with a minority, and each new parliament will have to destroy the work of its predecessor."

While this criticism is a surprise to us as coming from Papineau, it is, nevertheless, a tolerably accurate view, in part, of the constitution. Undoubtedly, if the Constitutional Act of 1840 had a blemish, Papineau had shrewdly hit upon it. We have little to say against his opinion, but what astounds us is to hear, from the lips of an old Liberal, language which Tories like MacNab and Draper would hardly have uttered. Was Papineau at this time acting in obedience to the all but general law which makes us with advancing age see things in a different light or from another standpoint, and leads us to modify our former opinions? Mature age shows us the fallacy of many doctrines, for experience has by that time enabled us to witness the failure in practice of many a brilliant theory. As we advance in years the difficulty of subduing human nature, with all its defects, to the exigencies of some great system, admirable on paper, becomes more and more manifest. In most cases, institutions are better than men, and our own shortcomings render them imprac-



## LAST APPEARANCE IN PUBLIC

ticable. In this matter Papineau, it may be, was simply a critic *à outrance*, as of old.

If Papineau still pined for political life after entering upon his retirement, the feeling did not so overpower him as to make him seek publicity. He unbosomed himself on this cherished object of his thoughts only to his close friends, in those pen-chats which he had always loved and to which he imparted so great a charm. Once only, and for the last time, he appeared in public. At the Canadian Institute in Montreal he gave a lengthy lecture on December 17th, 1867. On that occasion, in the very closing hours of his career, and under the depressing burden of advanced age, he showed all the ardour of youthful energy in the expression of his sentiments and especially of his old antipathies; it was the last roar of the lion in the face of his foe. His lecture was a lucid summary of the history of English rule in Canada, a subject which offered full opportunity for the last confession of the hardened and unrepentant patriot, proud to stand on the brink of the grave without regret for the past, and still hopeful for the future of democracy. Although Papineau had ceased to be in communion with the political and religious ideas of the majority of his fellow-countrymen, he remained, nevertheless, in their eyes the most attractive political figure in the land.



## CHAPTER XV

### CONCLUSION

THE portrait at the head of these pages tallies well with our mental conception of Papineau. What energy in the lines of the expressive face! What manly beauty in the contour of the head! And do not the eyes seem to bid defiance to all comers? Everything in his attitude reveals the obstinate fighter he showed himself to be throughout the whole of his long career.<sup>1</sup>

To the psychologist, Papineau's character presents but little complexity; his mental attitude inclined to a singleness of purpose which well suited the unity of his life, devoted, as it was, wholly to one great cause, towards which the efforts of his intellectual faculties unceasingly tended.

A man such as Papineau is not to be judged merely by the events with which he was connected, notwithstanding that they may have very greatly influenced his career. His ideas were the outcome of certain antecedents and early associations and influences. The son of an important political personage who had seen the early days of English rule, he of necessity inherited his father's hardened

<sup>1</sup> This portrait was lithographed by Chardin, whilst Papineau was in Paris, and has been considered excellent by artists and connoisseurs.

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

feelings and prejudices resulting from the arbitrary spirit which characterized the new régime in its early days. No man was more conversant with its gloomy annals than Papineau. His antipathy for the authors of the real or fancied wrongs of his country was augmented by the reversion of the accumulated antipathy cherished by his father and his close friends. His childhood was spent in an atmosphere impregnated with the most violent passions, and thus it was that he became such a lover of strife. His life-long struggle with the government was anything but calculated to subdue his leaning towards harsh criticism; and when brighter days dawned for the country, the sunlight did not fall soothingly for him as it did for LaFontaine and his friends. Were we not aware that his course of action on his return to Canada was inspired by motives deserving of respect, though manifestly erroneous, we should feel constrained to say that the habit of opposition had so warped his mind that nothing could remove the bias.

His career is divisible into two parts very differently filled, and the errors of the one should not be allowed to efface the merits of the other. What a man was the Papineau of 1822! He embodied in himself and voiced, at that moment, all the aspirations and demands of the Canadian people, at a time when their national existence was in imminent peril. It was in truth the voice of his country that burst forth in his fierce denunciations of con-

## DIMINISHED POWER

spiracies hatched against the liberties of his people. From 1820 to 1837, he stood forth the grandest figure in our history. His was a life of glory during that period, a glory purchased by endless sacrifices,—a life immolated to a great cause which he upheld unflinchingly with small hope of final victory.

His public career should have closed with the catastrophe of 1837. What a pity that he did not grasp the position of the province and his own, in 1845! It was a great mistake on his part not to have given himself up to a life of study and reflection, and a greater still to have encouraged division in the ranks of the little Canadian army. He has been held responsible for the establishment of the Radical party and of *Le club démocratique*; but we nowhere find evidence of his connection with the latter organization, though many of his ideas are included in the celebrated programme of the club, drafted, if we are not mistaken, by one Blanchet (surnamed *Le citoyen Blanchet*), and some other advanced spirits of the period. But was the connection between Papineau and the Democratic Club such as would justify the statement that he was its founder? Let us bear in mind that anti-religious ideas were for a time the fashion, especially among the educated class, prior to 1837 and under the union. Disciples of Voltaire, encyclopædists, deists like Papineau, and partisans of free morals, were to be found here and there.

It is well to point out that his opposition to

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

LaFontaine was but an incident in his struggle with the English government, which he carried on over the heads of his adversaries in Canada. His laudations of democracy, his sarcasms and his assaults on aristocracy, as found in the ninety-two resolutions, show the drift of his mind in 1834. His stay in Paris, where he consorted with Lamennais, Béranger, and Louis Blanc, left its imprint on his mind and thrust him into the very focus of radicalism, which was concentrated to a white flame by the revolution of 1848. His fixed idea on return to Canada was this: "We must get rid of aristocracy in every shape and form, for it keeps us under a shameful vassalage." This was his view of the colonial condition and status. His antipathy makes him see the dark side of everything. "But let us be patient," he writes to Aubin, the editor of *Le Canadien*, in 1848, "emancipation [for which he constantly prayed] will come, and meantime we shall be rendering good service by making our people revert to the policy followed from 1791 to 1835. We must love democracy now, during our period of servitude, so as to put it in practice after our emancipation."

Was Papineau merely an irrepressible agitator, a democrat dreaming of nothing but the triumph of his own ideas, and without any plan or system denoting grasp of mind? Of course circumstances often determine the scope of man's conceptions, and it is evident that Papineau, acting on the limited field of

## HIS POLICY

provincial politics, had no opportunity to evolve schemes such as Richelieu conceived. Still there was nothing of the particularist in the plan he conceived, prior to 1837, of forming alliances with our neighbours of the east and of the west. He maintained a lengthy correspondence with William Lyon Mackenzie of Toronto and with certain Liberals in the maritime provinces, with the manifest intention of uniting with them with a view to bringing about a combined effort against England. He was at one time confident of the success of his scheme. In the broad outlines of his plan, which never went beyond the incipient stage, one can perceive the leading idea: a confederation of colonies independent of England, the reverse of that which was subsequently carried out. Pushing even beyond the frontiers his efforts to secure allies, he managed to find ardent helpers in the United States. These were the American sympathizers who came to the assistance of Mackenzie in 1837, and of Robert Nelson in the days of the second uprising in 1838.

The influence of the authorities successfully checked Papineau's manœuvres. But the results would appear to show that this early blending of the Liberals of Lower Canada with those of the western province, initiated by Papineau, was the first step towards the subsequent momentous alliance between Baldwin and LaFontaine.

After having said farewell to politics in 1854,

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

Papineau retired to his manor house of La Rivière de la Petite Nation, and there remained until death closed his career in 1871. Here it is that, during the period of his life subsequent to his return to Canada, we find his character most attractive. In the midst of his books, in communion with his favourite authors, he shows himself with the captivating countenance which was natural to him, but which the struggles incident to his active political life in the earlier years of his home-coming, had many a time shrouded in gloom. In friendly intercourse, he was, in his day, one of the most amiable of men. An accomplished man of the world, he exhibited in social life all the grace and ease of manner of a *grand seigneur*. His condescension towards his inferiors, his respectful affability and courtesy in conversing with women, and his many other social qualities made him a most fascinating companion. He cultivated successfully that exquisite grace of perfect courtesy, so rare in our day, and which can hardly be expected to flourish at its best in our democratic atmosphere. He was like a survival of a former age. From his father, who had associated with the Canadians of the old régime, and was reared amidst the traditions of Versailles, he had imbibed the grace of manner and refinement which lent such a charm to social intercourse in the days of old. All Papineau's letters, except, of course those treating on politics, breathe this fragrance of good society and are, moreover, imbued with a cor-



## A FRIENDLY LETTER

dial spirit of warm friendship. Our readers will not be sorry to behold side by side with the tribune armed for the fray, a Papineau clad in the peaceful garb of home-life in the midst of his family and friends, revelling in the thousand details of domestic and social intercourse. On returning from a trip to Québec where he had been the guest of Christie—a former adversary, who had since become his friend—he wrote as follows from Montebello, on July 13th, 1856 :

“My Dear Christie :—Ever since our return from Quebec we have talked of nothing but the many friendly attentions paid to us, all the festal gatherings held expressly for us, and the many other demonstrations of kindness showered upon us, at your hospitable home, in the first place, and, as a consequence of your kindly initiative, at the hands also of many other obliging and courteous friends. For my wife, my children and myself, those delightful holidays will ever be remembered, as days of perfect happiness, which we shall recall in our gayest hours in order to enhance their brightness, and in times of depression and sorrow in order to sustain our drooping spirits. . . . Our young girls had their first taste of the delights of your charming social life and enjoyed to the full those many enchanting gatherings, which Quebec has the wonderful knack of organizing at a few hours' notice. In Montreal the mixture of various races has introduced a little too much etiquette and restraint. Social gatherings

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

are rarer and more formal, and consequently less enjoyable and pleasant. I ought to have told you all this as soon as we got home, but the fact is my absence had retarded much of the work on my improvements which had been begun, and for the last few days, I have spent a great part of my time with the workmen, and devoted the remainder to the company of our fellow-travellers, whom I cannot sufficiently thank for having accompanied us home. If, on our return, we had found ourselves alone in our rustic solitude, the transition would have been too sudden; but with Miss Doucet to chat with anent the days of our youth, and Miss Trudeau to speak of her early days and those of her charming friends of her own age, time glides pleasantly along. Kindly say to Monsieur and Madame Trudeau that I thank them every hour of the day for entrusting to me such gentle and charming companions for my daughters as well as for their old parents. There is not very much variety in our store of amusements, but the young ladies are good enough to say that they are happy with us. Nevertheless, they will be still better pleased when you yourself and Madame Christie come to us; for the joy of having you with us will brighten our lives and make us more pleasant companions than when we miss you and are longing for your presence amongst us. Ezilda is never tired telling of the wonderful party Madame Christie improvised at such short notice, for so large a gathering. She

## A TRIP TO THE SAGUENAY

quite admits that she met more than her match ; 'but,' she said, when offering this as a model to me, 'I shall improve now, for I have made a beginning.'

"It would be useless to attempt to parcel out compliments and praise when we owe them to so large a circle of friends. Nevertheless, I feel that for a good part of the most friendly disposition manifested by them all, we are indebted to the fervour of our old mutual friendship, which induced you to speak of us in terms of praise far beyond our deserts. I beg to offer my heartfelt thanks to each and all, but more especially to those who organized our delightful trip to the Saguenay; to M. Buteau, who took so much trouble in the matter, and to all the ladies and gentlemen who took part in it with us. Three young ladies absolutely perfect and accomplished in all respects, and three men well above the average of our sex, then two little girls and myself made up a party of nine, always a lucky number and which proved to be so at least during our three days' trip. Shall that happy trip ever be repeated ? Who knows ? Should it not be so in very truth and reality, it will at least be many a time renewed in the vivid pictures of living memory. To behold the grandest scenery in the world, in the best possible company, is something to be long remembered ; something never to be forgotten."

We have just seen Papineau enjoying peace and happiness in the bosom of friendship—the joy of

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

living; but such is not the normal condition of human life, which is only too often clouded by sorrow and misfortune. The early death of his grandson plunged him into deepest grief, and in a letter to Christie, dated March 15th, 1855, he opened in the following terms the floodgates of his heartfelt sorrow :

“ When your letter reached me, I was in deep affliction, owing to the death of my dear and only grandson, a splendid child of about eleven months, carried off by his first sickness. Knowing the extreme sensibility of my son and daughter-in-law, and their delicate health, which nothing but the greatest and unceasing care and medical skill had hitherto preserved, I have so wept and been so torn by anxiety and trouble on this account, and from our great loss, that the burden has overtaxed my strength. Amedée [his son, the recently deceased Seigneur of Montebello] had written saying that he himself would come and bring the remains of the dear child with him. I attempted through the medium of a friend, to divert him from undertaking a task which would be dangerous for him, and suggested to a good friend and relative to come in his place. But the dear mother fancied that it would be an act of culpable indifference to entrust the sacred and precious remains to any other hands but those of the father himself. My dear son discharged his sad task with real courage, and together we laid the relics of the sweet little angel in the family chapel,

## DOMESTIC AFFLICTION

erected in a grove a couple of acres distant from the house. On the death of my Gustave, whom I caused to be buried in the parish church, my son Amedée was the first to suggest the building of this family chapel, a matter which I myself had under consideration, though I had not mentioned it, with a view to depositing therein the remains of my father and Gustave, to be followed some day by my own; should I be spared to finish it. And now it was in order to receive the mortal remains of Amedée's own child that the first grave was to be opened therein! Such is life with its disappointments and its forecasts. One must, nevertheless, do his duty while he is able to stand, and then lie down without regret."

This, it must be said, is an admirably written and most touching letter. The group formed by the old man depositing the remains of the little grandson in the grave opened for himself, stands out before us in bold relief, and it is impossible to behold it unmoved. We share the anguish of this venerable parent struggling in the grasp of a two-fold sorrow; grief for the loss of the child and for the affliction which has befallen his son.

It would be an injustice to his memory to conclude from Papineau's attitude as depicted in accordance with the facts herein stated, that he was a man imbued with race prejudice. His hostility had never been directed against the English people, but solely against the ministers who refused to

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

grant us in their full integrity the rights as British subjects which we were entitled to claim. It would be impossible to point out in any of his speeches a single aggressive expression applied to the English people. The natural drift of his mind was rather towards a cosmopolitanism in conformity with the aspirations of the democracy. In that respect he was in advance of many of his contemporaries whose national and religious prejudices too often, even in our own day, remind one of the unlightened and backward races of former ages. On one occasion when Colonel Gagy, a Swiss by origin, and a tool of the English party, declared in the House at Quebec, that he preferred to see in office a ministry composed of citizens born in the country, Papineau answered him thus: "For my part, what I desire is a government consisting of friends of the law of liberty and of justice, men who will protect all citizens without distinction, and give to each and all the same privileges. I hold such men as these in high esteem, whatsoever their origin may be; but I detest those haughty descendants of conquerors who come to our country to deny us our political rights. . . . You say to us: 'Let us be brothers!' I answer, yes, let us be brothers; but you want to grasp everything—power, place and money! This is the injustice we cannot endure."

Note further that, on several occasions, Papineau was supported in the House by a majority of the English speaking members, and that he numbered

## THE HOME AT MONTEBELLO

amongst his followers such important men as Neilson, Leslie, Chapman and Andrew Stuart. But we shall be asked: What say you of his angry outbursts of 1837? Our answer is that they in no way contradict our assertion. All that occurred at that period was an outbreak provoked by the resolutions of Lord John Russell depriving us of the control of the finances, which was equivalent to a suspension of the constitution of the country, an act of high treason against the nation. Is it surprising to find that excess in the exercise of arbitrary power on the one hand, should cause an out-pouring of extravagant language from indignant hearts on the other? So great was this provocation on the part of Lord John Russell, that Roebuck declared that "in order to make the province accept the resolutions, it would be well to send out at the same time a few regiments of soldiers."

Papineau, like many of his contemporaries, wrote much and at great length. His letters, written in a large and most legible hand, generally covered from four to eight pages. His style is not always very clear, and his phrases, like the periods of his speeches, are often laboured. Correspondence took up a great part of his leisure time at La Petite Nation, where boundless hospitality ever awaited his friends. One felt at home at once under the roof of the charming Manor House of Montebello, with its vast apartments, affording through noble bay-windows, widely extended views of the beautiful waters of the

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

Ottawa. There was nothing surely here to suggest the ruder elements of democracy! Papineau was evidently a Pierre Leroux in theory only, his tastes and manners were rather those of an aristocrat.

His splendid constitution and robust health enabled him to live an active life up to 1870, when he seemed to collapse all of a sudden beneath the weight of his years, while still retaining the full strength of his intellect, and died on September 23rd, when just about to enter on his eighty-fifth year. His fellow-countrymen, nearly all of them men of faith and deeply imbued with the principles and practices of religion, regretted to notice the absence from his bedside, at the supreme moment, of the minister of divine mercy. But in these delicate and sacred matters of conscience man is accountable only to his God, whose supreme judgment may greatly differ from ours. Papineau was, it is true, a *philosophe*, a spiritualist, and a deist, but while opposed to the intervention of the priest in politics, he was never an anti-clerical. On several occasions, in fact throughout his career, he was to be found claiming religious liberty for the church in Canada with the same zeal and ardour with which he fought for political freedom for all. When, in 1837, the ecclesiastical authorities rightly deemed it necessary to warn the Canadian people against Papineau's revolutionary course, he conceived a bitterness towards the clergy which the lapse of time only served to exasperate.



## LAST ADDRESS

He was rarely seen to leave Montebello after his retirement from public life. On one occasion, however, as we have already stated, he consented to gratify the wishes of his admirers in Montreal, who desired to meet him. He attended for that purpose a meeting of the *Institut Canadien*, and delivered an address. He showed himself throughout this lecture an impenitent radical, with all the ideas of his long life crystallized in his intellect. And this consistency and unity of his career was the result of so many sacrifices on his part that some allowance must surely be made for it. Had Papineau fallen into line under the new order of things, why might he not also have aspired to high position in the land? But to return to the lecture—after a rapid glance at the history of Canada from the Treaty of Paris (1763), he depicted in broad outline the phases of our colonial system up to 1867—"Confederation, the most culpable of all, now for three months in operation." In this lecture his old antipathies reappear in full vigour, in spite of his advanced age, which usually softens them. His arch enemy, the English aristocracy, could hardly escape without a blow, and in truth he hits it unmercifully. Nor does he spare the authors of confederation, "those ill-famed, self-interested men." His wrath had not aged. But let us not scrutinize this indictment; it was not the death song of the gentle swan, but the last defiance of the Indian warrior, shouted out with his death rattle. Let us cull from this lecture,

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

ere we close, but this pathetic profession of love for his country: "You will believe me, I trust, when I say to you, I love my country. I have loved her wisely, I have loved her madly! . . . . Opinions outside may differ. But looking into my heart and my mind in all sincerity, I feel I can say that I have loved her as she should be loved. The sentiment of love of my country I imbibed from the breasts of my nurse—my saintly mother. The brief expression in which it is best enunciated: 'My country first!' I learned to lisp at my father's knee."

With these burning words of love for his country, words which atone for many an excess of language, we deem it well to close these pages devoted to the memory of one who gave the best part of his life to defending his people against the assaults of their enemies, and raised the French Canadian race in its own estimation, in the face of the powerful men who sought to humiliate and annihilate it. Obstacles of many kinds prevented his work from reaching the perfection he had pictured to himself, but it is manifest to all that the struggles during which his high-spirited eloquence was heard above the fray for a quarter of a century, scattered broadcast those life-giving principles which have borne fruit and flower in our free political institutions. On this ground, as well as for his great fame as an orator, of which we are all justly proud, he is entitled to the homage of posterity, in common with all who unselfishly devote their lives to the triumph of a great cause.

## INDEX

### A

**ABUSES**, official, 43, 59, 94  
**Aylmer**, Lord, asks the House to give him full list of its grievances, 75, 76; attacked on account of election riot at Montreal, 87; held responsible for introduction of Asiatic cholera in the province, 88; his impeachment asked for in the ninety-two resolutions, 95; blames conduct of House, session of 1834, 106

### B

**BÉDARD**, PIERRE, prominent in politics, 27  
**Bouchette**, Robert S. M., letter on causes of rebellion of 1837, 150-153  
**Brown**, John Storrow, in command of some rebels, 128; at St. Charles, 133

### C

**CALDWELL**, RECEIVER-GENERAL, fails to account for £96,000 of public monies, 56  
**Cartier**, Sir Georges É., compared to Papineau, 1, 2  
**Constitution** of 1791, its main features, 21  
**Colborne**, Sir John, orders Gore to St. Denis, 134; in command at St. Eustache, 135

**Council**, legislative, at war with assembly, 42; asks that its members be elected by the people, 79; denounced by Papineau, 80, 95; its proposed reform, 95  
**Craig**, Sir James, his administration known as the *reign of terror*, 27; members of parliament sent to prison by his order, 29; suppresses *Le Canadien*, 29

### D

**DALHOUSIE**, LORD, his arrival in Quebec, 41; establishes the Quebec Literary and Historical Society, 41; his administration in Nova Scotia, 58; refuses to recognize Papineau as speaker, 61; is recalled at request of popular party, 64  
**Demaray** and **Davignon** arrested at St. Johns, and afterwards rescued by Papineau's friends, 128  
**Durham**, Lord, on control of provincial finance, 77

### E

**ELLICE**, Seigneur of Beauharnois, suggests union of Canadas in 1822, 49

### F

**FRENCH CANADIANS**, origin of their rights, 9, *et seq.*; reasons of

## LOUIS-JOSEPH PAPINEAU

French Canadians—*Continued*  
their opposition to constitutional  
government, 20

### G

GODERICH's (LORD) despatch offer-  
ing control of supplies for civil  
list, 76-78

Gugy, Conrad Augustus, joins issue  
with Papineau, 101

### K

KEMPT, SIR JAMES, recommends  
changes in Canadian government,  
71

### L

LAFontaine, Louis Hippolite, re-  
fuses seat in cabinet, 72; assailed  
by Papineau, 169-171; his de-  
fence, 173; retires from politics,  
179

*Le club démocratique*, 180, 187

*Le parti démocratique*, 178

Lysons, Lieutenant, his account of  
the battles of St. Denis and St.  
Eustache, 129; 135

### M

MORIN, A., a follower of Papineau,  
opens discussion at session of  
1835 on state of the province, 101

### N

NEILSON, JOHN, sent to England to  
protest against union scheme in  
1822, 48; goes to England a  
second time with Cuvillier and  
Viger to expose grievances of  
Canadians, 63; votes against the  
ninety-two resolutions and falls  
out with Papineau, 102

Nelson, Robert, leader in uprising  
of 1838, 139

Nelson, Wolfred, at St. Charles  
meeting, favours armed resistance,  
126; in command at battle of St.  
Denis, 128; exiled to Bermuda,  
138

### O

O'CALLAGHAN, his views as to causes  
of rebellion of 1837, 143

O'Connell, Daniel, expresses opin-  
ion on Canadian politics, 114

### P

PAPINEAU, JOSEPH, called to first  
Canadian parliament, 4; de-  
picted by Garneau, 4; he plants  
first settlement at Montebello, 5  
Papineau, Louis-Joseph, educated at  
the Quebec seminary, 6; elected  
to House of Assembly, 32;  
speaker, 33; refuses seat in ex-  
ecutive council, 72; remarkable  
speech on constitution of 1791,  
35-38; opposes union scheme,  
43-47; sent to England in 1822  
to protest against it, 48; at  
war with Dalhousie, 55; trou-  
ble with his friends, 65; let-  
ter on this subject to Neilson,  
67; demand for a legislative  
council elected by the people,  
79; bitter attacks on Aylmer,  
95; he becomes an annexationist,  
97; calls meetings to condemn  
the Russell resolutions, 119;  
revolutionary speeches at St.  
Ours and St. Laurent, 119-121;  
to arms, 127; accused of high

# INDEX

**Papineau, Louis-Joseph**—*Continued*  
treason, 128 ; Papineau at St. Denis, a painful incident, 132 ; his banishment, 163 ; his life in Paris, 164 ; returns to Canada, 165 ; re-enters politics, 166 ; falls out with LaFontaine, 169-171 ; retires into private life, 180 compares Canadian constitution of 1840 to American constitution, 181 ; his last appearance in public life, 183 ; in retirement at Montebello, 190 ; in private life, 190 ; his religious ideas and death, 198

**Parent, Étienne**, secedes from Papineau's party, 117

## R

**REBELLION** of 1837, its causes, 143  
**Resolutions**, the ninety-two, 85, *et seq.* ; John Russell's resolutions, 117, 118

## S

**STUART, ANDREW**, his opinion of French Canadians, 49  
**Supplies**, question of in House of Assembly, 30

St. Charles, rebels defeated at, 133  
St. Denis, engagement at, November 22nd, 1837, 130  
St. Eustache, battle of, 135

## T

**THURLOW, ATTORNEY-GENERAL**, his opinion as to the rights of French Canadians, 11-13

## U

**UNION** scheme of 1822, 43 ; Papineau and Neilson oppose it in London, 48, *et seq.*

## V

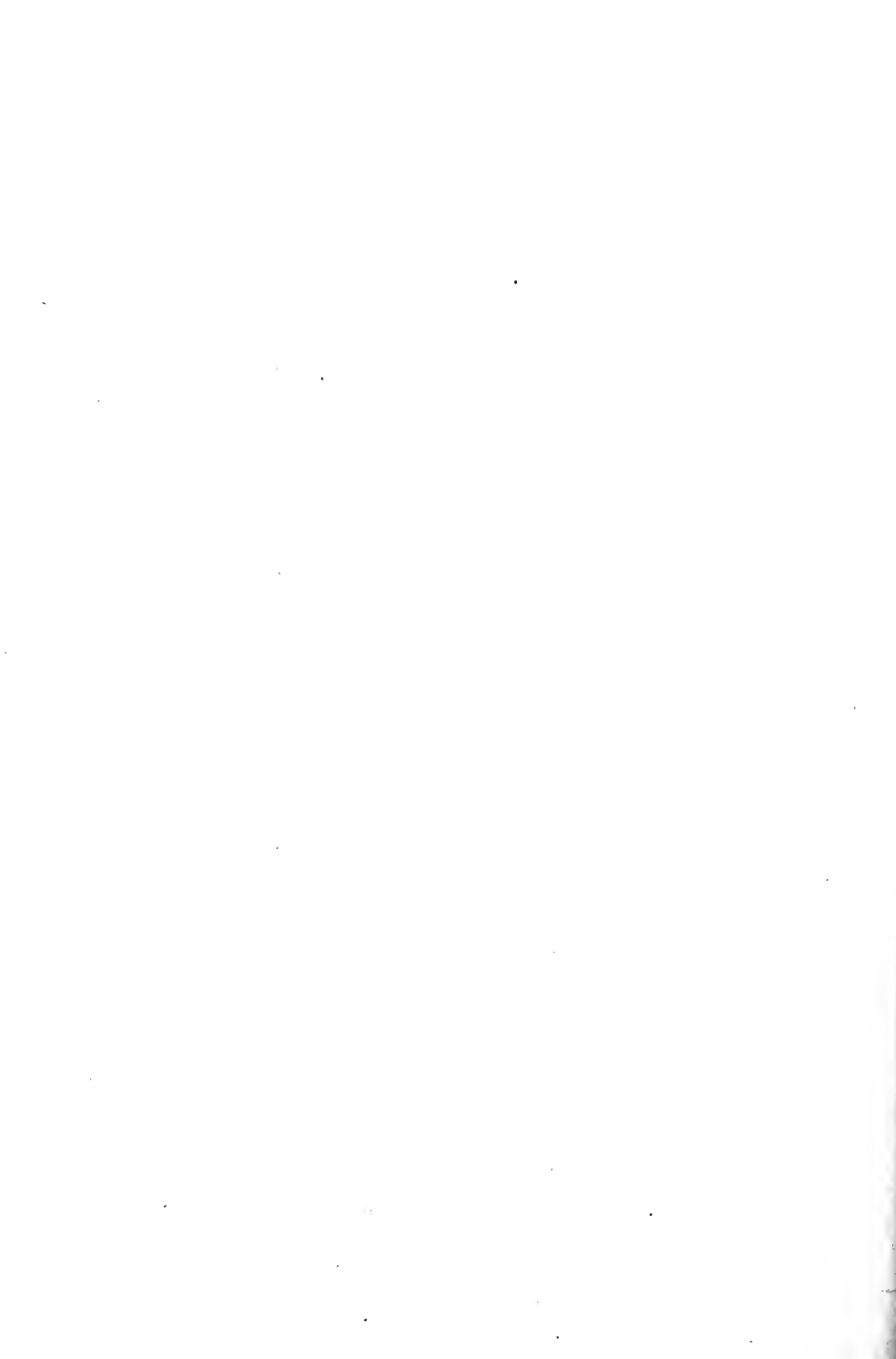
**VALLIÈRES** falls out with Papineau, 57

## W

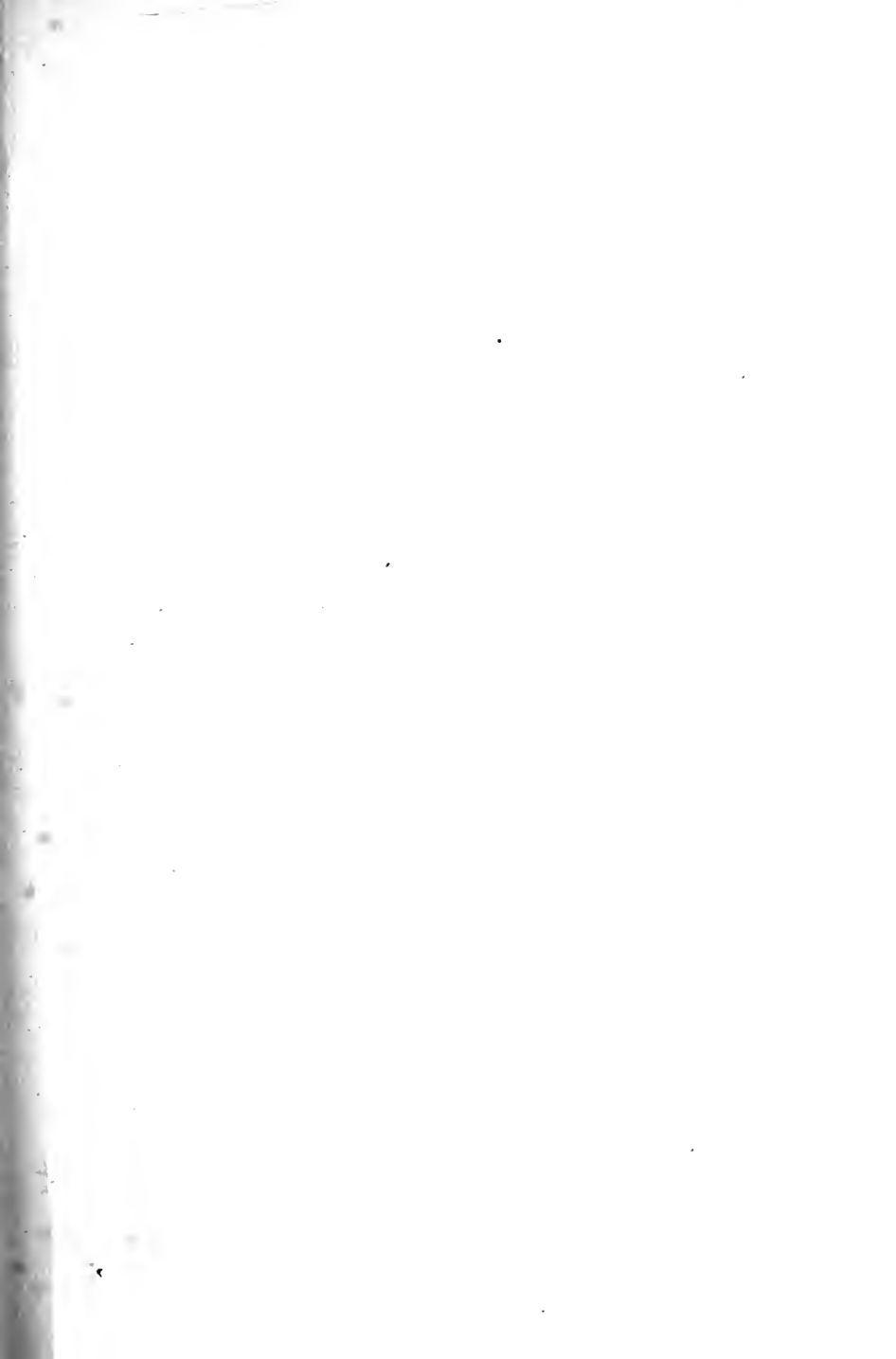
**WEDDERBURN, SOLICITOR-GENERAL**, his opinion on the rights of the French Canadians, 14  
**Weir**, Lieutenant, killed at St. Denis, 134 ; "Remember Jack Weir," 137  
**Wetherall**, Colonel, ordered to attack rebels at St. Charles, 129 ; the attack, 133

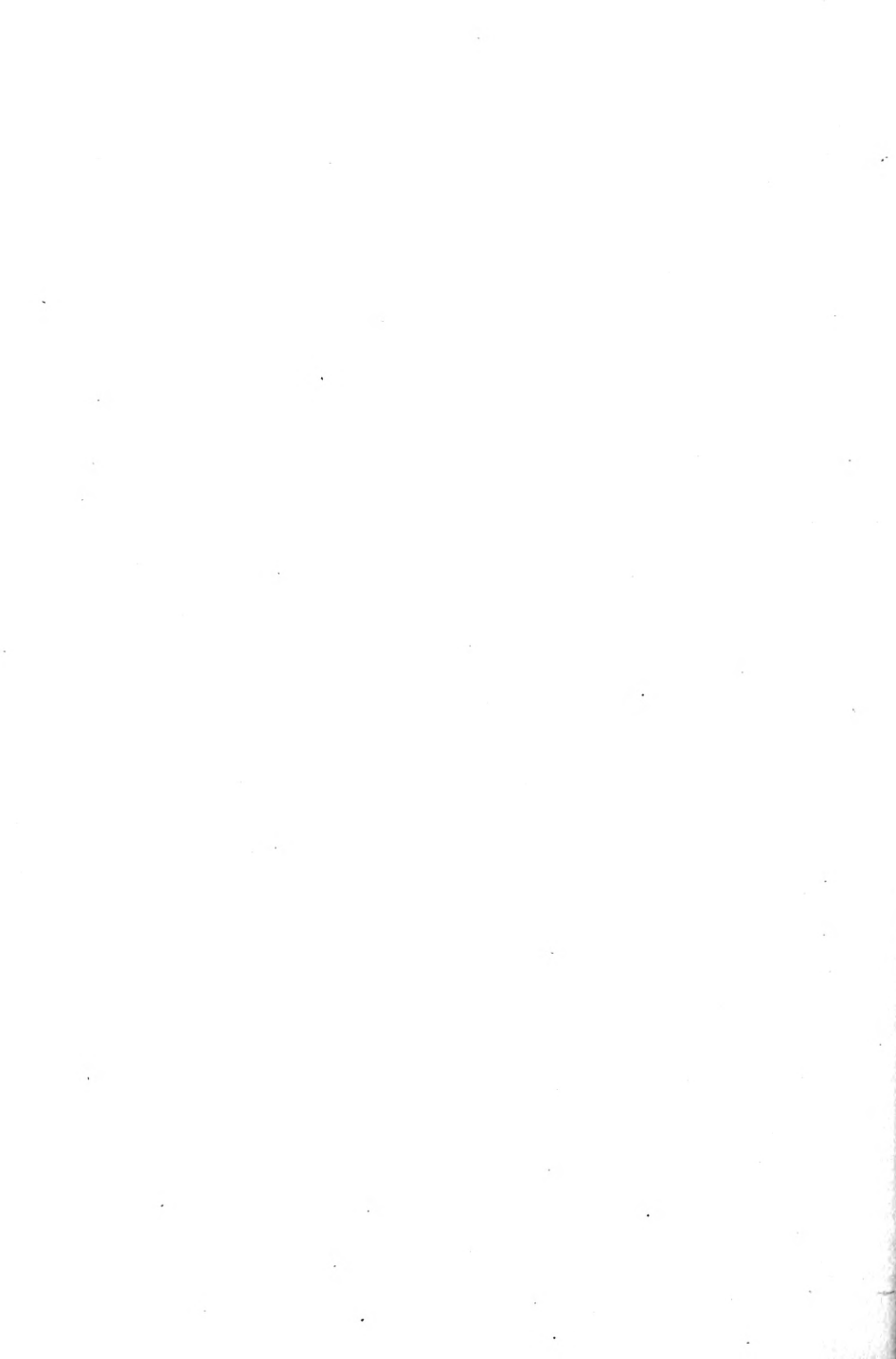
















F  
5009  
M34  
1912  
v.6

**PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET**

---

**ERINDALE COLLEGE LIBRARY**

---

